



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Prologue

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are products of the writer's imagination or are used fictitiously and are not to be construed as real. Any Resemblance to actual events, locales, organizations or persons, living or dead, is entirely coincidental.

No part of this story may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without the written and signed permission of the writer. For more information WhatsApp For more stories, like and follow RoyalVelz FB page and the groups with the same name.

Hell hath no fury than a woman scorned.

His eyes were filled with rage. They burnt with savage

fire. He paced around and gazed at me. A gaze that spoke volumes. An intense gaze enough to make a grown man pee in their pants but I wasn't fazed at all.

"You're fucking my brother too? You brought me all the way down here to confess about you having an affair with my

brother too?" Treet's deep voice boomed but I didn't flinch. I wasn't fucking his brother but I refused to correct him. Tyrone his fraternal twin was too shocked to even utter a word.

When he was over the shock he spoke with the same rage. "Is anybody else coming? How many are we in this game of yours?"

I sighed and folded my arms. "Ok look. I only wanted to do this once. I got you both here at the same time to tell you

that its over. This got to stop. I don't wanna see you two

ever again. I'm not sorry if you expected more from me because from the word go I made it clear to both of you that this was just fun and you were ok with it. Now it has to stop. Treet focus on your marriage. Tyrone you will find someone who will love you to the moon and back. Unfortunately that someone is not me."

Treet chuckled in disbelief. "So you think this is ok? You can fuck anybody you want and just what? When you are done its goodbye? You use us, screw us, play us and then

dump us.Seriously?What kind of a woman are you?"

"The kind that you scorned.Both of you used me and

shamed me.You took advantage of my vulnerability.You

preyed on my innocence.You treated me like a cheap

whore.Maybe you forgot. Let me take you down the memory lane. Do you remember the girl at the party 12 years ago?" I shouted and both of them exchanged glances. I knew I have tackled their memory.

I chuckled." Great!It looks like you remember me after all. I

love the look on both your faces right now.You look like

karma just fucked you up on the ass with a pitchfork.
Checkmate."

They exchanged glances. "You flipped the bitch switch so buckle up and enjoy the ride assholes."

I checked my wrist watch. "Now that everything is said. So long gentlemen. "

1

MAJESTY

No strings attached.

I grabbed my thong from the floor but didn't slide it up my

legs. It was too wet and it would be uncomfortable. I

opened my clutch to drop it inside but he stopped me.

"Leave it." He said. I dangled it from my fingers as I looked

at him. "Leave the thong."

"Okay. Have fun." I tossed it on the sheets. "And have a good

day."

"I thought you were staying." He sulked and I

frowned. Clingy much?

"It's called a booty call for a reason. You tap the booty and

leave as soon as you're done. You know the rules dude. No

sleepovers, pillowtalks, cuddling and shit."

He sighed. "Let me walk you out then." We left his house

and walked down the sidewalk together in silence. It was

just two blocks away.

"This is me." I announced as we reached my car...a red

Maserati Levante.

"So what will you be doing today? I can drop by your place

just text me your address." I arched my eyebrow as he

spoke. "I'm trying to make conversation Majesty."

"No. You're prying."

He held my hand. "Not everyone is out here to hurt you. Let

your guard down for once. You and I can try working it out

you know. We look good together. The chemistry between

us is undeniable."

I laughed."Dude.You gotta give me some of the coke

you're high on.Its giving you excellent hallucinations."I

fished out my keys and got inside the car.

"Majesty please listen..."

"Bye Nick.I won't be calling you again."I switched on the

ignition

"It's Chris!"

"Yea whatever Jay." I waved at him and drove off.Fucking

clown!

As soon as I arrived at my place I made a healthy breakfast for myself. A mean sandwich with lot of greens. While I was enjoying it Peter walked in. His makeup on point as always. Nothing on him showed his masculinity. He was a woman with a dick.

"Good morning your Majesty." I preferred calling him Petty because it was more feminine and he loved the name anyway.

"Good morning to you too Petty. How is my day looking?"

He was my PA and very reliable. He made my work very much easier because he knew his job and did it with dedication.

"I emailed you your schedule and as always you didn't check your emails but that's why I'm here. You have a meeting in an hour and then later on you have an appointment with a therapist. I believe Mary is the one responsible for making that appointment." He said opening

the fridge and taking the ingredients for his

sandwich. Besides sharing the employer and employee

relationship we were also friends.

"Okay thank you. Let me go and change. And please call my

help for me. The house needs some spring cleaning. While

you're at it delete the tender love dotcom what what that

Mary installed. The stupid alerts keep coming up." I

washed down the sandwich with a glass of a protein

shake.

"Maybe you can actually find love through the app but you will never know until you try." He shrugged.

I narrowed my gaze and folded my arms."Now here is the thing.Love is for people who got nothing to do with their time.While some people spent much of their time going on dates and shit I will be making money.I have a company to run and another one in the making.You can imagine the load on my table.I can't add another whole human being on my busy schedule who will definitely take me for

granted. There are a lot of messed up knuckle dragging

cunt waffles who think its okay to treat people like shit for

no reason. I'm not going to fall for that again."

"Girl just because you were unlucky the first and the

second time it doesn't mean you will always be

unlucky. There are a lot of good men out there. Not all men

are shit heads. Honestly, there are some really awesome

men out there."

"Yea you're right. Forty-five percent are taken, twenty-five

percent are ugly, fifteen percent suck in bed, ten percent are priests and five percent are gays. Boom there goes the good men. Anyway this ain't the time to play love guru on me. We have a meeting to attend and millions to make."

I stormed upstairs. After a long shower I began with my transformation. Fifteen minutes later I was in a Chanel silk and wool black blazer which hugged my thick curves perfectly. I completed my look with red bottom black thigh highs and gold accessories which complimented my

caramel skin. I had my natural glow on and babe did I look
sizzling hot.

"I'm driving this hot babe." Petty said taking my car keys.

After fifteen minutes he pulled into the driveway of the
double storey glassy building with a billboard clearly
written Majestic Innovations. My chest glowed with pride. I
started as a general manager of an Internet café. Having
my own company which creates software gaming
applications was just a wishful thinking by then. At 23 I

raised enough capital to start the company. With the help from family and friends my dream came true. Now at 27 I made a name for myself. Since technology was taking the world by storm my applications helped youngsters with their day to day live be it in academics or entertainment. Me and my team created Majestic Readonline for the books addicts and MjDrive for the gamers among many other applications. These two projects were my breakthrough.

As Petty and I made our way to my office people kept giving us stares. It wasn't a shock to anyone seeing a gay man and it wasn't a surprise seeing me in a latest designer piece either. It was definitely because of the trail of white roses from Petty's working station and to my office. Who the hell gave him my keys?!

"Petty I'm going to be late for the meeting. I just need five minutes to sort this out." I said stomping to my office.

"Go easy on the poor guy." He joked.

I walked into my office in rage."This is trespassing and I'm going to have to get a restraining order."

"Majesty please just give five minutes of your time." He pleaded.

"Treet we talked and I made it clear that whatever we had is over.Now you're not different from a stalker and its a turn off."

"I was young and foolish Majesty.I'm sorry for taking advantage of you but I'm no longer that guy from 12 years

ago. For crying out loud I'm no longer 23. Give me a chance to make things right."

"Ok I have a meeting to attend to. I don't have the energy nor the time to entertain you behind. You know your way out." I stormed out and went to the boardroom. The stares I got from my workers didn't bother me anymore. I had to do damage control especially after my affair with Treet came to light. It didn't work in my favour too when the nosy media revealed that I was hooked up with Tyrone his

twin. Urgh! So messy and scandalous.

I walked into the boardroom with my "boss lady" face and everyone went dead quiet.

"Ok so yesterday I went through the sales of

MajesticReadonline. They are dropping and I wasn't

happy. Something has to be done. So impress me people." I

sat down and my team started to discuss the ideas. Some

were ridiculous that I was pissed. What was I paying these

people for?

"I think that maybe we should improve the platform to suit the standards of our clients. My idea is that since MajesticReadOnline is all about just buying and reading the books online. Why don't we improve it and create a platform where the readers and authors interact? On that platform the readers will be able to give a review of the books they read, criticize and so forth. At the same time the authors will know what their readers want and what they expect. Also I think instead of having MajesticReadonline

in a nut shell we should have it divided like

MajesticReadyOnline-Fantasy MajesticReadOnlineHistorical
Romance,so forth and so forth.Authors and

readers of a certain interest we will each have their

platforms.This will improve the sales because here the

authors will start using the apps as well and that means

more clients."One of the interns suggested and it was

indeed a good idea.

"Discuss it with the IT team.I love the idea." I said and

everyone took down the notes.

"The gaming team do you have something for me. Grey is one of our biggest clients and he is threatening to walk out if we don't give him something new. If we lose Grey it's gonna reflect on your salaries. Come up with something serious

something that makes noise. Meeting is adjourned." Mr Grey was one of my biggest clients and he was threatening to walk out of the door. I couldn't lose him. He was one of the supportive ones but with the way

my reputation was tarnished after Treet and Tyrone's saga

I was not going to hold anything against him if he decided

to walk out. Luckily he gave me one last chance to clean

my mess and come up with a new gaming app. It was a

struggle but my computer geeks had already started

drafting the ideas just after the meeting.

"You look cross what's bothering you?" Mary invited

herself into my office. She was my friend. The one who

always walked in when the rest of the world walks out. She

put up with my drama and managed to pull me back to the right direction. Now that is what I call a friend. I refused to admit to her openly that she was indeed my friend though. I didn't want to expect anything from anyone. In that way no one would disappoint me, hurt me or leave me shattered.

"Not now Mary. I want to be alone. Go back to work."

"I saw Treet earlier" She sat down. She was one of those people who didn't back off easily no matter how many times you push them away.

"Well good for you Mary. Now can you please leave me alone. I could appreciate some silence and privacy right now." I snapped.

She smiled. "Fine don't bite my head off. I will leave you to your shit. By the way don't forget to see Dr Spencer. I set an appointment on your behalf."

I slammed my fists on the table. "About that. It was not your place to book an appointment for me. I don't need to see a shrink I'm perfectly ok mentally and physically too."

"Majesty I'm doing this because I care.I cannot just sit back and watch you change dicks like you're changing underwear.Majesty Browns you're 27 years old with no man,no kids, no family and definitely no chill.Do you wanna spend the rest of your life as a lonely old woman with nine cats?"

"Mary!!" I reprimanded her.

"No don't Mary me.You need to get your shit together.You my friend, need help." She stormed out.I screamed in

frustration and threw a flower vase on the wall.

"Now I think you also have anger issues." He was standing

on the door with his arms folded.

"Urgh its just Mary getting on my last nerve as

always.Come on in Ethan." He was my best friend since

diapers.I would not be where I was if it wasn't for him and

his family.

"Her heart is in the right place.She cares and I agree with

her.You should see a shrink Majesty.You need help.The

way you hate commitment and the way you deal with your problems is not healthy."

"Fine I will go and see this Dr Spencer.You can stop shrinking me now otherwise the doctor won't be needed."

He smiled.He had a very beautiful bear smile,worth being used for a toothpaste advertisement."That's the spirit.

Anyway I had just dropped by to check on you.You're alive and breathing.That's what matters.Let me bounce I have got clients waiting for me in forty-five minutes."

"Talking about clients.Can you give me that Spanish guy Antonio.I love his art." Apart from the tech company.I was starting an artistry agency.It was Ethan's department but I was planning to open my branch.With his help of course.We would license the art work for published and aspiring artists. Sell them to the highest bidder or use their work for a clothing brand.

"Nope Antonio is mine.You focus on the aspiring artists ok." He perked my cheeks and walked out.

Just after lunch I was already driving to Rodeo. Mary was really serious about this therapy thing. I found Dr Spencer's office and knocked. An elderly lady opened. Honestly I was disappointed. I expected some hot Dr but here I was welcomed by some grey haired, wrinkled face lady who was going to listen to my story and judge me.

"Please come on in." She smiled.

"Make yourself comfortable" She sat on a chair opposite the couch.

"Hi my name is Majesty Browns. An acquaintance of mine made an appointment on my behalf. I hope you have absolute discretion."

"Absolutely. I'm Doctor Spencer but you can call me Mitchell. I'm glad you found the time to see me. I assure you everything we discuss in here is confidential. No one will see the notes that I will write. Not even my PA. Let's try something shall we? Please tell me what brought you here. Will that be easier for you?"

I shrugged. "I was literally forced to come here by the acquaintance I told you about. I have no idea of what I'm doing here."

She sighed. "According to the acquaintance, what seems to be the problem?"

I rolled my eyes. "Isn't it like your job to see if I have a problem or not? You know what? This is insane. I'm clearly wasting my time here. Everything for me is working just fine and the last thing I need is a shrink."

"Who hurt you Majesty?" She asked calmly and I looked down fiddling with my fingers.

"No one."

"Tell me your story because I can see right through you and it wouldn't be a good idea to lie to me. I have many tricks up my sleeves to get the truth out of you but I want you to tell me willingly. I will help you so tell me your story."

She fixed her glasses.

I sighed. "It started the moment I realised that all the good

things in my life can never fill the void that has always

been there. The void that was left 12 years ago.....

.....I was a 15 year old teenager with big dreams and a

bright future. Everything was perfectly fine for me. A

wonderful home back in Zimbabwe, a wonderful family.

Being a first born in a family of three children ,with a father

who was a pastor and a mother who was highly respected

in the society. I was expected to lead by example and grow

into a respected lady. Following my parents' footsteps.

"Majesty go and polish your father's shoes.He has a meeting after lunch with the elders."Mom woke me up from my after noon nap.I growled in frustration but with her oblivious to it.I did what she asked me to anyway.After I was done lunch was ready.We gathered around the table as a family said our grace and enjoyed mama's cooking.

"Prince I'm taking you along.You have to help the gardeners.The yard at the church is not looking good.We have guests the next Sunday."My little brother frowned.He

was a year younger than me. He was growing into a handsome boy so he had an image to keep. Tagging along with daddy all the time wasn't impressive to the girls. But he didn't dare to say a word. After a few minutes the father and duo left. Mom left with my six year old little sister Mikanaka just after dad was gone. When they were all gone Ethan my buddy came. Our parents were friends that's how we got to be best friends. We did almost everything together. We bunked school together. Got our

asses whipped for that. He taught me how to ride a bicycle and I ended up in the hospital with a broken leg. When I was thirteen and he was fifteen we were both expelled from school. He beat some guy into a pulp after the guy perked me on my lips. That got us both into serious trouble. I got my first period when I was with him and he laughed at me. On his 18th birthday we watched some porn videos on his laptop as he was old enough to watch some. He got a boner and I laughed at him. I could label

every childhood nick and scars on his body and give you the date and reasons. I could take whole day telling you some crazy stuff we were into growing up but the point is we deserved the best friends of the century award or at least that's what I thought.

"So buddy there is this party happening in Newtown. I'm going but I want to take you alone. I know it will take two business days to convince your parents that is why I told you in advance." He was a rich spoilt brat. His family was

well up and moneyed.

"You know very well that my parents will never agree."

"I know that's why I'm here to help you with the alibi. Your

parents will agree as long as you mention about studying

genius." I was a bright kid. Your own black female Einstein. I

didn't have a good feeling about the party but I couldn't

disappoint my friend too so I agreed. Later on the rents

came and Ethan managed to convince them. Only that they didn't know I was going to a party. If I had known that at this party my life was going to change forever then I was not going to agree to go.

2

MAJESTY

Never give in to peer pressure.

Saying no does not make one a bad person. It only shows that you know what you want. You can not live to impress friends. A powerful person has the muscle to say NO! I learnt this lesson the hard way when I agreed to go the party with Ethan. I wanted to impress him as my only friend despite knowing that partying was not for me. I wanted to keep him in my small circle so instead of saying no I

agreed to going to this party. Unaware of what was going to happen to me.

"We lied to them Ethan. If this goes the wrong way what will I tell them."

"Trust your best friend will you. I got this. I got you."

I frowned. "You said that the last time we went to the river and we almost drowned"

"Its different this time. So you're going to wear this." He waved a mini lace dress in the air.

"I'm not wearing that mosquito net." I frowned.

"Maybe you will catch something in it."

"I can't walk around looking half naked. Hello I'm a pastor's daughter." I sat on his bed.

"This is a party no one will even care about you being a pastor's daughter. Besides, the dress will be covering the essentials so you will not be naked ok."

After a while he managed to convince me. God I just couldn't say no to those puppy eyes. His parents were not

home.They were at some business trip so it made things less awkward for me.The dress was just too revealing but Ethan was boosting my confidence. He was 18 and his parents gave him a second hand Mercedes benz to use.He drove us to New town where the party was held.

"Do houses like this really exist in Kwekwe?" I was taken by the beauty of the double storey that was in front of me.

"Yep they exist.Leggo!!!" He held my hand as we walked in.My friend's Benz looked like a wagon among a variety of

sports cars that were parked. We walked in and it was so noisy with everyone in what looked like a lounge hall, holding red plastic cups and dancing. I frowned. Gosh what was interesting about this noise.

"Relax will you."

"What did you say." I shouted at Ethan because there was no way he was going to hear me with this noise.

"I said relax. The party is lit."

"Hey Ethan." Some Queen Bee came from nowhere

dragging Ethan away from me. I looked at him with pleading eyes.

"You will be fine. I can't babysit you forever ok. Find something to drink I will be back." He disappeared into the crowd leaving me alone fighting back my tears. He was aware this was new to me. He knew I hated crowds and I felt uncomfortable but he left me. I looked for somewhere to sit until I found it.

"A drink?" It was a little bit quiet where I was but I wasn't

sure if the deep manly voice was from someone who was talking to me so I continued fiddling with my fingers until the person decided to sit on the empty chair that was besides me.

"You don't look like you're enjoying. A drink?" He offered me a red plastic cup which I accepted hesitantly.

There was something about him which made me think of danger. Something dark and tantalising which drew me like a magnet. I felt the rush of blood to my cheeks and the

sudden pounding of my heart as I stared back to a pair of violet eyes. I have never seen such beautiful eyes in my 15 years of existence. Without thinking I gulped down the contents in the red plastic cup but regretted immediately after feeling the burning sensation in my throat.

"You don't drink." He asked and I nodded looking down in embarrassment..

He chuckled. "So why did you drink this? That too in one goal"

I silently despaired at my own stupidity. "I thought it was juice."

He laughed."Its a party you really thought I could offer you juice."He drank from his cup.I looked at his Adam's apple it moved up and down.I might not have had a wealth experience about the opposite sex but I was intuitive enough to recognize when a boy was out of my league.And this one most definitely was.He wasn't a boy but a man,he looked older than most teenagers I knew.His

clothes screamed class and quality and his demeanor was more than just impressive it was daunting.

"Treet." He stretched out his hand. I gave him a confused look.

"My name is Treet."

"Ohh I'm Maj ...Majesty." We exchanged a handshake.

"A beautiful name for a beautiful girl." He gave me a lazy smile which revealed his deep dimples and snow white teeth.

"Umm thank you." I smiled back and stared into the empty plastic cup.

"Lets go over there and I will get you something to drink."

He said.

"Umm I don't drink."

He chuckled."I know that you don't drink alcohol but I'm sure you can manage a virgin cocktail."

I gave him a confused look."What's a virgin cocktail.?"

"That's for you to find out let's go." I took a leap of faith

and held his hand as he led us to the bar counter.

"This tastes good." I smiled at him and he smiled back.

"She is perfect for a three some." Another guy joined us

and he looked so much like Treet only that he had hazel

eyes.

"Tyrone what are you doing here?" They shoulder bumped.

"This is my annoying twin brother Tyrone. Douche this is

Majesty."

Tyrone dramatically bowed."Your Majesty."

I laughed."Nice to meet you Tyrone."

"I will leave you two to it.You're very beautiful by the way."

He said and disappeared into the crowd.

"My head and eyes are feeling a little bit heavy.I wonder

where Ethan is."

"Drink this you will be fine.You need to loosen up a little bit

this is a party."He gave me another drink.

"You said that a while before.This is the fifth drink and I'm

feeling funny.Where is Ethan?" Now I was getting worried.

"You will be fine. Drink up. Is Ethan your boyfriend." He

asked giving the drink.

"No he is my best friend." I gulped down the contents

again.

He smirked. "Cool then"

I tried to stand up but failed miserably. My knees felt

wobbly. I looked at Treet and laughed my lungs out. "Treet

what's happening to me?"

"Ohh my God I have to find Ethan Treet." I started crying. I

didn't know what was happening to me. One moment I'm

laughing, another I'm crying and I couldn't stand.

"You're drunk, you need to sleep. Come on let's go."

I obliged and followed him wherever he was leading me

to. We ended up in a certain room.

"I'm seeing the two of you now." I complained holding my

head.

"You're drunk honey but it's the two of us." Treet replied.

I laughed. "You're stupid Treet

I'm not drunk.I don't drink."I

grinned.

"Ohh really." He brushed my bare arm whilst I grinned like

an idiot.

"You like that." I don't know if it was Treet or Tyrone but

whoever it was cupped my face and kissed the daylights

out of me.It was my first kiss and it felt so good.

"I like that." I grinned again.One of them helped me out of

my dress as it suddenly felt very hot.From that moment

my brain went on a temporary shut down. But the

humiliation I faced the following morning is not something

that will easily get out of my mind.

"Hey girl wake up you have to go now." Someone shook

me and I yawned.

"Prince please leave me alone." I covered my head with a

pillow.

"Hey bitch wake up. Our parents will be here soon." They

shook me vigorously. Last night's events replayed and I

woke up like I was being chased. The unbearable pain

between my legs made me wince. I looked at myself and I

was naked.

"W-what happened?" I asked as tears coursed down my

cheeks. Treet yawned while still in bed and it was clear he

was naked. Tyrone had his lower body wrapped in a towel

he looked like he was coming from the shower.

"We had a good time yesterday. Girl you're really tight."

They shoulder bumped.

"What is that supposed to mean. What happened last night?" My breathing has accelerated as I prayed and hoped it wasn't what I was thinking.

"We had fun last night. Your pussy was really tight. Now you really have to go ...our pa--".

"You raped me.." I cried.

"Wait what? Are you crazy the three of us were willing participants no one forced or raped anyone." Treet said.

"No you raped me. I was not feeling well and I don't

remember what happened. Y-you guys tookadvantage
of that.I'm reporting you." I looked for my dress and wore it.

"You raped me."

They both laughed."Maybe you should see this video and
you will see who initiated the whole thing."Tyrone gave me
his phone and I played the disgusting video.I couldn't even
see half of it.The moment I saw myself kissing Treet and
Tyrone touching me I cried.

"I was drunk and you gave me the drink Treet." I threw

back the phone as I couldn't continue watching myself

doing the dirty sin.

"I didn't hold you at gunpoint. Now get out of my

house.You're starting to annoy me.I have a lot of shit to

deal with right now." He threw some hundred notes at my

face.

"Thank you for your services."

"I told you Treet to look for some professionals not these

bitches who want to act all holy and pure."Tyrone said.

Before I retaliated in my defense the door opened. A

coloured girl just like Treet and Tyrone walked in looking

like she just walked out of the vogue photoshoot. The

moment her blue eyes landed on my face she frowned and

I knew shit was about to go down.

"Angela I can explain. Its not what it looks like" Treet said

before she uttered a word.

"Ohhh bitch you should have thought twice before

messing with my man." She immediately grabbed my hair

when I least expected it and started dragging me.

"Stop Angela its not what you're thinking."

"A fat ugly black bitch Treet really.I'm not going to let this

fat bitch destroy what I invested.You girly you will learn

next time not to sleep with other women's men." She

punched me agina and again like I was nothing and I just

wailed in pain.After she was satisfied she stopped.

"Get out.Right now." I gathered my now ripped dress and

wounded body and limped outside.I didn't have a

cellphone and I wasn't familiar with the neighborhood so I

just walked.

A car honked at me but I just continued walking."Maj....Maj

wait."

That was Ethan but I didn't have the energy to deal with

him.

He ran after me and stopped me."I'm sorry for--....what

happened to you?"

I yanked his hands off."You want to know what

happened? You convinced me into going to a party with you and then what did you do? You left me when you knew very well I wasn't familiar with anyone and I wasn't safe. You want to know what happened? Some guy called Treet approached me, made me drink alcohol unknowingly and I got drunk. That scumbag and his brother slept with me Ethan and I can't even report them. You know why because they have a video of me initiating the whole thing under the influence of alcohol. I was out of character

because I was drunk.They took advantage of that situation
and its all your fault.Treet's girlfriend punched me like I
was a bitch or maybe I was because they paid me for the
good services.Its all your fault. I lost my purity and dignity.I
just want to go home."

"I'm sorry Majesty, I thought--" I raised my hand stopping
him from saying anything.

"I want my mother.I want to go home." I cried and he
hugged me.

"We are going to report them. Let's go home first."

He drove me home in silence. I only realised when my mom was glaring at me holding her waist that my dress wasn't appropriate.

"I asked you a question Majesty I said where have you been? Where did you go looking like a prostitute?"

"Mom its all my fault we..--" Ethan tried to speak but my mom shot him a look.

"Please go home, I will talk to your mother."

"Mom we should go to the police the Jackson brothers they raped her." Ethan said.

"Ethan I said go home right now!!" She shouted and he obliged.

" Prince go bring my syjambok right now I have to deal with this nonsense."

"Mom let me explain I know I lied about the party but they raped...ahhh mom...please mom you're hurting me...please stop..." The sound of the syjambok was enough to silence

my cries.

"What do you know about men? You open your legs for

men now." She continued whipping my ass.

"Mai Majesty stop you will hurt my child." My dad said with

his deep scary voice and I ran for his protection.

"They raped me dad....Treet and Tyrone.I'm sorry I went to

a party but ..but." I cried in his embrace.

"Go to your room and take a shower." He said and I obliged.

After taking a shower I drifted to sleep.Prince later gave

me my dinner in bed because I was too tired to go to the
dinner table.

"It's going to be ok." My little brother reassured me.

I just nodded and tried to eat but failed. Prince fed me and I
ate what I could and fell back to sleep again. I woke up
around 12 because I was thirsty. As I passed by my
parent's bedroom I heard them arguing and their door was
slightly open. I didn't meant to be a peeping Tom or
eavesdrop but my gut forced me.

"Are you insane? You wantt us to report the Jackson
sons? Are you forgetting what that family is doing for
us. Its because of them that I still have the position in
church and here you're saying I should report them." I was
shocked by what my own father was saying.

"Our own daughter was raped Mark and here you're saying
we shouldn't report them are you crazy? This is a question
about our daughter's future." My mother said and that
earned her a hard slap from my father. I covered my mouth

in shock.

"I'm the head of this house understand and what I say

goes.We are not going to report those boys or otherwise

we will die of poverty in this house.We can't bite the hand

that feeds us.We are benefiting a lot from that family and

we can't risk it because our daughter couldn't close her

legs.What was she doing at the party to begin with? She

lied about going for a group discussion which makes all

this her fault.She is not the first girl to be raped and to

move on with her life. We just have to make sure she gets
tasted and is not pregnant. Now stop sobbing and think of
something to tell her if she asks what we are going to do
about the rape issue." I couldn't believe my own father
would say such. He was a man of God or at least that's
what I thought..

"But she--" A punch silenced her immediately.

"My word is final and make sure you cover the bruises with
make up tomorrow and wear your smile."

All along I have been admiring what my parents had. I admired their marriage but now I was thinking otherwise. It wasn't what it looked like. They were all lovey-dovey in our eyes but it wasn't the truth. Some things were starting to make sense, now that I was grown. There were times where my mother would wince every time I wanted to sit on her lap. She would shout at me but I didn't understand what her problem was. There were also times I caught my dad beating my mom but he would laugh and say we were

just playing. Being an innocent kid I believed him. One other time mom had a huge bruise on her face I asked her about it and she told me that she bumped into the door by mistake. Now it was starting to make sense. All those days she spent sleeping in her room saying she was sick. I suspect it was all that time that dad abused her. I couldn't believe that the man I considered my father was capable of such. To us he was the sweetest father and husband but I saw another side to him. He was a monster. I tiptoed back

to my room and cried my lungs out while suppressing my

sounds with the pillow. The following morning I woke up a

little bit late but however the whole family was still there

so I joined them for breakfast. We ate in awkward silence.

"Mom, dad I don't want to press any charges but I just want

to go to the hospital." I took it upon me to free my mother

from the burden of lying to me. Yes she whipped my ass

the previous day but I understood where she was coming

from. She was angry. Also it was pointless trying to press

charges if my own father was not going to support me in
this.

"You made a good decision my daughter. We will leave
everything to God because we were not going to win
against that powerful rich family my child. God is seeing
everything ok." I couldn't believe the same man who stood
at the pulpit preaching the word of God was a hypocrite
like this.

"You're right God is seeing everything." I looked at mom

who was looking so lost in her own thoughts.

"I want to go to the hospital mom." She snapped out of her thoughts and nodded.

AT THE GENERAL HOSPITAL

"How old are you child." The elderly nurse asked looking at me sternly.

"I'm 15 ma'am." I said playing with my fingers.

She lowered her glasses and looked sternly at me."Are you sexually active? "I fiddled with my fingers.

"Heheheee Linda come and hear this...children of this generation are surprising. Linda come here please."

Thee Linda came immediately.

"What is it?"

"Look at this child she is 15 but she is here for HIV testing

and from the look of it she is sexually active.Kids these

days they don't value themselves." They started talking as

if I wasn't there whilst I waited anxiously for the results.

Linda looked at me for a while."Wait a minute aren't you

Pastor Browns' daughter. Yes I know you. Wonders shall never end." She clapped once.

The English surname shouldn't surprise you. My great grandfather was adopted by a white family.

"So if you're positive just embrace it and move on with your life. We have some counselling facilities for you. If

you're negative don't ever make this mistake again of

sleeping with people at your age. There is also something

called protection ok. Anyway congratulations you're

negative."

I sighed in relief and stood up without saying a word to

her."I'm negative." I said going into the car and didn't

mutter another word mom didn't say anything as well as

she drove us back home.

I knew after all this my life was never going to be the same

again.A few days after everything has happened almost

everyone in the neighborhood had their own version of

what truly occurred. To some I was caught by the boy's girlfriend in the middle of the act. Whilst to some I was caught by the parents. Whatever it was it just painted me as a whore. My parents couldn't walk with their heads held high because of this and my father made sure to make me suffer for it. My friendship with Ethan was bruised because I blamed him for everything. Ethan being Ethan was there for me. Four months down the line we were done writing our final exams. I was sure I had excelled. I started noticing

some changes on my body that had me worried. I was gaining weight even though I hardly ate and I missed my period for the fourth time. Being someone who was intelligent I knew what I was expecting and I drowned in depression.

"May be its just a false alarm. I mean I'm sure they used protection." Ethan said with a worried look on his face.

"I know what's happening to me Ethan. My body is changing. I missed my period. I know I'm pregnant ok. I don't

care if they used protection or whatever but those things

are not hundred percent safe." I wiped off my tears.

"I will buy a pregnant test we can't just assume things

Maj." He paced up and down

"Please stop pacing you're making me dizzy.You can go

buy the test kit but I already know." I covered myself with

the sheet as Ethan stormed out.After a while he came

back.

"The instruction say you should pee on it and wait for three

minutes.Let's go so you can pee on it."

I was at his place and his room had an en-suite.He

followed me to the bathroom.I looked at him.

"You wanna see me peeing now."He laughed and walked

out.I peed on the stick and we waited.Ethan kept on

pacing.

"Its two lines.I'm pregnant Ethan." I wailed.He hugged me

shushing me.

"My whole life is ruined Ethan.First of all I couldn't report

the rape now this. I'm also a child what do I know about taking care of a child."

"We will figure this out ok." He wiped my tears off.

"I have to tell my parents. I don't know how they are going to take this. I shouldn't have gone to that party." I had stopped blaming Ethan but now blaming myself for not being able to say no to Ethan and easily trusting Treet.

"It's not your fault it was mine." We hugged.

AT THE BROWNS' HOUSEHOLD

"You have ruined this family's reputation enough by going to that party to begin with. Now you're pregnant." Now my father's true colors were coming to light.

"What do you mean this is her fault? Our daughter was raped for goodness sake." Mom shouted back.

"Don't you get it? Our reputation is at stake here. Its already enough that we can't walk with our heads held high because of what happened. She is my daughter and she knew as a pastor's daughter she wasn't supposed to go to

such parties. We can't sacrifice the whole family because of her carelessness."

"What is that supposed to mean?" My mother shouted back. I just thanked God my little siblings were asleep, I didn't want them to witness this.

"If there is one bad apple in a basket full of good apples you remove it to avoid the others from rotting." My father said.

"Are you saying my daughter is a bad apple. In times like

this where we should stand together as a family. You're sacrificing our daughter's future to fame and reputation.

Do you even love her?" My mom cried.

"Don't make me look like a bad parent. My mother needs someone to help her at the rurals she can go there and start her life there afresh without any drama. Its your choice ."

I looked at my father in disbelief. "And you say you're a man of God. Such a hypocrite."

"You think because you opened your legs for boys now you can open your mouth at me uttering nonsense.I'm going to teach you a lesson.I'm the man of this house and I'm the head." He took his belt and charged at me.

"Don't beat her she is pregnant." She tried to protect me but he pushed her and he head hit the corner of the table.She winced in pain.He started beating me with a belt till I felt numb.I only managed to protect my stomach.This was the first time he had whipped me like this.I crawled to

my room and slept in a fetal position. An hour later mom came to my room and hugged me.

"I'm sorry my baby I'm weak. I failed to stand up for you. I'm sorry my baby."

"Why do you stay in this marriage where you're abused mom? Why don't you walk out?"

"I'm the one at the loose end my baby. If I walk out what about you and your siblings? I can't let another woman raise my children when I'm alive and kicking."

"Mom the moment he laid his hands on you you should have walked out. This is not worth it. There are a lot of women who win custody against their husbands and yours is abusive which gives you more power in the legal battle. You don't have to suffer mom." I said.

"You're still young to understand these things. He was never like that but bad things happened and he changed but I know the man I fell in love with is still in there. I will just hang on a little bit and everything will be fine. If I

divorce him what will people say?" She said.

"The people you're worried about will not be here when he

beats you. The "what will people say" mentality is going to

get you killed. I am not 5 anymore maa. Don't say bad

things happened and he changed. Are you trying to fool me

or convince yourself? He didn't change he was always like

this mom. Don't try to find excuses for him. Walk out of this

marriage in one piece mom."

She stood up angrily. "We are not white people do you

understand. Don't take what they teach you at school and
bring it here. In reality things are different. I invested in this
marriage for 18 years so you think I will walk out just like
that. Even if he beats me I will heal. I will take it like a
woman. You're just 15 what do you know huh. He was right
you should go to Rusape before you ruin my
marriage. Pack your bags tomorrow you're leaving before
you ruin all of us here." She furiously stormed out leaving
me tongue tied.

I did pack my bags but not because I wanted to go to

Rusape but I had to leave the house. My paternal

grandmother hated me and always said I wasn't a

Browns. There was no way me and my baby were going

there.

3

MAJESTY

It never rains,it pours.

Sneaking out of the house was a success. I packed one travelling bag with all my important documents and clothes.I just acted on reflex I never really thought about where I was going to go with my child.I had no option but to seek help from Ethan.It wasn't really a long distance to Ethan's place but when I got there I was so tired thanks to little bunny I was carrying.I rang the bell at Ethan's gate

and after a while his father opened the gate.

"Hey what are you doing here in the middle of the

night? Let me help you with that." He carried my bag and

we walked inside of the house.

"We heard what happened whilst we were away. We were

planning to come to your house tomorrow and politely

apologize about everything because it's partly Ethan's fault

that you ended up at that party. If you hadn't gotten there

none of this could have happened. I'm sorry about

everything Maj." Ethan's mother said holding my hands.

"No its ok.You don't have to apologize. This wasn't Ethan's

fault. I could have said no if I didn't want to go." I yawned

because I was so tired.

She smiled."Ohh you need to rest we will talk tomorrow

morning. Are you going to use the other room or you will

share with Ethan."

"I will go to Ethan's."

"Ok then goodnight." They went to their room whilst I went

to Ethan's room. The dude slept like a log so it was going to be a struggle trying to wake him up. I just snuggled besides him and slept. The following morning I woke up late that's how tired I was.

"Finally she is awake. Here you need to eat." He placed a food tray which had a full English breakfast. For some reason he was avoiding eye contact.

"Says a guy who didn't even hear me coming in. Anyways this looks yummy but little bunny in here doesn't like the

eggs they look undercooked." I frowned looking at the
fried eggs.

"Ok I will take them then.You wash your face I will be
back." He immediately walked out.

I rinsed my mouth and when he was back I started
feasting on the food while he just blankly stared at me.

"Is there something you're not telling me because bro I
know that look."

"No eat up." He said sniffing and looking away.

Ethan was crying!"Wait you're crying. What's going on

Ethan.Why are you crying? "I asked.

" I promise I will tell but first of all finish your food ok."He

cupped my face and forced a smile.

I quickly ate because I couldn't wait to hear what it was

that made him cry.

"I'm done."

"Let's go to the living room."I obliged and I saw his dad

pacing up and down.His mom trying to calm Maka down

who was crying hysterically.

When Prince saw me he ran to me."He killed her...he killed

her Maj."He cried out.

"Wait wait calm down ok.Who killed who?You're not

making any sense."

He wailed loudly as I tried to make sense out of what he

was saying.

"I need you to sit down for this one ok.Don't freak out,think

about bunny ok." Ethan said.

"Now you're freaking me out. Can anyone tell me what's going on."

"Dad killed mom." Prince shouted.

"Ok ok bro I get it mom and dad probably know that I'm here and they sent you two to lie so as to get me back.Fine we will go back home ok.No need for you to make up such horrible lies.You suck in this bro."

"Do you think Maka will be crying her lungs out just to prove a point. We woke up today and found mom lying on

the carpet and dad sitting on the couch holding a metal
rode. He hit mom and mom couldn't survive it. Maka had to
see such a traumatising sight. We ran here first." Prince
explained.

"Maybe she was just unconscious and you jumped into
conclusions. Let's go check on her. We need to take her to
the hospital before it's too late."

"Right let's go."

She sighed and wiped off her tears. "We got a call from the

police Maj."

"They took your dad. Your mom's body was taken the

General hospital."

"Maa you're misunderstanding my mom cannot be

dead. We talked yesterday. She held me you know. Yes the

conversation didn't end well but we talked. She can't be no

more."

"Sisi there was blood all over...mom was not moving..."

Maka cried out loud and I hugged her.

The place that used to feel very warm and was home for me was so cold and dark like a grave. It had taken a lot of convincing for the police to finally agree to let us in as what used to be a home was now a crime scene. Her blood was still on the floor in the lounge and it was starting to smell.

"I called all the relatives and informed them. Apparently they are too busy to attend the funeral. Your father's brothers however said they will see what they can do."

My mom grew up at an orphanage in Driefontein. When she married my father his family became her only family. However they never really liked her because she was an orphan. I honestly don't know if being an orphan is a crime but in the Browns' family it was more like a taboo hence my mother was hated. So I wasn't surprised when they said they were too busy to attend her funeral.

"They never loved her. Anyway we are the only family she has so I will make sure she gets a proper burial. I

contacted the Driefontein nuns that she used to be in

contact with and they said they will come." Ethan's mom

said.

"So I will never see mama again. Why did papa hit her, he

was a pastor and pastors don't do that right sisi." Maka

looked at me with innocent eyes

I squatted and opened my arms for her. "Come here baby

everything is gonna be ok. Mom is seeing us from the

sky. She is now a star I will show you at night."

"Everything is going to be ok.I'm here."

"I need to rest now my back aches."

They decided that my mother's funeral was going to be

held the following day after the police were done with their

work.

"Hey are you ok." Ethan walked in.

"Hey." I faked a smile and stared back to the ceiling.

"You're allowed to cry and breakdown you know that

right.Bottling things up and sweeping things under the rag

is not healthy. I'm your shoulder to cry on." He sat on the bed.

"She died a strong woman and I have to take after her. Our last conversation she said something about taking the pain like a woman so that's what I'm doing. Taking it like a woman. I have to be like her. Dad would beat the shit out of her but the following morning you wouldn't notice anything. She would smile even in pain. I can't cry Ethan. I have to take it all in and be strong for Makaanaka and

Prince. They need me more and I need to be their
shoulder."

"But Maj that's not right. Crying doesn't mean you're weak
but bottling the pain and acting like nothing happened is
dangerous ok." He said brushing my arms.

I angrily yanked his hands off."How can I cry Ethan when
I'm the one who killed her? I went to that party, everything
started the day I stepped into that house and drank
alcohol thanks to that monster Treet. Everything was going

so well with my family but I had to ruin it all. I killed her because just yesterday I was telling her to walk out of the marriage. I was telling her to stand up against my father and maybe that's what she tried to do but ended up being beaten to death. They fought because of me. Everything is entirely my fault."

He rubbed his head. "Ohh my God Majesty this has nothing to do with you ok. That monster laid hands on her. He killed her, he did it not you."

"Please leave me alone ok. Stop trying to make me feel better."

"Fine I will leave you to it." He walked out.

The following day was heartbreaking. I thought they would be less than 50 people but I was wrong. Most people from our church came and some sisters from the orphanage came too. My father's two brothers came just to get free food and alcohol. We paid our last respects for two days and on the third day it was the burial day. Prince and

Maka's cries still haunt me at night. Their cries pierced my heart. A man robbed me and my siblings our future with our mother. Just because she loved a man she lost her life. Her burial went well. People had nice things to say about her. After three days of my mother's burial my father was sentenced to life in jail after he confessed to killing my mother. Our uncles took away our home and money as they claimed it was their brother's hardwork. We were just left with our mother's documents and clothes. I couldn't

fight with them so Ethan's parents took us in.

"I always wanted four kids but after Ethan I couldn't give

birth anymore but I guess God fulfilled my wishes today."

Mrs Jaji said.

"When I give birth I will start working and pay you back. I

can't keep on burdening you like this."

"Nonsense you will never be a burden. You were my friend's

children so you're practically mine too." Mrs Jaji said.

"I know but still there will be a financial burden I can't have

that. Once I give birth I will start working to cover for my siblings school fees and other expenses. It's already enough that you're giving us shelter and food. The rest will be up to me and when I get the money we will move out. Please don't argue with me on this one. Enjoy the rest of your meal. I just want to lie down a little bit."

I walked to Ethan's room which was now practically mine. It wasn't appropriate for Ethan and me to continue sleeping together so he moved to the other guestroom

which he shared with Prince while I slept with Maka.I
stumbled into the bathroom and sat on the cold tiles as I
felt the tightness in my chest.I wanted to cry but I had to
take the pain like a woman.My head felt tight and so did
my stomach as I crept back to the bedroom and lay on the
bed.I kicked off my shoes and crawled beneath the duvet
and lay there shivering in and out of sleep.I don't know
how long had passed as I snapped my eyes open in
alarm.My senses alerted by some dark instinct as I felt

something was wrong.Terribly wrong.I felt a sharp spear
of pain in my lower abdomen accompanied by an
involuntary jerk of my body.For a moment I laid
there,scared to move.Tremblingly I slid my hands down my
thighs as they came back warm and sticky.They were
covered in blood.I was overcame by fear.The same fear I
had watching my mother's coffin was being covered with
dirt and dust.I opened my mouth to call out but no words
came out.Sucking in deep breath I tried again.

"Ethan my baby."I cried out.

"So then what happened?Did you loose the baby?" Doctor

Spencer asked fixing her specs.

I wiped my tears off."Let's end it here today."

She smiled."I know we are opening old wounds.I know this

journey will be painful but it needs to be done.Sometimes

we have to deal with our demons head on for a better

future.Clearly you didn't deal with your past and here we

are today.You can't keep on running away."

I checked my wristwatch."I have to go now.I should be

having my dinner by now."

We shook hands."Please do come back tomorrow.I really

want to know what happened next."

"I'm not a storyteller Dr"

"I know that.I need to know everything to be able to help

you."

"Sure.I will see myself out."

I drove to Paxton Calabsas. After settling in the US I

managed to secure a very beautiful

isolated and safe

apartment in West Hollywood. I arrived at my place and

saw a car on the driveway.

"Ohh God not this nonsense again." I honked furiously. She

got out of her car and walked furiously towards mine. I had

no energy for her honestly. I just wanted to eat a good

meal, have a bubble bath and sleep. Not to deal with this

nonsense at this time of the day.

"I swear you and your husband have nothing to do with

your lives.You have plenty of free time right." I looked at

her as she angrily glared back at me.

"You snake!!! You whore.How dare you open your legs for

my husband.You don't know me right.I will ruin your

life.What have I ever done to you huh?You want to ruin my

marriage that I invested for years.How evil are you?You

homewrecker." She held her waist.

"Angela what exactly is it that you invested in your marriage apart from being such a nuisance that your own husband couldn't stand you? What is it that you did as a wife to make sure that your husband wouldn't come to my bed? Yea you just want someone to blame but you know very well your marriage with Treet was long dead before he even got to my bed. Before I even came into the picture you guys were falling apart. You ruined your own marriage with your bare hands when you treated that guy like he

didn't matter. Every time you messed up I was the one to clean up after you. I gave him the shoulder to cry on, I cooked for him and treated him like a king. That is how you lost him. So how dare you walk with confidence right into my face accusing me of being a homewrecker? You destroyed your own home Angela. You wrecked your own marriage. You know what? I had a long day. I need to rest. Your nonsense is draining me. First it was your husband now you. Later it will be your brother in law."

"I will destroy you Majesty.You don't know me." She

shouted banging on my window.

"You poor thing.Don't let this beautiful face fool you.I will

fuck your world up in 2.5 seconds flat before you even

finish spelling out the word destroy and I will have a smile

on my face like its a joke.Behind this pretty face

honey,there is a scorned woman.You don't wanna mess

with me.You did the first time but not this time around

bitch.Now drive your shit out of my way before I loose it."

"I hate you.I hate you so much." She shouted while going
back to her car.

"Hate me?Have a sit with the rest of the bitches waiting for
me to give a fuck." I shouted back.She drove off and I
drove inside.

"You're having tarte tatin and nicoise salad today." Romeo
my chef said.

"Thank you Romeo.You may leave now.I need to rest." I
took a shower,wore my LV pyjamas and went to the dining

to have my dinner. Whilst enjoying my meal Ethan called.

"Eth wassup?." I answered.

"Hey buddy. Maka is having her 18th birthday in a few days

I hope you remember that" He said.

I sighed. "Ya ya of course I do. How can I forget. I will buy

her a car or whatever present or organize a party."

"A party that you will not attend. Maj she doesn't care

about the presents or the party. She needs her sister. Try to

be there for her, try to come and celebrate her birthday with

her. Stop isolating yourself from your family." He firmly said.

"I'm protecting them. I will deposit some money in their accounts tonight. They shouldn't worry." I placed my plates into the dishwasher.

"It's not about the money and what do you mean you're protecting them?" He asked.

"I think I have bad luck or some dark aura. If I love someone they will leave me for good. The last time they

came to see me they had an accident and I almost lost

them. That is supposed to tell me something. They are

safer when they are faraway from me." I switched on the

dishwasher while balancing my phone with my shoulder.

He chuckled. "You need help Maj you seriously need

it. You're still suffering from the trauma of losing your---"

"Please don't go there. Look they will understand one day. I

love them and I know what I'm doing so please."

"But Maj--" I dropped the call and switched off my phone.

With a tub of icecream in my hand I went to the lounge to watch a sci-fi movie Jonathan.I really loved the way the guy switched personalities.It reminded me of some novel I once read.

"Babe." The voice scared the shit out of me that I dropped the tub down.

"What the fuck Tyrone?!.Ohh my God you scared the shit out of me.How did you pass the security?" I looked at Tyrone who looked scruffy with his beard unshaved and

eye bags.

"I just came to see you.I miss you." He said making his

way to me.

"No no we talked about this.Now leave I want nothing to

do with you." I said folding my arms

"I know I was wrong years back but babe please.We were

building something beautiful.Let's just forget everything

and move on please.I love you.I need you.I can't be without

you.Majesty please don't do this to me." He went on his

knees."Please Maj."

"Forget everything?! Do you have any idea of what that did

to me?Do you have any idea of what I lost because of what

you and your twin did?How dare you ask me to forget

everything just like that?What do you know about making

something beautiful?You were just tagging along because

you want my pussy."I was saved by the doorbell which

rang and I quickly went to answer it leaving him on his

knees.

I opened the door."Ohh God not again Treet."He was
looking worse than his brother.He looked like a truck just
hit him.

His eyes landed on Tyrone."What the fuck is he doing
here?"

Tyrone stood up."What the fuck are you doing here?"

They charged at each other and started breathing at each
other's faces like bulls.

"My house is not a ring.Both of you should just leave.I only

wanted a goodnight sleep not this drama."

"Babe please." They said in unison.

"Leave both of you. Now you're starting to annoy me."

The doorbell rang again. "Let's hope it's not your wife Treet

because I swear to God hell will freeze."

They followed me to the door. In all his glory one of my

bootycall was standing holding flowers and a box of

piazza. Ok. first of all I don't like red roses, secondly he was

just here to fuck. Why trying to be romantic and shit? I didn't

even remember his name.

"Who the hell are you? And what do you want from my

wife?" Treet barked while carrying his weight and muscles

towards the guy who was looking like he was about to pee

in his pants.

"I'm sorry sir. I didn't know she was married." He dropped

the flowers and the piazza and literally ran for his life .

I took the piazza and walked inside." Is that your other

bootycall Jesty? I swear I will kill them. Do you hear me? No

nigger is going to eat where I eat.Do you understand?I will

kill them." I felt the truth in every word he said.

"You're not my husband or boyfriend.Whoever I fuck is

none of your business.Now leave my house." I shouted.

"He should leave." He looked at Tyrone.

"I'm not here to fight so I will leave but I'm not going to

loose you either. I'm leaving only because I respect you not

some people I know." He perked my lips and walked out.

I stormed to my bedroom.Treet followed.I went to bed

while he took a shower. He came back smelling shower gel. He was looking all wet and inviting. God knows I was tempted but I had to control myself. He knew it and came to bed butt naked.

"Please remove your pyjamas. I want to feel your skin on mine." I looked at him and folded my arms. "We can argue all night. And yea I called your PA and told him to reschedule all your meetings. Tomorrow its about you and me."

I angrily removed my pyjamas and panties."You're not the boss of me Treet.You don't get to call my PA and do stuff for me.This is my business and you will not ruin it for me."

"I'm sorry." He said.

"And besides I can't spend the day with you tomorrow. I have to see my therapist."

"You're seeing a shrink.Why wasn't I informed?" He half shouted.

"Because you're?The reason you're in my bed today its

because I don't wanna fight you. So don't think just

because I allowed you in here you're already my husband

or I feel something for you. Now dim your light I want to

sleep." He obliged and spooned me. His erected member

on my butt was doing things to me but I didn't have the

energy for him. For him I needed that energy because he

could keep you up all night.

I was slowly drifting off to sleep when he started

talking. "I'm sorry. I will do anything to earn your

forgiveness and trust. "I frowned in my sleep.

"Good morning. "He smiled holding a tray with breakfast.I

ignored him and went to take a shower.I wasn't hungry

anyway.I wore my blue babydoll dress and silver sandals I

wasn't in the mood to go all designer since I was going to

see a shrink.

"We are going together to see the shrink but you should

eat first.At least one bite.I know you hate me right now but

please just eat."

"I'm not hungry but I will just take that pancake." I took a

bite.

"Its yummy.Did Romeo made this?"

He smiled."I did"Ohh crap the nigger can cook.

I wiped my mouth."Let's go."

We drove his Mercedes Benz E-class to Doctor Spencer's

place.

"Ohhh who do we have here?" She said when we arrived.

"This is Treet." I said and she looked surprised.

"Treet thee Treet Jackson."

"Yea thee Treet." I said.

"You want to continue with your story in his presence?"

She asked

"Yea it doesn't matter. Its my story not his anyway."

"If you're comfortable then continue." She fixed her specs.

"Where was I?" I asked

"Blood and the baby." She said

4

MAJESTY

Pain after pain.

"Ethan my baby." I let out a faint cry but it was enough for

Ethan to come to my rescue.

"Majesty." He knocked."Maj for God's sake will you open

the door.Dad its locked."

He shouted and I continued sobbing.

"Stand back." His father yelled."Stand well away from the

door."

It took him three attempts before he made a big hole
enough for him to snake his hand inside and unlock the
door from the inside. I was all curled up in a foetal position,
my eyes wide with terror as I looked up to his frightened
face. He was over to me in an instant.

"What's happening?" Ethan asked his hand touching my
clammy cheek.

"I'm bleeding. I'm losing my baby." I cried out.

"We need to get you to the hospital." He carried me to the

car.

"Maybe we should call the ambulance." His mother said.

"They take longer to get here.I can get her there quicker myself.Shh Maj don't cry ok." Ethan said placing me inside carefully.

"What is happening with sisi Maj is she dying?" Maka asked looking at Prince.

He squatted cupping her face."She is not dying she is just sick."It pained me seeing my lil sister's face like that.She

had known the pain of death at a very young age.

A sob erupted from my throat as the pain got intense. We

arrived at the hospital in no time. Everything was becoming

blur as they wheeled me into some sort of an x-ray or

theatre room where I was to wait for the radiographer to

scan me. Through it all I had the awful sense of what this

was going to mean. I passed out due to the immense

pain. When I woke up I was welcomed by a young male

Doctor writing something down on his notepad.

"Welcome back." He flashed me a pretty smile.

"How is my baby...is she...where is..." I touched my stomach looking desperately at him.

"I need you to calm down ok." He sat down at a stool besides me.

"You lost the other one and I'm sorry. Now I need you to focus on the other remaining twin because you're not out of danger yet. If you stress about the other one you lost you may lose the remaining one. We don't want that now

do we?" I closed my eyes fighting back the tears that were threatening to come out.

"So you're saying my own womb is my baby's grave?" I looked at him.

He held my hand."Let's not focus on the negative things right now.Let's focus on the strong champ in there ok.I'm the radiographer I'm going to give you a scan.Let's try to see what's going on with the remaining champ."

He began to apply globs of clear jell on the paddles of the

machine.

"Its very cold."

He started moving the machine on my belly and indeed it was cold.

"Look at this little heartbeat here.You see that throbbing

little bit there,is you baby's heartbeat but its weak

though.Can you see those little hands and legs

there?That's your baby.Mummy you need to relax for this

one.Do you think you will be able to do that in the

future?Relaxing and stop stressing?"

I nodded.

"You also should come for your check ups.I will write down

your medication.Make sure to take it but most importantly

try to relax and rest ok.You will stay for another night I

have to make sure you're completely fine before you

leave."

"Another night?" I asked.

"Yes.We had to clean you yesterday and you were out the

whole night.I will tell your family to come see you." He

walked out.Ethan and his mother walked in.

"I'm so sorry about the other baby.I know how losing a

child is like.I had three miscarriages before Ethan so I

know how it is like." She was crying.

"I don't know who I wronged or why this is happening to

me?What did I do wrong?First it was my innocence robbed

from me,my mom was next and now my child." I looked at

Ethan.He held my hand and brushed my hair.

"Everything is going to be alright ok.I got you."

"Please don't say I got you.Whenever you say that the worst happens." We laughed.

"The doctor said I should stay one more night."

"Its ok the expenses are covered anyway.I brought you some food.Hospital food is the worst."

I started eating the mashed potatoes I have been craving so much.I only wanted those with mayonnaise.Ethan fed me.

I burped."That was amazing.Bring me those later please. "

His mother smiled."Of course we will."

They left since the visiting hours were over.I mourned my

baby's death and slept afterwards for some time.I woke up

when I smelt something yummy.

"Gherkin pickles." I opened my eyes.

"I was praying you would love them." That doctor was in

his casual wear sitting besides me.

"Ohh Doc.Those are for me?"

"Yea preggo ladies love them a lot.I'm Justin Moyo by the way." He gave me the pickles.

"Ohh thank you Doctor Justin but I also want some mayonnaise."

He laughed. "Ok I will go get it from the cafeteria."He came back with the bottle of mayonnaise and I smiled.

I licked my fingers."This is yummy.So tell me you decided you want to look at vaginas for a living.What inspired you to be a gynaecologist or whatever that you're?" I asked.

"Umm my mom died while giving birth to me so I didn't want the same fate to befall on other kids because I know how it is like not to have a mother."

"Yea its tough.I lost my mother not long ago so I know how it feels." I drank some water.

"I just wanna be there for my child no matter what."

"What happened 15 and pregnant?" He asked.

"Well its not what it seems like.I was raped but I don't wanna talk about it.I'm in this pregnancy alone."

"You're not alone.I'm here for you as your gynae .Your

family has your back.So you ain't alone." He fed me.

"Its different.I'm a child.What do I know about taking care

of a child?Girls my age are out there enjoying their

teenagehood and I'm here carrying a baby.I'm robbed of

my life you know.Its not easy especially because the

father of the child is out there doing God knows what. I'm

trying to be strong but I have to deal with the loss of my

other baby just after burying my mother.I have to be extra

careful so as to lessen the risk of losing the remaining

one. What if I lose him too? I just want a peaceful life. Is

that too much to ask for? I don't know why this is

happening to me? I know everything happens for a reason

but sometimes I wish I knew what the reason is."

"It's going to be ok. I'm not someone good with words but I

know it's going to be ok." He squeezed my hand in

reassurance. I just smiled.

He checked his wristwatch. "I have to bounce now. Try to

get some sleep.I will come back later on my night

shift.Double-shifts are a nightmare.You rest ok."

Later that day he came back to check on me like he
promised.

"Just finished doing my rounds and I thought I should
check on my favourite patient."

I smiled."Favourite huh"

"Yea.So how have you been?Did you feed our lil
champ?"He sat down.

"Ohh yea yea I did."

There was a moment of awkward silence. He sighed and looked at me. "Look umm you're great person and I really wanna be someone in your life. I just don't wanna be your doctor. I wanna be your friend. You don't know it but I share the same pain and I think us being a friends would be a great thing because we can closely relate to each other's experience. If you just want me to be your doctor its still fine. I know this may be a lot for you to take in right now. I

know you wanna be alone and the last thing you want is a friend. But you need all the positive energy that you can get."

"No no it's cool.I actually thought we were already friends I'm hurt.You're realising now that you wanna be my friend when I had already considered you one. Ouch you hurt my feelings." I dramatically held my chest and we both laughed.

We talked till late,getting to know each other.I didnt

exhaust too much information about my life but i knew a lot about him after our conversation.He was a funny guy that for some time I forgot about my pain and problems.

He was 24 years old doing his work related learning at Topomasi in Kwekwe.He lived in Harare.He was studying medicine at University of Zimbabwe. I actually asked him why he chose to do his work related learning in Kwekwe he said he wanted a change of environment.

"And maybe it was meant to be so that I could meet

you."He said.

A few months later

I was now heavy and ready to pop.The pregnancy journey

was magnificent and a happy one except for the part

where I always had nightmares of a baby crying which I

realised later was a result of loosing my other child.My

family spoilt me rotten and took care of all my

cravings.Ethan unfortunately was a victim of my mood

swings.Doc Justin made sure to check up on me every

now and then. Ethan's parents in the beginning did not condone the fact that I was close to him on a personal level but later on warmed up to that idea as they realised that he was harmless and he was very caring.

"Ohh aren't you the best. You brought me the cheesecake I wanted. This fool Ethan didn't want to buy it for me." I said feasting on the cheesecake that Justin had brought.

"Just pop out already." Justin laughed.

"I'm due the following week. Don't worry soon we will be

playing with little bunny." They all smiled.

"Let me go get some water." I stood up but widely opened

my eyes when I realised what I just did. Before I said

anything Ethan beat me to it.

"I think this pregnancy is messing with you now you're

peeing on yourself." Ethan laughed.

I felt like smacking his stupid head." My water just broke

you fool."

"Ohh my dead God what should I do? Mom her water just

broke." Ethan ran around the house like a mad man and came back carrying my bags.

"Are you feeling any contractions yet." Justin calmly asked as he was driving us to Topomasi. I was with Ethan's mother at the back seat while the rest of the crew were being driven by Ethan.

"Yes a little. They feel like period pain cramps right?" I looked at Ethan's mom and she nodded vigorously.

"Breathe in and out ok. Follow my pattern." She said and I

did the breathing exercise.

"How far is she?" Ethan's mom asked after we had arrived and the nurse was done checking me as well as removing the sheets I had soiled.

"She is 7cm, the baby is crowning really good and ready to come. Just hang in there dear this will be over in no time."

She said. I was supposed to be taken for C-section but I

had to beg Justin to allow me go have a natural

delivery. The other nurses really believed I could push the

baby despite my age. I was doing fine but the pain was

unbearable. Respect and love your mothers people. They

went through hell for you to be out in this world.

"Mamaa!!!....I can't carry this baby anymore get her out." I

screamed as another wave of contraction hit.

"Hang in there baby. This will be over in no time." Ethan's

mother wiped off my sweat.

I was in agony for hours until I just started pushing. Justin

was with Doc Madzorere and three nurses. Thanks to them

my baby's cries filled the room.

"Congratulations a bouncing baby boy."

They took him to the scale and he weighed 4,4 kg he was

so huge I even had a lot of stitches.

"He is so pretty.I can't get enough of him." Prince said.

"Yea right. So we agreed on naming him Gift right." Ethan

said.

I smiled."Of course."I winced as he sucked on my tender

nipple."This is painful but a wonderful experience. I can't

believe I pushed this big head."Everyone laughed.

"He is beautiful." Justin said when he came to see me

after my family had left.

"Tell me about it.He is so pretty.He is going to break

hearts."

"Tell me again why didn't you name him Justin I mean he

takes after me.Look at this face,this is exactly me." He

smiled

I laughed."You're full of yourself."

9 days after Gift had a sudden fever. I didn't know what was wrong with him since he was doing just fine for the past days and growing really well.

"I don't know his temperature is quite high. What should I do?" I was on the call with Justin.

"Bring him here so we can check what's wrong. Don't panic these things happen with any other kids." I dropped the call and Ethan drove me to the hospital.

"He is going to be fine. Hang in there." One of the nurses said as they took my son to one of the rooms. They kept on exchanging glances with Justin and now I understand what that meant. There was no hope for him and they have seen it.

After a while of me waiting impatiently, Justin came back.

"Where is he? Did you inject him? Trust me that one is scared of injections I'm sure he is wailing. Can I go and see him."

"I want you to sit down and calm down ok." From the look on his face I knew something was definitely wrong.

"No I'm fine like this. Tell me what's going on. Can I go and see him?"

"Look Maj we tried all we could

he---"

I held my head. "No no no no no Justin. Please no no Justin

noo....tell me my son is fine. Tell me he is ok. It was just a

fever." I wailed.

"We tried Maj but the fever hit him hard that we ended up losing him. I'm sorry." He sat down and buried his head on his hands.

"My son cannot be dead not like this. He cannot be dead Justin no no please tell me this is just a nightmare."

I became hysterical as a result they sedated me. When I woke up reality struck again. I had lost my son. My breasts were even painful because it was time to feed him but again I was robbed this chance.

"I'm so sorry I wasn't there..I.." Treet looked at me with eyes full of tears.

"Even if you were there.What were you going to do?I brought you here because it was my way of telling you that either you or Tyrone lost two kids.Dr Spencer I will finish the rest of my story and when I do we will start with our real sessions not these story telling sessions." I stood up.

"I'm sorry for your loss Majesty." Dr Spencer said.

"No sweat. I will take my leave." I walked out.

"Jesty--" I raised my hand and went inside the car. He drove in silence until we reached my apartment.

"Jesty why didn't you tell me about all of this?" Treet asked

"Romeo you can leave for some time as well as you

Jennifer." I wasn't about to let my helpers eavesdrop on my personal affairs.

After they left I folded my arms."What did you want me to

tell you?Ohh hello Treet.Do you remember me?I'm the one

you and your brother raped.I fell pregnant.I was carrying twins.I miscarried the other baby.Then I lost the other twin nine days after I gave birth to him.Hahaha its a pity.Is that what you wanted me to say."

He sat down."I lost my kids too Majesty.I know you hate me right now but when you were pregnant you should have come back.I wasn't going to deny my own children Jesty."

"So I was the one supposed to make an effort of coming back to you after you treated me like a bitch and your wife

humiliated me. And why on earth do you keep saying your child." I said.

He stood up and paced up and down. "Because I'm the only one who slept with you that night. Yes Tyrone was involved in the making out yes but he passed out. I'm the one who slept with you. Tyrone doesn't know.."

I slapped him. "All along I hated Tyrone for nothing when you're the evil twin. I hate you Treet with everything in me."

He wiped off his tears and I was actually surprised that he

cried."You have every right to hate me I get it.I was wrong.

But allow me to be there for you.Allow the both of us to

mourn the death of our children.Please."

"I already mourned them.Please leave Treet.I want to be

alone."

He knelt down which was a big deal for Treet because he

was so egoistic, so him admitting he was wrong was a big

deal.

"Get out Treet.Right now get out.And do me one favour tell

Tyrone the truth. He deserves to know. Although it doesn't mean I forgive him. The intention was to sleep with me right but he passed out. If that wasn't the case he was going to sleep with me.. Now leave Treet. I don't ever wanna see you again."

"Do you think after knowing you went through all this shit my conscience will allow me to walk away like nothing happened?"

"You did that when you robbed me my innocence. You

didn't see anything wrong with what you did. You treated me like a bitch and watched as Angela treated me like shit. Now your conscience can't allow you to walk away? That's some sick joke there." I went to the kitchen to take my icecream.

He followed. "What I did twelve years ago was wrong. I committed a sin and I'm really sorry. I know no amount of apologies will change what happened and the pain I put you through. I was young and foolish but that's no

excuse. Jesty I'm no longer that boy from twelve years ago. I'm not perfect but I'm no longer that Treet I promise you. All I'm asking is for you to give us another chance to mourn our children. I'm asking for you to give me another chance to right my wrongs. I know I'm asking for a lot but Jesty please. "He held my hands." Now I understand why you wanted revenge I totally get it."

I yanked his hands off." Hold it right there. Meeting you was purely coincidental. Don't misunderstand my me being in

your life as my plan to revenge. I didn't even plan anything

it was all coincidence. When I met you I didn't even know

you were the Treet from my past. All that I did to you and

your brother wasn't revenge either. Men do that to us all

the time so its nothing special. Now that is off my chest

can you leave before I call the security for you."

"Ok ok get it but Jesty please give me a cha---"

"No Treet leave why don't you just give up." I raised my

voice.

"I can't give up because its you Majesty. Fine I will leave only because I don't want to stress you but I'm not giving up.Not after knowing that we could have been great parents but our children died.Not after that." He walked to the door.

"And I swear if any nigger come here to touch my assets I will kill them and that I mean it." He walked out and left his car.

My phone rang and it was Tyrone.I decided to answer to

avoid unnecessary drama because dropping his call would

make him come to my place.

"What do you want?"

"Hey babe is it ok if I come to your place?I just didn't

wanna pass by unannounced not after everything that is

happening it will seem so rude"

"Don't come by.I need to be alone and I think I made it

clear that I want nothing to do with you Jackson brothers."

I sat down.

"Please don't do this to me." His voice was breaking.

"No! You stop doing this. I need my space but you and your brother can't give me that." I dropped the call.

Later on Mama (Ethan's mom) passed by. I was quietly happy seeing her but I knew a topic about marriage was going to erupt somewhere in our conversation.

"So her daughter's wedding was amazing. The girl was only 22 but she settled down which makes me wonder when my own daughter is going to introduce a guy to me."

"Mama please let's not go there." I gave her a bowl with custard.

"I just want you to be happy you're 27. By now you should have three kids. You need someone to warm your bed at night, to treat you to a romantic dinner, to tell you look beautiful. Don't you want to wear your own rock?"

I sighed. "Times have changed. This is not 1985 where a woman's life was all about marriage. This is the twenty first century. Mama marriage is not an achievement. At

least not for me. Clearly people overate it. Marriage is not a barge that is going to define my happiness. I'm doing just fine on my own. If I want my bed warmed at night I will put more blankets. If I want a big rock on my finger I will go to Cartier and buy one. If I want to be praised I have a lot of people who worship the ground I walk on. I'm doing just fine on my own."

She sighed. "I know babe you had an awful experience with men but they are a lot of good guys out there too. I'm not

getting any younger. I also want to play with my

grandchildren. "

I shook my head. "If you know very well I had an awful

experience with men don't try to force the idea of marriage

down my throat. As for grandchildren you might as well

forget it because you know very well my gynae said that I

cannot conceive. I tried IVF again and again. It didn't work

so can we not do this right now. Maa let's not walk down

this path again because it's starting to drain me."

I went to the kitchen and she followed."I'm sorry nana its

just that I thought marriage is going to bring you

happiness ignoring the fact that you're happy on your

own.You don't need a man.That was selfish of me even to

ask for grandchildren when I know exactly what you have

been through.Sorry ok"

I hugged her."Its ok.You don't have to apologize. "

"Ok now let's talk about the elephant in the room.What is

this thing that I hear that you didn't see Prince and Maka

for 9 months now?"

I looked down and sighed. She cupped my face. "Are you

still afraid of seeing them because Maka looks like your

mom and Prince look exactly like your dad? Are you still

afraid because you think you have bad luck and it might

affect them?" I looked down.

"It's not it, my dear. You don't have bad luck. I understand the

part where you're scared to see them because they look

exactly like your late parents but Maj they will think you

don't love them.Go and see your siblings and spend time
with them"

I sighed."I will mom."

That's my girl.Now let me bounce.My husband is need of
my services." She cat walked to the door.

I laughed."You do know that's nasty right."

She laughed and walked out.

A few minutes later Mary walked in like she owns the
space.Tell me again where the hell is my security.

"And then?"

She sat down and started breathing in and out. She was

angry. "I can't believe him Maj. I can't believe André. I

thought he was going to propose since it's my birthday but

he didn't. He bought me a damn car. Can you believe him?!"

I sat down and folded my arms. "Are we talking about that

married guy you're dating."

"Don't make it sound like that. He is divorcing her next

month. He just has to make sure she doesn't take too

much property since she wasn't working. That's what
delaying the whole process."

I laughed. "Ohh you poor thing. He is not going to marry
you."

She shot me a look. "Excuse me!!"

I smiled. "You're excused. You consider yourself my friend
right I'm not going to lie to you. So here is the truth. This
man is using you baby. He is not going to leave his
marriage of twelve years over your fresh pussy. You saw

how he loves his wife but you're damn convinced that he is going to marry you. Open your eyes. All that he is telling you are just stupid excuses so as to keep you as his booty call till he gets tired of you. All you can do is milk him dry otherwise you ain't getting a ring from that nigger. Even if let's say he gets divorced he is never going to marry you at least not anytime soon. Not whilst suffering from the trauma of his previous marriage. But the matter of the truth is, that dude is not leaving his wife for you. That's the

bitter truth. Happy birthday honey."

She was fuming with anger. You see people have a hard

time accepting the truth. "What do you know? You should

have been preaching about sex positions not marriage and

relationships because changing dicks is what you're good

at. You walk around as if the world owes you

something. You don't care about anyone's feelings but

you're here preaching about love and marriage. What do

you know? "

"This world owes me something Mary. It owes me my innocence, my mother and my children. So if I'm walking around like the world owes me something, excuse me because it does. You wanted the truth right. I told you. This isn't about me and because you can't handle the truth it doesn't give you the right to judge me. I change dicks like underwear right. So what? It's me and it's my choice. You have no idea what made me choose that path. You want marriage? Go right ahead and get married to Andrea. Leave

me alone changing them dicks.I don't have any idea about
love,relationship and marriage right.Yes that's correct
because my mother was killed by the very same person
she loved.When I chose to give love another chance. The
man I loved left me for another woman.He left me
broken.So yes, I have nothing to learn from that except
hate,bitterness and anger.You have no idea what I have
been through.You don't know half of it."

"I'm sorry i--"

I stood up."I will be in my room.If you want something to eat tell Romeo to make you something.If you want snacks you know where to find them."

I went upstairs and slept.Later when I went downstairs to have dinner Mary was still there.

"I prepared dinner as my way of apologizing for judging you and the mean things I said earlier. I'm sorry."

"If you wanna be a bitch Mary just be a bitch.If you wanna be my friend then be my friend.I only need consistency

from you. Commit to what you wanna be to me." I said and she nodded.

"This looks yummy. Thanks." I sat down and she kept on glaring at me.

"What is it?" "So aren't you going to say something like apologizing for being too harsh earlier."

I laughed." If you think I'm going to apologize for telling you the truth you have another thing coming honey. This bitch doesn't apologize for shit. That too for being honest." I took a big bite of the beef steak and gave her my killer smile.

5

MAJESTY

Your majesty the baddest.

I scoffed. "Were you honestly expecting an apology from me."

She sat down. "I don't know what I was thinking. You can never apologize Maj that's how big your ego is."

I laughed. "Girl I ain't apologizing for telling you that your nigger is not gonna pop the question. Not even in your dreams. The dude loves his wife like crazy. I can prove it to

you if you want. I know it's a bitter pill to swallow but that's the truth."

I took another bite of the steak. "This is heaven darling I could hire you as my personal chef."

She placed her fork and knife down. "I suddenly don't feel hungry anymore."

I stood up, took her phone and then sent Andrea's number to my phone. "I just have to prove this shit to you because honestly that Andrea dude is not worth you starving

yourself."

I dialled his number and I was glad when it went through. I

switched the loudspeaker on. "Hello is this Andrea I'm

talking to?" I asked as soon as he answered.

"There are a lot of Andreas on the planet. I'm sure I'm not

the one." He replied rudely.

"I'm sure you're the only one having an affair with Mary

behind your wife's back. You bought her a Maruti wagon as

a birthday present today." I looked at Mary who was now

paying attention.

There was some shuffling sound."Who the hell are you

huh?"

I looked at Mary."Well who am I.It doesn't matter.What

matters is the amount of money you have in your pockets

to silence me before I send the pictures and videos of you

and Mary."

The panic in his voice was audible."How much do you

want?"

"\$5000. Send it right away. If you don't I'm forwarding the pictures and videos I have to your wife. For now I'm sending them to you as well as my account details so that you know I'm serious."

"Fine I will send it but what guarantee that you will not send them." He huffed.

"Ohhh you will have to trust my word." I dropped the call and looked at Mary with my arms folded.

"He is willing to send me \$5000 so that I don't tell he is

having an affair. Then naive you thinks he loves you. I told you the nigger loves his wife."

She sat down and held her head. "I thought he actually love me...he promised... I thought. "

"You thought wrong. Now send me your intimate pictures and videos with him. I will send him my banking details of my ghost account and I will forward the money to you."

"We are taking his money?" She asked.

"Of course honey we are. Consider it as a compensation

gift for lying and wasting your time as well as breaking
your poor heart. And we sending the pictures to his wife. Of
course with your face blurred out. Idiots like him should be
taught a mean lesson."

She didn't say anything but just forwarded what I asked. I
sent them to Andrea.

"Great you're rich baby plus \$5000 to your account. Cut
ties with him. Don't ask for shit. Don't confront him because
guys like him are dangerous. He is a fool though. I gotta

give him that. I just said he should trust me and he

did. Poor thing I'm gonna ruin his marriage shame."

I shook my head in pity.

"I can't believe I was easily fooled. He bought me so many

luxurious things, cars, jewellery. I honestly thought I meant

something." She sighed.

"Whatever the things he bought you it didn't even hurt his

pockets. The money he spent on you was like a drop in an

ocean." I shrugged my shoulders. She started crying and I

didn't know how to comfort someone for being stupid in
love.

"He is not worth the tears and the snot honey.He is busy
fucking his wife and here you're all heartbroken.Yiu poor
thing." I shook my head.

"How do you do it Maj?Acting like you don't care about
shit.I mean I have never seen you depressed or crying over
a guy.Are you a robot without feelings?" She asked.

"I don't expect anything from anyone.Expectations often

lead to disappointment. I don't rely on anyone for happiness. So even if they leave me or disappoint me, I will not be hurt. I don't involve my feelings in everything. Right now instead of buying yourself a heartbreak gift like a car or something you sit out here crying your eyes out. And please don't tell me you want to eat pizza, ice cream and chocolate later on. That's some fucked up shit some of you girls do when dealing with a heartbreak which I find so kindergarten. First of all be a boss ass bitch don't let a

clown trynna play you.I'm not saying become a cold hard
bitch or an ice queen like me.Yep I know that's my
nickname around the office but do not let this opposite
sex walk all over you honey.You gotta tell yourself "I don't
need a man to take care of me,I can be the baddest bitch
of you dare me." Repeat that mantra every day.If you don't
believe in it fake it till you make it.If you don't want to be
played by men think like them and beat them at their own
game.Its called flipping the bitch switch honey."I flipped

my hair.

"Wow I can never be able to do that.I can't live for a day in your shoes." She said.

"That is why men use you.You use your emotions too much." I switched on the TV and played JT Money's song

"Ho problems"

"I will try doing what you said with you mentoring me of course.Anyway let's talk about the elephant in the room."

I looked at her while we made our way to the kitchen and

the song was playing on loud.

"Lets talk about how you and Treet and Tyrone."

Honestly I was getting tired of this Treet Tyrone topic.It

was getting old.Everywhere I went people would be

whispering about my affair with Treet which I didn't even

consider an affair.Treet and I were just fucking.Nothing

special about that.Well then there was Tyrone.The dude

who was trying to build something beautiful with me.Him

and I haven't fucked yet because the dude wanted to get

to know me. I just played along so as to get into his pants

but unfortunately the nigger caught feelings which ain't my

problem. I just wanted his dick not him. Then Treet on the

other hand was starting to catch feelings. Talk about the

power of pussy. I love my girl she does wonders for

me. Anyway the Jackson brothers were draining me with

their romanceshit and wanting to take fucking to the next

level. That's a turn off for me.

Ho problem ain't no problems

Go on and hate the game but ain't gonna solve it

You need to learn when to let these motherfuckers go

When can you gonna learn to let a ho be a ho

I jammed to the song while making some money moves.

"Are you ignoring me?" Mary folded her arms with attitude.

"Yes honey I'm ignoring you. I'm glad you're clever enough

to have noticed that" I sat on the kitchen chairs.

"I can't believe you. Anyway today is Fri-yay don't you feel

like hitting the club." She wiggled her eyebrows.

"Now you're talking my language honey. Let's hit legs and liquor. I love it there. The vibe is just on another level."

I quickly dialled Petty and thankfully he picked on the first ring.

"Choose an outfit for me. I need to hit the club and don't think there is anything amazing for me in my closet. I will give you a bonus for making you run errands for me after your working hours." I said.

"I will just join you to the club I'm actually lonely here." He

said.He was definitely pouting.

"Ok whatever." I hung up."You can look for something in my closet to wear."

"You got an ass for days obviously nothing will fit me.How did you even manage that thin waist?You were chubby in your teenage days." She said checking me out.

"I live a healthy lifestyle honey but I can't say the same for your white ass.Anyway I'm sure something will fit.Let's go check it out." We ran upstairs to raid my own closet.

She catwalked wearing my white lace Gucci jumpsuit and

Tom Ford Padlock embellished leather heels.

"Damn girl you look like sin." I snapped my fingers in a

dramatic manner

"This could turn to me straight guy." Petty walked in

commenting Mary.

"Ohhh here you're." He was wearing a simple fendi outfit

but it looked so good on him.If he wasn't gay I was never

going to have messy on him.He was pretty.

Anyway my outfit for the night was an Oscar de LA Rents

Spring RTW mini dress and Gucci braided leather heels.It

revealed a lot of skin if you ask me but I didn't care.

We called an uber because taking a car was very risky.So

we just took our money and my phone which just had the

uber driver's number. it was specifically meant for times

like these so even if it was stolen it wasn't going to be a

big deal.

"Lets get our freak on ladies.I can't wait to drink some

shots on the strippers abs." I shouted in excitement as we
climbed into our uber.

"Me too honey, I already can't wait." Petty said.

"Take us to Legs and liquor please. We can't wait already."

We screamed in excitement as the driver parked on Legs
and liquor after a not so long drive. I paid him with a big fat
tip.

"I'm going to call you again."

He smiled and drove away.

The club was a double storey.

"The music is so intense." Petty said.

"Ohhh look at that guy.The action is down here." Mary was about to walk to some dude she had seen.

I held her arm."Uh uh honey the VIP is upstairs.That's where the action is.I'm talking about handsome guys with big dicks and fat pockets.Not these dudes down here who fuck you in a car."I said

We all ran upstairs.The VIP upstairs was kinda different

from the other VIP's in other clubs. The whole part upstairs was a VIP on its own, with a dance floor, a mini casino, a bar and stripper tables with both female and male strippers. Then there were the booths. The vibe was lit and people dancing.

"Let's go choose our poison ladies." I led them to the bar counter.

"Can we have some tequila shots and two bottles of champagne. Amand de Brignac Brut Gold NV to be

specific. Our friend just got out of a toxic relationship so

we are here to celebrate. Bring them on stripper table 9." I

paid him and we went and sat on the table

"What was the name of the champagne you said?" Petty

asked.

"Ohh you will see baby. Its not your Moët." We laughed it

off.

Mary was just looking around. "All these guys in here look

dangerous. Aren't they gangsters or something. Isn't it

dangerous for us in here."

Petty laughed."Uh uh baby you got some negativity flying in the air.I'm gonna take it and put it in my pockets.You ain't getting it back."

Our poison came.I'm talking about shots,champagne and the stripper.He lay on the table with his oily abs and our shots were carefully placed there.He was wearing only a sock to cover his member.He was very gifted there.

"I'm getting laid tonight." Mary said taking one shot.We all

raised out shots and cheered it out.

Feeling the burning sensation of the shots we gnashed our

teeth and shook our heads because trust me I felt the

tequila going straight to my brain.

"Ohhh my word this is the champagne you ordered. I'm

taking the picture for my Instagram honey. All those

bitches should see me holding the gold bottle. I only saw

this bottle on DJ Khalid's music videos." We posed for the

picture as Petty snapped it and posted it on his IG

page. We finished our shots and the stripper started

dancing. We were screaming our lungs out because now

the shots were working. We popped the champagne

bottle. One guy gathered the guts to come to our table.

"Now your guy is coming. You're getting laid honey but

don't forget to use protection." I winked at Mary who

blushed standing up and meeting the guy.

"We are going to finish this champagne bottle alone." Petty

said excitedly.

"Yay.Let's go to the dancefloor."

After an hour or so the dancefloor was now ours.I was super drunk but I knew very well what I was doing.If you were to be told that I was a pastor's daughter once upon a time you would be surprised. I had thrown my morals out of the window a long time ago.

"I'm gonna rest a little bit." I went and sat down.The good thing about being in Legs and liquor VIP was that even if you left your drink on your table and went to the

dancefloor you would still find it when you get back.

So I went and opened another champagne bottle. I was

enjoying my drink when some hot nigger decided to join

me.

"Mind if I join you." He had Italian accent. God knows I was

a sucker for Italians.

I smiled. "Suit yourself."

I looked at him seductively and he licked his lips.

"Let's get out of here."

"Dude disappear before I make you." Treet's deep voice echoed. I rolled my eyes as the nigger walked away.

Treet angrily walked towards me and carried me like a potato sack. Fighting him was a waste of time so I just let him be. He took me to his car.

"Talk about cock blocking. Nigger you have issues." I laughed my ass off.

"I'm not gonna say anything because you're drunk but you're testing me Majesty." He angrily slammed the door

and drove off.

I'm sure I passed out on the way because when I woke up

the following morning I was unsure of my surroundings

but seeing the grey sheets and black bedcover I knew I

was at a man's house. I was naked and first thing first I

checked was my pussy.

"Okay nothing happened here but where am I."

I held my head. I had a mother of all hangovers.

The door cracked open and he walked in. I rolled my eyes

as the events of last night replayed in my head. He was angry. It was visible on his face but he was trying by all means to contain it.

"Here eat your breakfast and take those painkillers for your hangover."

If I wasn't hungry I could have shown him some attitude but I was famished so I obliged and ate the amazing pancakes, milkshake, whipped cream with strawberries.

After I was done eating I took the time to admire the

bedroom I was in because I wasn't familiar with this one. It was all charcoal grey and black in color, with a high ceiling and marble black tiles. It didn't have nothing much but a big bed, big plasma, an S couch and bean bags which were black and grey. Too much masculinity if you ask me. Ohh there was a pole besides the S couch. This guy was nasty. The balcony was to die for with an ocean view and two rocking chairs which were decorated with throw pillows and rags. Grey and black in color.

"I need the bathroom." I said after failing to locate the door which leads to the in suit.

He pressed a remote and boom the door was right there on the wall.I mouthed a wow as I walked inside the pure white bathroom.I decided to take a quick shower. I was surprised to see female toiletries in the cupboard which had my favourite liquids from Dior.The complete set.I took the shower gel, shampoo and went to take a shower.After taking a shower I went back to the room.He was sitting on

his bed busy on his laptop.

"Where is my dress?" I asked.

"I burnt it." He said calmly

"Excuse me?!Do you know how much that cost?" I half

shouted because it was my favourite expensive dress.

"I sent \$2000 into your account." He remained focused on

his laptop.

"If you buy another dress like that it will turn into ashes

again.

I clicked my tongue."I need something to wear."

"Sit down first we need to talk."

"You and I have nothing to talk about.I just want

something to wear and leave this place.If you're going to

give me a hard time I will leave in this bathrobe." I folded

my arms.

He chuckled."You look cute when you are mad.Now sit

down.We are not fighting here."I sat down.

"Look Jesty I don't want anyone's blood on my hands.Do

you understand me when I say I will kill any nigger who

touches you let alone looking at you in a lustful way?"

"Treet get it into your thick skull.You are not my husband

or boyfriend get it." I stood up from the bed but he held my

waist and made me sit on his laps.

"Let go of me." I said.He smirked and I knew what he was

about to do. He started moving his hand up to my inner

thighs and untied my rob.

"Treet stop doing that." Man it has been long since I had

some but my conscience wasn't gonna allow me to have sex with Treet not after everything.

"What am I doing?" He asked biting his lower lip. Gosh I was a sucker for that.

He moved his hands up his fingers finding my most sensitive part. He knew where to press my buttons and I was heavily breathing now. My head rolled back as I bit my lower lip. Inching his hand deeper he drew some tiny circles and my legs were starting to tremble. His lips found mine

with a soft soothing kiss until his third finger went in.I

moaned in his mouth as his fingers slid in and out.

"Come for me." His voice at my ear transported me to

undiscovered realms lifting me higher to some pinnacle

behind my reach as I shattered into a million pieces.I

breathed heavily as I tried to gather my composure,my

knees shaking.

"You're mine." He licked his fingers and perked my lips.He

went to the in suit and came back with a warm wet towel

and wiped me.

"You just press the C button on the remote and the closet

will open. Yours is the left side." He looked at me and

smiled." And you know this scene just reminded me of

that Christmas eve on the yacht. That day when we first

met here after 12 years." He walked out leaving me

reminiscing about that Christmas night.

I pressed the button and again I was mesmerized when

the door opened.

"Man this is so OCD." I said holding my waist admiring the

open white closet and the beautiful mirrors around the

room. His tuxedos were neatly on the hangers at the right

side, with shoes

watches, ties and briefcases. All his suits

black and grey in color. On the left side there were all

formal and casual dresses from

Fendi, Givenchy, Gucci, Chanel, Louise Vitton to name but a

few with red bottom heels, handbags and jewellery. All of it

was my taste and size. I opened the drawers that side and there were neatly packed black and red thongs all brand new.

"This dude is crazy.He is insane."I knew what this meant.Did Treet really thought we were in a relationship or something?Anyway I wore a Channel oversized white Tshirt with a black corset and black heel boots.I was looking like a runaway model. I had a natural afro so I just oiled it and made some baby curls then walked out.I went downstairs and I was impressed with Treet's taste of the

interior design. The whole house was a European modern decor with a neutral color palette and heavy influence of traditional design, all in black, grey and a little bit of white.

"I want to leave." I said.

"Did you like your clothes or I should buy some more?" He said.

"Treet I want to leave." I said again.

"I'm taking Angela to court since she is refusing to sign the divorce papers." He said completely ignoring what I said.

Well news flash Treet I don't care." I said.

"I acknowledge what I did was completely wrong. No matter

what I do or how many times I apologize its not going to

compensate what I did to you but I'm not going to give up

on you Jesty. I'm not giving up on us not after I was given

another chance to right my wrongs. I wronged you Jesty in

the most evil way and there is not one day that I don't live

to regret it. I regretted it the moment I saw your blood on

the shits. I regretted everything. You were so innocent and I

robbed you of that. I don't know how many times I'm going to apologize but I'm not going to stop till you forgive me. Until you look at me with the same eyes you first looked at me that day I offered you a drink. I deserve everything that is happening to me but I pray that one day you forgive me and we all move on from that dreadful night."

Treet was now trying to destroy the walls I had built around me and I didn't like it one bit. Before I replied one of

the maids walked in with his mother and some girl I didn't

know but looking at her I bet she was a cousin or

something because she looked exactly like his mother.

"What the hell is this gold digging whore doing in here. Is

this why you're dying to divorce Angela for this black slut."

She shouted and I felt my anger rising. Who did she call

gold digger? Whose gold did I dig? I wanted to lash at her

but Treet held me.

"Mother I love you so much and I highly respect you but

right now...right now you're crossing the line.If you want someone to insult then insult me because everything is entirely my fault.She has nothing to do with anything." He said firmly.

She went red immediately. "She is the reason you and Angela are having problems in your marriage. Instead of solving your issues with Angie you're in here standing up for this bitch." She shouted.

Treet gave me his car keys."Babe you have a session with

Doc Spencer in 15 minutes. I will come join you later after you're done ok. Let me deal with this." I took the car keys and walked out.

"My gosh this baby is beautiful. I said switching on the ignition of the red Maserati. I drove to Rodeo and people were admiring this baby I was in.

"You look beautiful." Doctor Spencer said when I walked in her office.

"Thank you Mitchell. Am I allowed to comfortably rest on

this couch as I narrate the rest of my story because its a

long ride.I suggest you grab some popcorns or

something." I said removing my boots and corset.

She laughed."Of course feel comfortable and I have two

tubs of ice creams with me.We can both enjoy the mint

and chocolate while you narrate all the events that

happened."She gave me a tub.

"Where was I ?"I asked.

"Gift passed away." She said fixing her specs.

I lost him just like that. I couldn't believe that he was gone. He was really gone. Ethan, his family, my siblings were there with me through it all. I chose to have him buried than cremated. It wasn't easy for me but everyone was there for me through it all. Christmas came and New year passed but I was not thrilled by the festivals because my son wasn't there with me. Two years down the line I was better because I had something new to focus on. I had a job and I

had a boyfriend. I was dating Justin. He understood me in a way that no one could and he was my first boyfriend. Ethan didn't approve of him because I was underage at the time. I was 17 and he just didn't like the guy for me. However I thought otherwise because having Justin's love in my life changed a lot of things for me. For starters I felt pretty and confident which was something that was destroyed when I was raped. I was going places because of being loved by Justin. I started working at an Internet café which belonged

to Ethan's father after my results came out. I was smart, too smart perhaps. My excellent school results reflected my determination. There, I was armed with grade A results in mathematics, physics, biology, English, computer sciences, commerce, accounts and Shona. Even though I didn't make it to A level or University I'm still grateful. Ethan's father suggested a secretarial position for me at the café and I took it with both hands. It was freedom, adulthood and fun mixed with a tiny bit of

jealousy that I wasn't the one of the people strutting
around the city with a laptop bag with me but I was
grateful especially because Justin and my new found
family supported me in everything. What more could I ask
for? I dated Justin for 5 years. At 21 I had already started
imagining myself with a big rock on my finger and being
called Mrs Moyo. Justin and I were in love or so I
thought. We were intimate and even though we protected I
fell pregnant again. I wasn't aware but only knew about my

pregnancy the day I miscarried. Its funny that despite

Justin being a gynae he claimed he didn't notice that I was

2 months pregnant.No one knew I was pregnant and I kept

it to myself.It was easy to keep this secret because I was

living on my own.My siblings lived with Ethan's parents.

"But babe you promised to come visit me this week but

you didn't come.I miss you." I pouted as we were video

calling.

"I will babe I'm just busy with these double shifts you know

they are tiring but I will make it up for you and you know I

will." He smiled.

"Fine look at what you're missing." I showed him my

cleavage.

"Ohhh shit babe you know how that does to me." He

groaned.

"Continue working for us bye." I hung up.

Three days down the line an idea came to mind. It was a

Friday and I decided to do a surprise visit to the love of my

life.No matter how much in love you're don't visit your partner unannounced.

Despite his disapproval of our relationship Ethan decided

to accompany me since I wasn't used to driving. I knew

where his house was so we drive straight to

Queensdale.When we arrived at his house there were a lot

of cars outside and the worst came to mind.I thought

someone died.

"Hey excuse me.What's going on at Justin's house?" I

asked one of the girls who walked ou the gate.

"Its a wedding preparation." She said in excitement.

"When is the wedding and whose wedding?" I asked

changing glances with Ethan wondering why Justin never

informed me of a wedding.

"Its bhudhi Justin's wedding. He is getting married

tomorrow."

6

MAJESTY

Heartbroken all over again.

I folded my arms and looked at Ethan."Dude am I

dreaming because if I am this is a terrible dream.A

nightmare."

"I wanted to ask the same thing." He said looking back at

me.

"Let's go inside it will be rude of us if we don't welcome

you in when you're Justin's friends.You wait for him inside

the house." She held my hand and started dragging me

inside. I confidently walked in because there are many

Justins in the world and mine wasn't the one getting

married. Ethan grabbed my hand too and shook his head

signalling that we shouldn't go inside but I smiled.

"Let's go." I dragged him inside.

"Ohhh welcome." Said some elderly woman who was

holding a tray with scones."Please come on in and have

some."

"Munosimba here (How are you)." Ethan and I said in respect.

She smiled. "Aiwa tirinani mwanangu makadini imi." (I'm fine how are you)

She led the way. "Muri shamwari dzaJasi aiwa pindai

zvenyu muzorore. Vabuda kuno gadziririsa masvutu avo

amangwana nekuno tarisa keke ravo" (You're Justin's

friends, come on in and sit down. They went out to check

on their outfits for tomorrow and their cake)

"Maita basa." (Thank you)

Ethan and I greeted three other ladies who were in the room and sat in awkward silence. There was the bride and groom's team outside who started rehearsing for their dances so the music saved us from the awkwardness.

With each minute passing my patience was starting to run out and reality was starting to sink in a bit by bit. I was still in denial of everything but looking at the picture opposite me of Justin and some lady smiling happily. I started

swallowing the bitter pill. Ethan held my hand and I sighed looking at him. Around 2pm a car honked one of the ladies walked in holding some groceries. She looked classy and all.

"Yohhh havakanyatso kugadzira keke chaizvo zvataida. Zvinhu zvese zvakarongeka for tomorrow." (They made the cake exactly how we wanted it done. Everything is in order for tomorrow.) She didn't even bother greeting anyone let alone acknowledging our presence. I heard

Justin's voice and my chest tightened. A sweet voice greeted everyone in the kitchen and there she walked in looking tired as hell with a beautiful baby bump. That could have been me, I thought. Then he walked in smiling from ear to ear. The moment his eyes landed on me he couldn't hide the panic and fear on his face.

"Jasi shamwari dzako dzimwe dzauya idzi. Hatina hedu kutaura zvakawanda takakumirirai." (Justin your other friends came. We didn't talk much we were waiting for

you).The elderly lady said.

The room went silence as I looked at Justin who couldn't

look at me in the eye.

"Why Justin?" My voice was breaking.

"L-lets talk outside." He stammered. Ethan was about to

attack him I could tell from his breathing. I held his hand.

"No we will finish this in here." Ethan barked.

"Chii chikuitika babe".(What's going on babe).The pregnant

lady asked.Everyone was waiting for his explanation

including me.

He looked at me and swallowed." Y-you remember that ex

I told you about.She...she is the one.I'm sorry for this

drama babe.I didn't know she was going to show up like

this."

"Ohh yea she looked familiar I remember her." She folded

her arms and looked at me."You should be ashamed of

yourself. Justin made it clear that he doesn't want

anything to do with you years ago but you're still stalking

him and just a day before our wedding you want to cause drama."

One of the ladies who looked so dramatic from the beginning with too much makeup and bright colors looking like a Christmas tree immediately came to me and dragged me by my hair."Iwe hure unoramba kurambwa unoda kutadzisa muchato wemwana we hanzvanzi yangu.Manje vana chihera havaitirwe izvozvo."(You bitch, stuck up ex you want to cause trouble for my

nephew's wedding. But we are not to be messed with)

She said dragging me outside. Somewhere I heard a man

groaning and ladies screaming and I knew Ethan was

beating the shit out of Justin. We could have resolved this

matter as adults but this aunt just decided to cause

unnecessary drama. It was now a commotion as people

tried to remove Ethan from Justin, while the aunt on the

other hand was showing me flames. I managed to get off

her grip as I went to stop Ethan.

"You think it was ok to treat me like shit for no reason, just remember karma is watching. Have a happy marriage. One day we shall meet again." Now I was crying. I had a lot I wanted to say to him but I couldn't with the pain I was feeling.

"He is not worth your energy. Let's go." I dragged Ethan after he butchered Justin. I wondered how he was going to walk down the aisle looking like that.

"Ehhh hamba hure remunhu. Imbwaa!!! Tingadai tafonera

mapurisa.Wauchifunga kuti uchamisa muchato.!!!" (Leave
you bitch.You dog!!!We should have called the police.You
thought you were going to stop this wedding).The
dramatic aunty shouted.That's the problem with women
sometimes.They never give you a chance to explain.Take
for example Justin's soon to be wife.If she was someone
who uses her brain she should have listened to my side of
the story and save herself from entering a toxic marriage
but I totally get it.She didn't want anything to stop her

wedding which drives me back to that point I always

emphasize. Weddings and marriage are overrated..

As soon as we went into the car tears coursed down my

cheeks and I wailed in pain and heartbreak. Ethan drove us

to Cranborne to a friend's house because either of us was

in a good state of mind to drive back home. After greeting

everyone I politely asked to go and rest. They showed me

the guestroom. Ethan followed me.

"I'm not leaving you alone." He protested.

"I'm not going to kill myself if that's what you're thinking.

Pass me your headphones I want to listen to some music."

I said with a hoarse voice. He didn't say anything. He just

gave me the headphones and sat besides me on the bed. I

came across Julia Michael's song Heaven and played

it. The second verse touched me the most. I thought of

everything I have been through and Justin didn't hesitate

to add to my pain.

Verse 2

You don't realize the power they have

Until they leave you and you want them back

Nothing in this world prepares you for that

I'm not ashamed that he wasn't the one

Had no idea what we could become

There is no regrets I just thought it was fun

"Hey sis wake up and have some food." I had fallen asleep

while listening to Julia Michaels. It was already dark

outside so it was time for dinner.

"No Ethan I'm good." I stretched.

"There are some guys outside braaing. Don't you wanna join and get your mind off things?"

I forced a smile. "That's sounds like a plan."

We went outside and it was a cool vibe. There were about 5 guys drinking and on the braai. Then there was three girls making some salads while jamming to some music which was playing. Ethan and I joined. It wasn't hard to fit in because they were so cool and chilled. When everything

was done I ate the meat and drank some ciders too.I

couldn't say no to the beer even though Ethan gave me a

disapproving eye.

Women deal with heartbreak differently.Some grovel over

the man, cry,give him a chance to apologize, go to the

gym,diating, eating junk food,commit suicide, give in to

sex,getting drunk.As women we do a lot of crazy things to

deal with the pain of heartbreak.As women we are

naturally inclined to react on emotion.Its in our nature.We

only do those irrational actions so that our emotional side can feel better. Even the strongest women have made bad decisions based on their inability to control their emotions.

It is what it is. I also had to do something to make my emotional side feel better. I needed a distraction. Music wasn't doing the magic so was the beer. I had to do whatever it takes to get my mind focused on something else other than Justin. The guy who has been introduced to me as Max was going to do the magic. After all he was

literally fucking me with his mind considering the way he was drooling at me.

I took my Smirnoff and made my way to him before I even reached him Ethan came.

"Don't do this to yourself Maj please."

"Please leave me alone." I pushed him aside and went to the guy.

"Hey beautiful." He said smiling.

"No need to flatter me to get into my pants. Let's get away

from here and go somewhere private." Yep just like that I

said it like it was my normal thing to do. This was my way

of dealing with the pain and I had to do everything for my

sake and by everything I mean even fucking a stranger.

"Every guys dream." He smiled.

I went back to Ethan and informed him that I was leaving.

"I'm not letting you leave with a stranger Maj not on my

watch."

I folded my arms. "I'm 21 years old which means I have a

right over my own decisions. You should have said this

when I was 15 at that party."

"That's not fair."

"Life is not fair Ethan." Mentioning that party got him to

back the fuck off. Yes I had to guilt trip him. Crucify me for

all I care. I never judge you when you feast on your piazza

and ice cream when that clown nigger dumps you over

and over again. And you continue giving him fifth chances

instead of moving on with your miserable love life.

"I need to forget him Ethan.I need a distraction."

He tried to stop me.He really did but I won against

him.Max's house wasn't far so within time we had

arrived.Just like that I learnt a great lesson.Don't ever

grovel over a man. Don't allow your emotions to put you in

a position to be hurt.The death of my mom and children

and the rape made me feel unworthy and unloved.I didn't

give myself time to heal.I forgot that my broken heart and

pain is like a wound.It needed time to heal.When Gift died I

wanted my broken heart to be fixed at that moment. I tell
you even if it was another guy who is not Justin I was
going to give that guy a chance because I was desperate
for love.

"Hey hey wake up my girlfriend will be here any moment.

You need to go." You see guys praise you when they want

to get between your legs. They tell you exactly what you

want to hear but once that is done you will be chased out

like a piece of shit. That was exactly my situation. I woke up

and wore my clothes.I saw a piece of the condom wrapper
and smiled evilly.This dude wasn't about to use me and
chase me out like that.It was ok if he had just told me to
leave,was mentioning his girlfriend necessary?That's when
the bitterness started.I wondered why I was always the
second best.First it was Treet watching his girlfriend beat
the shit out of me.I didn't expect anything from him but it
proved I didn't matter.Then there was Justin and now this
guy.I was hurt,angry and I felt unworthy.I had a horrible

impulse at that moment. I removed one of my red bra strip and left it under the bed with the condom wrapper. The room was kinda dirty so when the girl comes and clean it she was going to come around that shit. Call me evil and you think I cared? No I didn't. I would tell you straight up to sit with the rest of the bitches waiting for me to give a fuck. I looked at him." Nigger be acting all tough and shit until you see their pink floral bed sheets." I just had to bring that up because it was a hilarious moment for me. The previous

night he opened the covers for me and boom pink floral bed sheets. Like WTF!!! I almost laughed. Couldn't he be a little bit masculine? Grey and black does the trick. I looked at him as he relived the humiliation of having floral sheets on his bed.

"Karma is watching." I winked at him and walked out

Thankfully the other house wasn't far so it wasn't difficult to find my way.

While it maybe technically wrong to mask your feelings. It

is a necessity to hide your emotions so as to win the game. On that day I made my own decision to never let a man fool me. Instead I fool them. It was very stupid when I think about it now but it worked for me at that time.

"I can't believe he fooled you. We must charge him for emotional distress we can't let him go easily." Ethan's father said as he paced up and down. We had arrived home and Ethan narrated everything.

"Justin and me are done. That ship has sailed." I said coldly.

"I can't believe he did this to you after making you believe he was the one. I never pictured him like that guy. How can a person be so evil?" Mama said.

"Well it is what it is. Its okshit happens and life still moves on."

"I don't like the way you're so calm about it. Its not healthy."

Ethan's father said.

"I cried my eyeballs out yesterday. I'm not going to drown in depression for him. He is not worth it." I stood up and went

to Maka's room.

She was fast asleep because she was having a cold.I just

joined her in bed and slept.

The following days it was getting better.I was hurting yes

but I was having sex so I felt better.Even the mediocre sex

I got from men I never called again was a good

distraction.Having an orgasm twice or thrice would make

me forget about the pain.I wasn't a sexual addict and I'm

still not but sometimes you just need sex therapy to get

over certain things in life.

One dinner Mr Jaji made an announcement. "So we will be moving to the US for a change of environment."

"So you're leaving us?" Maka asked.

"No baby we are family now so we are going together." My siblings were excited.

"What about work here." I asked.

"Ooh I have a partner there. We have built a much bigger cafe there so you will work in the management of that

internet café."

I liked the idea. So that week we made sure our documents were in order. With my savings it was enough to buy three plane tickets for Prince, Maka and me. Even though the rents weren't in support of this they agreed at the end of the day. So that's how we ended up in the US. Arriving there Ethan, Prince, Makaanaka and me lived in a cheap apartment with not so bad security and I started working at the internet cafe. A breakthrough came for me when I created

Mjdrive and MajesticReadOnline.It made a huge

profit

attracted investors for the company and I was

promoted but I decided to resign and start my own

practice.I couldn't live under the wing of Ethan's father.He

wasn't happy but he supported me and became my

investor along side with his partner.

I was joined by Mary and five other workers as well as a

bunch of gamers and with my savings as well as the profit

share from that apps I started my own company. My own

practice. It wasn't easy but I never gave up. I used my

brains and energy. I was dedicated and two years down

the line on my 23th birthday I opened my company

Majesty Innovations. It was still small at the time but with

determination and hard work it grew bigger. I managed to

attract the attention of some big names who trusted my

talent and invested in my work. After so much hard work

Majesty Innovations became a big name in the streets of

Hollywood. I also partnered with Ethan's company. The
artistry agency. The company licensed the work of the
artist to the highest bidder, a classic, advertising campaign,
inspiration for a clothing line and expand the artistry into a
brand. At 25 I became a successful businesswoman with
everything I ever wanted. I was happy, healthy and having
good sex. What more could I ask for? But still that void was
there. On that fateful year I met him again. I had last seen
him when I was 15. The memory of how he treated me was

still stuck in my mind but when I met him on that

Christmas' Eve party I didn't know it was him.

"Mr Ferguson is hosting a Christmas' eve party on the

yacht tomorrow and I need a date.You came to mind." I

couldn't go with Ethan because he wanted to spend quality

time with the family.

"I have nothing to do so yea I'm in.I will come over to your

house so that we will leave together.You're the best you

know that." Mary said.I wasn't a party animal per say but I

did attend a number of parties and this party was going to be lit.I felt it in me.

Petty delivered three outfits for me.So I didn't have a problem about what I was going to wear.I just couldn't wait for the party.I began my transformation whilst waiting for Mary to arrive.When I was done I looked like a hot blackwidow in Roma Amor black stripeless dress and black braided heels.

"Ohh my God!!!You look like sin.Your outfit screams fuck

me please." That was Mary.

Mary and I became close when she caught me back at the

internet café fucking some gamer in the office .Till date

I'm still grateful that she was the one who walked in on

us.She said I was a risk taker and she loved my I" don't

care cold attitude".Ever since then she titled herself my

best friend.No matter how many times I gave her a cold

shoulder she never gave up on me which kinda made me

warm up to her and tolerate her nonsense for the sake of

peace. She knew nothing about me because I never let out much but still she didn't give up on me. Even though she was so annoying at times I loved her company and that frustrated the shit out of Ethan.

She eyed my cleavage. "Wise choice men will look."

"You don't look bad yourself." She was in a Oscar 2018

RTW red dress. Red and black was the theme.

"Try to keep this in mind. It is Christma, enjoy yourself and

try to smile a little. Soften up your intimidating face or it

will chase the dudes away." She said.

"Ohh honey man love challenges. So this intimidating face

is going to catch me a good man with a big dick."

She sighed."Is that all you think about sex,one night stands

and flings.Don't you wanna settle down one day."

"I'm doing just fine.I'm a busy lady.I don't have time for

settling down." I swayed my ass out of my walk in closet.I

felt very proud of my physique..

"Don't be like me.Get married and settle down." I winked at

her.

Mr Ferguson went all out to keep his standards high. That

included being picked up by a limousine. Each guest to the

party had their designated limousine to pick them from

and to their houses. Extravagant I know. The guest list

included Who's Who of the yachting world from all over

Hollywood, along with their glammed up

wives, lovers, husbands and mistresses.

"Wow this is the life baby." Mary cheered brightly as we

climbed the yacht stairs which opened up onto a small viewing platform above the main outdoor entertainment area. The ocean breeze was doing wonders as it increased the coolness.

A waiter came with two glasses of wine. "Some wine señoritas." He said bowing a little.

We took the glasses and I inhaled the scent of the delicious wine. "Domain de la romanée-Conti Romanée Conti Grand Cru. Thank you Señor" I said. He looked

surprised but just smiled and walked away.

"You speak Spanish." Mary asked.

"No I just said the name of the wine we are drinking

here.Its just one of the most expensive wine in the world."

"I'm grateful you found the time to honour my invitation."

Mr Ferguson and his wife came to me.We exchanged

pleasantries.

"Ohh this is exquisite.I couldn't miss it for the

anything.Please meet my date for the night,my friend

Mary. Mary this is Mr and Mrs Ferguson. My business acquaintances."

Mrs Ferguson flashed a bright smile "Ohh nice to meet you

Mary. You guys look lovely tonight. Enjoy the rest of the

night." The legendary couple walked away hand in hand. I

didn't admire them. You never know what's happening

behind closed doors. They could be in a loveless marriage

for all we know. A good example to emphasize this point is

my late parents. Yea "late" the monster of a father died a

year after we moved to the US.

"Wow you just introduced me to the most richest people

in Hollywood. I still can't believe it!" She exclaimed.

I half smiled. "Better believe it honey."

The main reason I went to this party was to pick my next

victim to fuck with. I didn't attend it for the jingle

bells, mistletoe, macarena. Christmas nostalgia and

nonsense. While at the party I felt like I was being watched

very closely. The hair on my back would stand now then

and I would have goose pimples all over. I spotted a semisecluded spot to sit and I went there because Mary disappeared somewhere in the crowd with a man he just met. Andrea. It was isolated and quiet over there. Away from everyone. There was a telescope so I started to stargaze. Then, as if fate stepped in I stood up straight and turned. My eyes met that of a man who was coming my way. First thing I noticed was the height your typical Lakers basketball players kinda height. All muscled up but not too much, just enough for me to trace my fingers down the

visible abs which were showing under his shirt that

hugged him perfectly. The black tuxedo looked perfect on

him lovely clasped around muscled thighs and a firm

rounded butt. There he was a perfect example of

masculinity.

"A mouth watering stranger. Ohh boy I'm gonna eat you

alive." I thought.

His gaze met mine and it felt kind of familiar. There was

something about those violet eyes. They had the power to

tempt, to persuade. A shiver rippled down my spine and my knees suddenly felt like seaweed. It has been long since a male challenged my femininity like that and I suddenly became curious about him. His light caramel skin shone perfectly under the moonlight and that steely black afro curly hair was just perfect for my eyes. Oh yea double trouble. He was the second guy I met who effortlessly challenged my thoughts like that.

"Anything interesting up here." That voice. There was

something about that deep masculine voice and those eyes.

I flashed one of my seductive smiles."There could be if you want."

I smiled and went back to the telescope,one hand on the rail and I bend over.I knew he was checking my behind.

That feeling of being watched came again and I finally caught the culprit who has been checking me out the whole time.

"Wanna sneak a peak?" I looked at him.

He cleared his throat."Ohh yea sure."

I smiled secretly.He was definitely under my trap.In one stride he was there,his fingers firmly over mine.

"With those heels you will hurt your neck." He said looking at my legs.

"You're right." I removed them.It wasn't dirty anyway to walk barefoot and my toes were beautiful I wasn't ashamed of them.And I groaned lustily like I was relieved

but I knew I was doing dangerous things to his

libido."Relief at last."I smiled at him.

"Let me hold them for you." A gentleman.Ok but I didn't

care about that I just wanted what was in his pants.I went

to a larger telescope.

"So were you getting your groove on down on the dance

floor?" I glanced at him.

He smiled revealing those perfect snow white teeth."Since

you didn't ask me no I wasn't."

I laughed "Do you always use that line on every woman?"

He let out a deep chuckle."Yea. I have used this line a

plenty of times on a plenty of women but it is the first time

I'm using it on a lady."

I didn't have a come back for that so I just smiled.

"So you also came to celebrate the mistletoe,jingle bell

thing?" He asked.

I shrugged."I don't do Christmas.Not even the whole

Christmas macarena,eggnog or Secret Santa.Even if the

reindeers come I will still not be interested in Christmas.I

just came here for free food and wine.Anyway who needs

mistletoe? If you want to kiss someone you just go ahead

and kiss them.Why wait for the Christmas mistletoe? "I

said it.Yea I was starting to flirt now.Gosh this man was

really difficult.I hoped his sex game was worth all this

fussing because I could have reached my orgasm number

three by now.Not talking about mistletoe and shit.

"But a little festive smooch under the mistletoe is always

fun." He licked his lips. Now we were talking.

I folded my arms. "So convince me Christmas is all this

fuss."

He smiled revealing his dimples. "You sure?"

7

MAJESTY

Nice to meet you.

"Yea sure. Please refresh my memory and remind me what

is it about Christmas that is worth all this fuss or it is just

an overrated festival to boost commercialism." I folded my

arms and his eyes seared me with dark intensity.

He smirked. "I love intelligent women. Anyway first of all.."

He walked up to me. "And most importantly...." His eyes

met mine boldly enough to make my legs feel as though

they were seaweed stumbling through sand.".....it has to be a secret." He said.

"Trust me I won't tell a soul." I smiled seductively.

"So the thing is you have to choose what you want me to be for you.A secret Santa or a sinner." His smouldering gaze sent a shiver down my spine.He ran one lazy finger over my collarbone and down to my chest.He moved his finger from my chest to my lower lip.

I sucked his finger."I always want them bad.So a sinner

will do."

What was it about this guy that I would throw away any sense of caution? I usually had a background check on all the men I was involved with. Even though I didn't care about remembering their names but it was necessary for me to know if I wasn't throwing myself in some sort of danger. I always played it careful. However with this guy all my intellectual defensiveness evaporated.

A tugging sensation I have never experienced before

unfurled in my tummy.

"Wise choice." He smiled.

I was struck by some random insanity but my "Sinner" here

with a seductive aura was going to make me go crazy

even more.

"Sinner." I whispered seductively moving my hands on his

chest. He smiled at me and licked his lower lip.

"Yes."

"I'm still waiting." I reached up on tiptoe and snaked my

hands around his neck. His hands tightened around my waist. His desire for me was reflected in his eyes and heaven help me wild and wicked was exactly what I needed that night. I yanked him close and planted my mouth on his. And oh man he didn't disappoint. As our lips connected, our tongues danced on the same rhythm. He pulled back. A smile danced over his lips and his eyes lit with desire. There was something about those eyes.

"I thought I was the one reminding you why Christmas is

worth all this fuss." He moved his lips over mine once more, playing the game, his way. Determined to keep up, I matched to his enthusiasm, leaning in and arching my body against his. Our lips softened, parted, merged. His sweet wine flavour invaded my mouth as our tongues met and intertwined. I tasted wealth and masculinity. For the first time I wondered if this man was more than I could handle. More of this feeling I had not experienced it in a long time.

"Maybe there is something about this Christmas eve after all." I sucked his sweet taste from my lips.

He smirked. "Definitely."

With a growl he walked me backwards to a yacht's wall. One hand cupped the back of my hand to hold me in place, the other glided over my breasts while I continued to savour the sweet taste of his mouth. He rolled my hardened nipple between his fingers through the fabric of my dress and I moaned. He looked at me with his violet

desire-drenched eyes while he smoothed his palms over my dress, sliding them to my thighs. His fingers found and explored the smooth flesh between my thighs. I rolled my head back against the wall as my eyes moved to the stairs which led to where we were.

"Relax no one is going to come up here. Trust me." He said. His soft yet big fingers found my folds and he opened them. I was a moaning mess.

"You chose Sinner over Secret Santa, there is more."

With just one flick he dipped his two fingers into my pussy, moving them in circular motion and I experienced an orgasm I never had, shattering into a million pieces. What was it with this man? He knew exactly the buttons to press. He wasn't done with me yet, he continued finger fucking me not waiting for me to recover from my orgasm. My phone rang from the jewelled channel pace that was slung over my other shoulder. With trembling fingers I took it out. His fingers stilled but his hand

remained hot and slippery inside of me."Is it an
emergency?"

It was Mary.I'm sure she was lost somewhere."I have to
get this."I tried to push his hand away but he didn't budge.I
didn't have any choice I had to answer.

"It better be important.Are you ok?" I said trying to catch
my breath.I closed my eyes as he began thrusting again

She laughed from the other end."I'm doing just fine. But
where are you?Its almost midnight.When are we leaving?"

I breathed heavily as he worked faster with his fingers.

"Mary..umm..ahh..I'm in the middle.. umm..of something important. I will talk to you ok."

"Is there someone with you?" She asked.

I pressed my lips together suppressing a moan."Stay right where you are...umm..I'm coming."

The guy smiled wickedly as he increased his pace."No

...I'm coming."Right there.My hand holding my phone slid down as I climaxed like a tsunami.

I flopped my head against the wall looking at him. He

perked my lips. "Merry Christmas."

The fireworks lit up the sky into beautiful different colours.

I looked up the sky and back at him. "Its beautiful." I took

some moist scented wipes from my purse and wiped

myself while he licked his fingers. Ok!

He smiled as his violet eyes lit up. "Christmas is worth the

fuss after all."

"Now I agree." My phone rang again. I picked it, perked his

lips and began sidestepping down the stairs to the open area where everyone was gathered.

Mary ran up to me. "Where have you been? I was worried. And was that "I'm coming" all about. Eew

Maj. Don't tell me you were fucking someone when I called"

I bit my lower lip. "Not necessarily."

She shook her head and looked at my barefoot. "Cinderella only lost one shoe."

Oh crap. I forgot my shoes. They costed me an arm and leg

well not that I'm complaining but they were one of my
favourites.

"Well let's get out of here before the media start making up
stories about me being barefoot."

"But your shoes?"

"He is going to bring them." I just had a feeling that he was
going to find me again and we were going to finish what
we started.

She looked puzzled."He?..I was right so you were fucking

someone."

"Mary could you stop asking stupid questions or I will

leave you here and go." She resigned a breath.

We managed to dodge Mr Ferguson's closing speech. Like

I said I was there for the wine and the men not necessarily

celebrating Christmas. So since I got what I wanted it was

time to leave. Barefooted I walked out of the yacht and

went into a small boat which took us to the shore where

our designated limousines were parked. We boarded ours

and left.

"So this Andrea guy is amazing girl. Even though he is married he.....----" She went on and on with her story which I wasn't paying attention to. I was still reminiscing the events of the previous night. That was such a risk. How did I become so careless? Who was that guy? Those were questions I didn't have answers for but one thing was for sure. I wanted to meet him again and again and again.

"Here you go. Christmas traditional breakfast of champagne, strawberries in cream and Danish pastries."

Mary said placing everything on the table.

"Thank you." I smiled sipping some champagne.

"Even though there is no Christmas tree in this house it is still Christmas so Merry Christmas." She said and we cheered it on.

"Your present is somewhere in my bedroom." I said and stood up answering my phone.

It was Makenaka.I wished her and the family a Merry

Christmas.She told me excitedly about how everyone

loved the presents I brought them but they still wished I

was with them.

"But sis you should come and celebrate christmas and

new year with us you know.It is that time where the family

should be together. " She said sadly.

"Gift and his twin Guy could have been ten by now.I could

have been building a snow man with them,opening our

gifts under the Christmas tree. What's the purpose of being
with family when I feel so empty? The void is still there
and it grows deeper every time. I'm sorry I can't, I'm so
sorry. I lose everything and everyone I love. You're safer
when you're away from me. I love you guys. Don't get me
wrong but trust me I don't want to lose you. I can't rub off
my bad luck on you.." I blinked my tears away.

She sighed. "It's ok I understand. Merry Christmas."

"Merry Christmas." I dropped the call and sighed. I wished I

was with them too but every time we met it reminded me

of everything I lost and it didn't help that they pitied

me.They treated me like an egg which needed extra care.

I went and sat on the couch.I no longer had an appetite.

The door bell rang and Mary ran to answer it.

"Good morning." The deep voice had me standing upright

and turning to the doorway.He was wearing simple black

shorts,white polo shirt and black Nike sandals.Then on his

right hand he was carrying my heels.

I smiled at him.

"You left these behind.Cinderella." He smiled walking

towards me.Mary was now invisible as we were lost in

each other's eyes.

"I'm a barefoot tragic." I smiled.Suddenly I became so

conscious about what I was wearing,if there was nothing

on my face and if my hair was ok which was so unlike me.

He placed them down on the table and grabbed my waist.

"Ooohkay I think I will just leave you two to it." Mary finally

got the message as she ran out of the house.

I cupped my hands around his well chiselled jawline and pulled his face to mine as we indulged into yet another mouthwatering kiss, a souvenir. He ran his hands lightly up my spine and I gave a shiver of delight. Leaning closer I pressed my firm breasts against his chest. We stood there locked together from neck to knees and mouth to mouth but finally we had to come up for air.

"We are going to finish what we started yesterday." He

smiled biting his lower lip.

I arched my eyebrow. "Let's go upstairs."

The moment were done climbing the stairs he gathered

me again and placed his lips on mine.

"Which one is your room?" I pointed it to him. With his hand

on my back he steered into the room and pushed the door

open.

"I'm going to need help getting out of this dress."

"I was hoping you would say that." He ripped one of my

favourite Gucci dresses but I wasn't complaining.

Our lips met again and I helped him out of his clothes until

both of us were completely naked.He pinched my breasts

while I took his cock into my hand stroking it.

"Wow." I murmured.The thickness, the popping veins and

the slippery head was amazing to feel.He lifted me and

carried me to the bed.He went between my legs and

started muffing.I forgot all my pain and sufferings as I

pushed his head deeper.He had his hands snaked around

my thighs to keep me still. I grabbed the sheets trying to contain the deliciousness of his tongue circling, licking my folds and wetness. His tongue lapped and danced inside of me.

"Every piece of you is hot and wet for me." He said.

I bit my lower lip and took a breath. He dug one finger inside of me and pulled out and I reached his hand up.

"Let's clean this dirty dirty mess you made." I said licking his fingers tasting myself. He watched mesmerized and

started stroking his cock and he attacked my pussy again

furiously.I cried out

it was too much.I rode his face as I

came hard,my moans filling the room.He smirked looking

like a beast ready to devour me .I reached for my drawer

and took a condom.

"Prepared I see." He groaned as I ripped it open,held his

constantly dripping and licking head and placed the

condom over his head pushing it down.

"Its my turn now Sinner." With one swift move I made him sit,gripped his cock and slowly let myself sink down on him,sitting on it and trying to accommodate his size.I felt my vaginal walls stretching taking him all in.

"You're so fucking tight." He groaned.I began slowly moving up and down on him,bouncing on him while he spanked my ass cheering me on.We were in heaven.When I became too tired he placed the pillow and made me sleep on it while he took me from behind. After long,deep

powerful stroke pleasure swept through me I exploded. He didn't take long too and he came after me. We both took some time catching our breathe. I looked at him as our post sex glow was still clung on his body and he looked gorgeous.

"That was amazing." He said and I simply smiled because I was still trying to breathe.

"Yes that was amazing. I'm Majesty Browns." I stretched out my hand.

He laughed and shook my hand. "Nice to meet you Jesty

I'm Treet Jackson. Your name kind of sound familiar but I

don't remember where I have heard it."

Just like that I remembered those violet eyes. Fate has a

wicked sense of humour. After ten good years I met him

again just like that and we ended up in bed together. Only

this time circumstances were different. I was no longer

that naive 15 year old girl but a woman scorned, a predator

in a lingerie. Ready to hunt its prey and he was my

prey.Meeting Treet again was pure coincidence.I didn't

plan it and I didn't plan the events that occurred after

either.I looked at those violet eyes as I relived my pain

again.Why did it have to be him again!!!Why him?

"Are you ok Jesty?" He asked.

I smiled.The best fake smile I could offer at the moment.

"Yea yea.This is just fun.I don't expect anything else from

you."I actually wanted to ask to him to leave but my mouth

had to say the opposite of what I was thinking.

"Every guy's dream." His phone rang and got off the bed. He answered and whoever was on the phone irritated the hell out of him.

"Angela I said I'm coming jeez." He yelled while putting on his clothes.

He dropped the call and looked at me. He sighed perking my lips. "Look I gotta go. I will call you tomorrow."

"Trouble in paradise." I said.

"There was no paradise to begin with." He perked me again

and ran out.

Once I was sure he was gone, I hugged my knees. "What just happened?"

How could I enjoy sex with the same guy who violated me. What lesson was I teaching the other rape victims out there? I stood up and went to the shower to try and wash his scent off me but at the end he was all I could think about. I still wanted a piece of him. I still wanted more. Call me crazy but that's me being honest here. I might have

slept with quiet a number of guys but with Treet it was so different. It was a whole new amazing experience.

"Are you insane Maj? For crying out loud the dude is married and his wife is someone you wouldn't wanna mess with trust me. Angela is a nightmare. She is overprotective of her territory and she can do anything for Treet. By anything I mean even killing anyone who looks at Treet lustfully." Mary had returned just after I finished

bathing. Now she was lecturing me and it gave me a headache.

"I'm not dating Treet. We just had sex. Stop making it a big deal. Relax." I drank some water.

"Relax!!! I care about you and I don't want to see you dying in Angela's hands. If she ever finds out you had sex with her husband she will do unimaginable things to you. She is a psycho." She literally screamed at me.

I remembered that girlfriend who literally butchered my

face years back."Ohhh so he married that girl.Well I think
this Angela girl just met her match."

She sighed frustratedly. "Geez girl I'm looking out for you
here and you're not taking me seriously."

"I'm 25 years old Mary hello.I can look out for myself.Don't
worry your big head about it."

"Do you wanna die alone all sad and shit?How many good
men are you gonna let go?I mean you get a lot of loving
but have you ever been in love yourself.This sleeping

around thing you're doing is not cool.You're no different

from a slut and men don't like sluts.One day you might

want to settle down and I don't think your man will be

pleased to hear about your history.Maj stop this

nonsense.As a lady you're supposed to have morals.Right

now you're acting like some sluty,horny dog." She folded

her arms.Tell me again.Why did I tolerate this girl?

I folded my arms too."Girl,you have been in my life for like

what?Two minutes and you think you can start

questioning me and lecturing me. Don't play Dr Phil on me

because I'm ok with the way my life is. If I'm gonna die a

lonely old woman with fifty cats that's ok because it is my

life not yours. You can't fix me Mary. Either you make peace

with the way I run my life or the door is open for you. You

can leave and look for better friends who have

"morals", who do not sleep around, who do not act like slutty

horny dogs and who want to settle down like normal

people. I was doing just fine without you and trust me you

won't be missed." I took an apple from the fridge.

"I hate it when people want to be all judgmental when their

lives aren't perfect either."

She sighed."Ok I'm sorry I was only looking out for you.

"No you weren't looking out for me.You were judging me

Mary and I don't need people who are like that in my life.I

know I live my life in a way a lady is not expected to live

their life but you don't need to remind me that what I'm

doing is not right because I know that very well but that is

how I wanna live my life."I went to the lounge and sat
down.I might have been a little harsh on her but even
though what I was doing was wrong in all angles I told her
the truth.She was very judgemental which was one thing I
didn't like about her.Here she was preaching about me
fucking a married man and how wrong it was but I never
said a word when she went on and on about Andrea who
was married and old enough to be her uncle.Hypocrite
much!She gave me my space because I needed to clear

my head and blew off some steam. I just had to come to terms with the fact that I slept with Treet and I enjoyed it. Later on she apologized and I just acknowledged that I was wrong for being too harsh on her. I was not going to apologize for being me though. Call it pride but in my dictionary it is being real.

Days passed and before I knew it it was new year. I didn't have the energy to celebrate but I made an effort of driving

to East Rodeo to see my family. They were ecstatic to see me and so was I. I didn't stay for so long in as much as they tried to convince me because I had things to do. A week after the festive season I was going to be hands on back in business. They understood. I avoided Treet as much possible as I could. He called a couple of times and I didn't answer. He visited too but I would pretend like I was not around. I just wanted that chapter of my life closed but it was the beginning of drama in my life. Looking at it now

it seemed I lived in my past for a long time and refused to

move on. In as much as I wanted to convince myself that I

had moved on, all that I did was influenced by my past.

Never hold on to your painful past. It's toxic. Move on. If I

could get a chance to give 25 year old me an advice I

would say "learn to move on girl."

"Tell Petty to come straight to my office and with my latte. I

could make use of it right now." I said to the receptionist

and I went to the elevator. When I settled down in my office

Petty didn't take time and came in with my latte.

"Morning boss." He smiled giving me the coffee.

"Good morning Petty. How is my day looking and what are the important events of this week?" I sipped on my latte.

"This is good." I said taking another sip.

"You have a meeting with the gaming board in about an hour. You have to meet Byrone later at 2pm sharp at his studio. Also there is another artist who you might be interested in."

"Alright down to business tell me about this new artist." I

was already curious because this was business and it

could roll in millions for me.

"His name is Tyrone.He uses the brand TJay for his

work.Has a beautiful art gallery and he is a contemporary

artist. These are his bio,references, history..." He said

placing down the files.

"And also..?" I asked tapping my fingers on the table.

He smiled."You're not about to ask me his photo are

you?Unfortunately he doesn't let anyone take his photos."

I rolled my eyes."Typical artist."I started checking out the

samples of his work."His work just grabs your attention.

We could license his work and introduce it to some whole

new revenue.As for Byrone's work we could use it as an

inspiration for a clothing line because comparing the two

this TJay just takes the cup.So set up a meeting for me

with this Tyrone."

"Also you have pre-orders from the gamers.A lot of them

want to subscribe Mjdrive which can bring a good profit

for us but." He scratched his head."The IT board might

have managed to come up with a new gaming app for

Grey and they need you to approve first.Grey is saying time

waits for no man and if he doesn't get his app in 24hoys

he is pulling out."

"Grey can be a headache sometimes. I will talk to the

guys.Let's hope the app they created will easily impress

Grey.What are the upcoming events on my calendar?"

"You have a camp meeting with thee "kept housewives of Hollywood". Mrs Richmond, Mrs Hayes and Mrs Jordan."

He said.

I rolled my eyes."Are they expecting me to spend a thousand dollars a night to share a bunk bed like a kid on a sleep away camp?I have many things on my plate and they really can't expect me to go for their slaying wives kind of vacation. I don't even fit in that circle.I'm not married.We have different goals and visions.They rely on being spoilt

by their husbands and I make my own money.Cancel

everything and send an expensive apology gift for them."

Running a company and another one in the making wasn't

a joke so I didn't have time for the stupid getaways. On the

other hand I was hands on helping Prince open his own

surgery.My brother was a neurologist and I wanted him to

have his won practice, being his own boss not running

around after someone's orders.I also had to get Maka

some tutors.It was her final year in senior high.I wanted

her to achieve good grades so that it wouldn't be difficult to get her enrolled in University of California. So I wasn't the most free person on earth. Every minute counted.

"Ok and your meeting is about to start." He said.

"Okay cool umm also call one of the IT guy. My office phone is broken and the voice messages aren't coming through." He nodded and I walked to the board room.

"Ohh thank you for coming up with that idea I'm sure Grey will be pleased and I can get him off my back. Meeting is

adjourned." Everyone clapped their hands as they walked out. Finally I could breath as the Gaming board has managed to come up with fresh eyes for Grey's game app which I'm sure he was going to be pleased with.

Mary ran up to me."Since Grey will be off your back.We should reinstated our menipedi Fridays. "She said excitedly.

I shot her a look." I'm your boss here.Don't get too comfortable.Go back to work and send me that financial

statement I long asked for."

"Yes ma'am." With a tail between her legs she walked to

her office. I was a boss who ruled with an iron grip that's

how my business flourished. I didn't mix work with my

personal life hence Mary was an employee as long as we

were in Majesty Innovations. Well I thought I didn't mix

business with pleasure until I walked to my office. Treet

was in my office holding red roses and Lindt

chocolates. What the hell?

"And then.?" I immediately closed my blinders because I

had nosy employees. I activated my sound proof.

He smiled. "Red roses for a beautiful lady." In as much as I

wanted to tell him off my body just had to disappoint me. I

yearned him like crazy. "Unfortunately this lady doesn't like

red roses."

"Ok." He threw them in the bin. He bit his lower lip undoing

his belt.

"God yes, I have been waiting for you." I said walking

towards him.

He chuckled. "Somebody has no shame."

"Shame? I want you to fuck me on that double couch. Why

should I be ashamed?" I laughed.

We didn't even make it to the couch I helped him wear his

condom and bend over on my office desk. We were so

desperate for each other. By the time we were done I was

hot and exhausted.

"You fuck the hell out of me and it's amazing. You're

amazing." He chuckled

I stood up and fixed my skirt."Don't ruin it by saying

anything. Now please leave I'm at work."

"Well I thought I could stay for a couple of minutes and we

could get to know each other a little bit." He sat down.

I folded my arms."No I don't do that.You got what you

came here for.Now it's time for you to go.We fuck you

leave,no aftersex pillowtalks."

He looked at me speechless."Wow"

""Yea.Were you expecting a closing prayer or something?"

I looked at Dr Spencer.Her face was expressionless. She

didn't feel pity for me nor did she judge me.

"I know the world will condemn me for my actions.And

from an outside point of view I'm a shameless whore.Its

okay they probably don't understand why I did what I

did.Doc I had this twisted idea in my head.I decided to play

along even after knowing who he really was.I thought the

void will be filled if I made him feel worthless like he did
me years ago. At times I feel like I'm two people. One who
is driven by vengeance, hatred, anger, self-loath and
resentment. As a result that person can do the worst just
so they can feel better. Even if it means sleeping with her
rapist and enjoy it. Then there is the other me who is
watching and observing everything from a distance in
horror, disgust and disbelief.
She smiled. " I know Majesty. Trust me I have seen and
heard the worst. But I will help you."

8

TREET

Everything is black and white but there are fifty shades of grey.

"I dare you Angela McKop. Call her names again and you will see what I will do." She kept quiet when she realized how serious I was. She barged into my house and caused a scene while I was on a video conference with my clients. It was so embarrassing that I had to cut my meeting short so as to attend her silly tantrums. It might

look like a small thing but I could lose those customers

and lose millions as well.

"You have the nerve to come into my house and say shit

about the person I love. What do you want Angela

huh? What is it that you really want from me?" I held her

arms but not too tight to hurt her. Violence was never my

cup of tea.

She started crying. "I want us to work on our marriage

Treet. I will change I promise. I will be everything you want

from a wife. Let's work on this. Give me one last chance

please Treet. We can't just throw away our marriage of 11

years down the drain. Treet please. We vowed. For better

and for worse. We have been through so much already. We

can work this out."

"I gave you so many chances Angela. It's now your turn to

give me a chance to experience what true love is and what

happiness is. You know very well that all those years we

were married it was not bliss. I understand marriage is not

a bed of roses but ours was hell. It was torture. We both know how much you made it unbearable for both of us. Just sign the divorce papers Angela and free me from your lies, deceit, schemes and plots. It's not gonna work between us. It never did. Spare the both of us because it was toxic to begin with."

She knelt down. "Here I am on my knees Treet. I'm begging you just for one last chance Treet please. You won't regret it. I promise you. I know I haven't been the best and loving

wife but I promise you this time I will be a good

submissive wife."

I shook my head and scratched my head."Allow me to be

happy for once in my miserable life.I'm done with you.If

you don't sign those papers in a week I'm taking you to

court.Its been a year now since I issued those papers to

you.I gave you time but my patience too is running out.I

need my freedom."

I went upstairs and left her crying her lungs out.I had

better things to worry about like trying to win Majesty.I

know she had passed that phase of hating me but she

didn't like me either.She just put up with me because I can

be very persistent when I want to.On the other hand there

was Tyrone.We were not in talking terms because both of

us wanted Majesty for different reasons.I wanted her to

forgive me and maybe we could start something together.

Yes there was something between us.We fucked for two

years in the name of "fun" but I didn't want that anymore.I

wanted us to be in love with each other. I wanted us to share a love story not like any other. I don't know about Tyrone but those were my reasons. I acknowledged the sin that I committed 12 years back but I felt like I also deserved her forgiveness. Crucify me all you want but God always forgive us everyday and if we were to count our sins we would realise we are not worth his forgiveness. I was hellbent on winning Majesty back. I had lived with the guilt of what happened twelve years ago but not anymore.

"She is not carrying my baby I swear to you. We always used protection and not even once did I hit it raw with her."

I tried to explain to my parents and grandfather but clearly only my father was on my side.

"Those things are not 100% safe Treet and you know that. I

understand you're not happy about this baby and I'm not

ecstatic about it either provided your reaction and the

timing. The circumstances to which this baby was

conceived too weren't favourable but you should

understand Treet that babies are made when people have

sex together and we tended to do that a lot lately. This is

our child Treet,ours.You and I made this baby.If you don't

want to take responsibility I will seek other options

because I cannot do this alone.I can't take care of this

baby alone.I also want a stable home for my child with

both parents." Angela yelled back.We started arguing back

and forth as she insisted that it was my child but I knew

that it was not my baby she was carrying. Angela slept with everything in pants so there was no way I was going to believe that was my child and my gut was telling me that the child was not mine.

"Shut up both of you, enough!!! You will not disrespect me in my house. This is my house not a nightclub. We are here to solve this mess you created stop acting like hooligans this is not a fucking bar." Grandpa shouted and we both kept quiet.

"Treet what guarantee do you have that this child is not yours?" Everyone looked at me.

"Because we used protection grandpa. This can't be my child. And what guarantee does she have that she is carrying my child." I said in my defense

"Don't try to twist words do you get it. What were you expecting? You slept together were you expecting a baboon to come out of that? Men of this house take

responsibility Treet. So we are not going to argue back and

forth about this you're going to man up and father this
child. In as much as we are a mixed race in this house we
do things appropriately, the right way. You're going to marry
her because no Jackson child will be born out of
wedlock." My mom yelled.

"Not for me, it doesn't work like that mom. I'm 23 for crying
out loud. I'm allowed to make my own decisions about this
matter. I demand a DNA and if it turns out to be my child I
will be there in everything and I will take it upon myself to

take care of my child but when it comes to marriage

between Angel and me its not happening. We will both coparent and if she wants full custody or if she wants me to

have full custody of the child it's still ok with me. What I

don't want is marrying her." I said.

"Treet you're marrying Angela come storm come thunder.

Its already humiliating that you impregnated her and you

wanted to refuse the pregnancy. Who will want to marry

my daughter when she has a child? Mr Jackson talk to your

child because this doesn't look good. We don't want a

small problem which can be solved with a simple solution to cause a sour relationship between us, you know what it is at stake." So now Mr McKop resorted to threatening when he realized I was serious on refusing to marry his daughter.

My father sighed and I could see how this was taking a toll on him. Mr McKop was a business partner and one of the major shareholders at my father's construction company. He was good at his work and honestly I still give him some

credit for making our family's construction business

flourish so if he was to pull out in our business it wasn't

going to look good. As someone who had just graduated

and had a degree in business I knew what was at stake if

he was to leave our company. It was still on the foundation

but Mr McKop's was old in business so we needed him.

"You're making this difficult for both of us McKop come on,

we have come a long way for you to threaten me like

this. My boy said he will take full responsibility if the child

is his. We can't force our children into marriage. You know that is a very big step. Marriage is not a joke." My dad said Mr McKop stood up. "My daughter's life is not a joke either. Your boy ruined her life by making her pregnant. You know how hard it is for single parents to find love and settle down. I don't want my child to go through that. So either he takes responsibility and marries her or we cut all our relations and my daughter aborts. It's your choice. I'm giving you 48 hours. Make a wise choice you know what is

at stake here. Baby let's go." He wrapped his hand around his daughter who was sniffing and they walked out.

"Treet you're marrying that girl understand. You're not going to ruin things for this family. If you didn't want this you shouldn't have slept with her to begin with. If you refuse this marriage then I will disown you." Grandpa threatened and I walked outside. I had had enough of the threats.

Angela and I met through a mutual friend at a booze and

braai. She was one of the attractive ones and I'm confident about my looks too so we hit it off that day. To me it was just a one night stand but I guess to her it was a different story. She came back for more and since she was good at it I gave it to her that is how our flings started. I made my intentions known to her that to me it was just fun and she was not to expect anything more than that and she said she was fine with it, in fact she had a boyfriend who she was happily in love with and didn't expect anything more

from me.

"Lil bro I don't get it why would you want to hit where everyone sleeps with. You can do better than that. You got the looks and the money you can get any girl you lik. Why Angela of all the whores? Leave that bitch before anything goes wrong." My big brother Tyson said. Even his wife

Danileigh agreed with him.

"I second you on that big bro. I mean is she that good in bed. By the way did you know that she is Mr McKop's

daughter.If he finds out you're sleeping with his beloved

daughter he is going to force you to marry her." I guess

Tyrone's prophecy came true.But no matter how much

they warned me I didn't stop hitting it with Angel.She had

some incredible porn styles and was open to any style or

fantasy of mine.She was a good fuckbuddy nothing

more.Along the way I realised she started catching

feelings when she found out I have been fucking

somebody else and she went to torture the poor girl.For

the sake of peace I decided to leave that girl and make her
the only fling of mine but now there is no day I don't live
without regretting it. I should have stopped things with her
that moment she started catching feelings. Look at me
now!

"How did the meeting go?" Tyson asked. Well they were not
allowed in the meeting because for obvious reasons they
would side with me. So it was just mom, dad, grandpa, Mr
McKop, Angela and me in that meeting.

"I guess Tyrone was right after all. Mr McKop is forcing the idea of marrying Angela down my throat. Grandpa is threatening to disown me and mom supports it. Dad is on my side though but I don't think I can win this." I gulped the whisky that Tyson was drinking.

"Easy Tiger I'm sure there is a way." Tyrone said.

I sighed. "It's either Mr McKop's way or the highway. There is no way I'm escaping this bro. I have to do this or Mr McKop will pull out from the business. He will leave and if

this family suffers because of that it will be all my fault."

"I don't think we will suffer. We are into real estates and property right. We can manage without Mr McKop." Tyrone who had no idea about business said.

Tyson chuckled. "Tyrone I think you should just focus on your art bro. You have no idea about business whatsoever. So Treet this means you're going to sacrifice your freedom for this shit?"

"What choice do I have. I can't watch this family suffer

when I have the opportunity to make things right and
maybe it might be my baby so I have to man up. I brought
this upon myself so hey its time I face the consequences
head on." I could see my happy life ending right in front of
my eyes.

"Bro let's host a party at your house and celebrate. It
maybe your last party in your life because trust me that
Angela chick is going to make your life miserable." Tyrone
never took anything seriously.

"This is my life we are talking about Tyrone, don't make fun out of it." I hissed. I was just too stressed about the whole issue and the fact that Tyrone took this as a joke annoyed the shit out of me.

"Chill out bro. I told you not to fuck her but you had to think with your dick. Stop lashing at me and the party is on and you're going." Just like that everything was done so fast. He did everything for the party. He sent the invitations and got the positive feedback. The party was on even

though I didn't approve of it.

"I invited beautiful cheeks too. You should have some good time because you may never have that again. Consider this as your first bachelor party. The second one will be the day before your wedding." Tyrone said excitedly. Was this guy really my twin?

At the day of the party Tyrone literally dragged me into my own house to attend the party. I sat at the bar counter and took some shots while people were enjoying themselves

"Some cookies?" Tyrone asked with an innocent face. I still

wonder why I didn't suspect the cookies to be actually

"space cookies." To get him off my back I took two and

ate. He tried to get me to eat more but I refused. A minutes

later I was feeling funny that's when I realized they were

actually weed cookies.

"I just wanted to calm your nerves relax." Tyrone defended

when I confronted him about giving me the space cookies.

I went back to the bar counter and took some more shots

now I was drunk, but not wasted. Then everything started moving in slow motion when she walked in. I don't know if it was the weed and the shots which were exaggerating her beauty or she really was that beautiful but either way I knew that moment I just had to have her. I watched her every move as she went and sat down looking lost.

"Can you pour two keys on the rocks for me please." I told the bartender.

I took the cups and went to her

the moment her eyes
landed on mine I instantly became "sober". I offered her the
drink which she accepted and drank but later showed that
she didn't drink. I wondered what an innocent person like
her was doing at this kind of a party. I wanted to calm her
nerves so I made her drink but when I was sober enough I
realised I shouldn't have done that. I regretted the whole
thing.

"Ohh my God I have to find Ethan Treet." She cried. I

realised she was really drunk so I had to take her to my room and Tyrone followed.

"We are having a three some." Tyrone said excitedly.

"No bro no we ain't sleeping with her." I protested.

"Come on Treet don't be so uptight." He said. He was really drunk.

"You're so handsome." She laughed and cupped my face.

"Can I kiss you? Your lips are so inviting." She said bringing her face close to mine. She kissed me and I responded. I

couldn't resist it. I could tell it was her first but she was good.

"Bro its my turn now." Tyrone said taking a video. He was wasted. "Let me go and take some more beer to make it more interesting." He tried to walk but passed out without even going anyway.

"Get me out of this dress its hot." She complained and I helped her out of it and damn did she look hot.

"Where were we?" She said snaking her hands around my

neck and bringing her face closer to mine. We started

making out again and I was so hard for her.

"Can I touch it. Ethan showed me a video and the guys

seems to like it when their thing is touched" She said

touching my cock.

"No no don't do that. You're drunk you need to sleep. Ohh

God what have I done?"

She continued stroking me.

"Can you touch me. I want to feel good too. Ethan told me

that sex is delicious I want to taste it too." God knows I tried.I tried stopping myself but under the influence of alcohol plus weed,theway she was touching me and how beautiful she was naked like that.I was so damn horny so I lost control and we ended up having sex.

The following morning I woke up when Tyrone was busy yelling.

"What the fuck just happened." At that moment I didn't have any memory of what had happened the previous

night. And I looked at the naked terrified girl that was in my room.

"We had a good time yesterday girl you're really tight."

Tyrone said and we shoulder bumped. Tyrone continued

talking his nonsense and I was already stressed on the

idea of marrying Angela. The girl started accusing me and

Tyrone of raping her which I found absurd. Tyrone showed

her some video and she continued going all mad then I

threw money at her because she was starting to annoy me.

That moment Angela walked in and started acting all ghetto on the girl. The poor girl finally managed to flee when I dragged Angela back into my bedroom.

"Are you crazy Angela? What was that for huh? Are you insane?" I shouted at her.

"I'm carrying our baby and you're here bringing whores. Do I mean that much to you?" She cried.

I sighed and hugged. "Fine I'm sorry ok. Don't cry ok you will worry the baby."

She wiped her tears smiling. "Does that mean we are getting married?"

I nodded slowly. "But I have a condition. I don't want this to be a big wedding. Just a small function with family and close friends."

"Ok ok babe. I'm going to tell dad, uuuh I'm so excited." She ran out.

I went to the bed to remove my sheets and that's when I spotted the blood. Everything replayed like a movie in front

of me."God what have I done?"

There is no passing day I didn't live to regret what I did.All

of it was my fault to begin with.I should have stayed

faraway from that girl.I didn't tell Tyrone that he wasn't

involved with her because I wanted to make myself feel

better.I wanted someone to share the guilt with and that

was so wrong in so many angles.A few days later Angela

and I got married.I had proposed it to be a small function

no one listened as it was turned to be a huge thing.The

first few months of our marriage were bearable and I was starting to learn how to love Angela and our unborn child but that mysterious girl who I even didn't remember her name was always on my mind. A few months later she gave birth to a stillborn but I still requested for a DNA and it came out negative. The baby wasn't mine. That was a first blow in my marriage with Angela. I wanted to divorce her but Angela, mom, Mr McKop and grandfather begged me not to and give our marriage a second chance. We

moved to USA for business and to start over. We went to a marriage counsellor and tried working on our marriage. Two years after it looked like things were finally falling into place but man who was I kidding.

"Where are you coming from.?" She said with her arms folded.

I sighed. "I had a long day Angela and the last thing I want is to argue with you. I had back to back meetings today and had a hard time in convincing some clients that's why I'm

late. When I get home I just want to be welcomed with a delicious dinner, have sex with my wife, have a bath together and have a goodnight sleep. Is that too much to ask for?"

She scoffed. "You really can't be expecting me to cook for you Treet that's why you hired chefs right. I'm kinda of tired today so I'm going to sleep." She dragged her lazy ass upstairs.

I ate dinner on my own and joined her in bed after taking a

shower.

"I said I'm tired Treet." She yanked my hand off when I

tapped her shoulder. You know how tiring it is to shoulder

tap asking for sex.

"Its ok." I turned my bed lamp off and slept. I was too tired

to beg for sex. God created my hand for a reason and

those pornstars act for a reason too. I was going to watch

my favourite porn videos and jerk off. Problem solved. The

following day was a weekend and I was looking forward to

spend some quality time with my wife since weekends were the only days I was free provided I'm not on a business trip.

"Why are you getting ready early this morning? Are you supposed to go somewhere?" I asked getting out of bed. "It's 8am and you're not a morning person."

She smiled and perked my lips. "Good morning babe I'm going to a girls getaway. I will be back by tomorrow afternoon."

"Excuse me! You're saying that you're going on a getaway with your girls and you're telling me the actual day you're leaving. Why wasn't I informed earlier?" I asked furiously.

"Ooh chill you were at work and its not like this is something new. You know very well me and my girls go on a getaway every month so this shouldn't come as a surprise to you. Talk about ruining a perfect morning." She sat down and continued applying make up.

"You're not going." I said firmly.

She chuckled bitterly. "Excuse me!!"

"I said you're not going. I'm your husband. We are married

don't act like we are in a relationship and I'm your

boyfriend understand. In a marriage we ought to discuss

things. We are bound to communicate for everything to be

ok. You just don't think of going on a trip then you tell me

the very same day you're leaving. It doesn't work like that, at

least not in my marriage. Next time you want to go on a

vacation, a getaway trip or whatever that is, you

communicate with me before making a decision by

yourself. I tell you when I'm leaving for a business trip three

days prior the trip so you should learn to do the same." I

wore my T-shirt and briefs.

"Ohhh don't tell me you want me to be that submissive

wife. The important thing right now is that you know now

that I'm leaving. I didn't just go and call you when I arrived

at my trip. Stop making everything a big deal when it's not."

She yelled.

"Don't yell at me I'm not your child! This is a big deal and you're not taking it seriously. This simply reflects how much you disrespect me and how much my opinion doesn't matter to you. Do you think I don't want to go to getaways too with my guys.? I do but because I have a wife. I seek her permission first and if she says no with valid reasons I don't go. I expect the same from you. Yesterday I cancelled a very important business trip because I realised I have to spend some time with my wife

but here you're telling me you're leaving when this was supposed to be our weekend together. Don't make it more difficult for me as it already is. Meet me halfway Angela because I'm trying here to make this marriage work. Wash your face and call your friends and tell them you're not coming. That is final." I walked out banging the door in process. I had to knock some senses into her. It had to be done because she was going overboard what kind of a wife acts like that. My phone rang when I was preparing a

protein shake.

I answered. "Mr McKop hello." Obviously Angela had ran

for her father's help but I wasn't having none of it. I was

going to put this old man in his place.

"Hello son umm Angela called me crying saying that you're

refusing to let her go to a getaway trip with her friends. Is

everything ok son."

I sighed. "With all due respect Mr McKop this is between

me and my wife. I don't need your interference. With

everything that happens between Angela and you don't see me running to my parents to complain or my parents interfering in our matters."

He cleared his throat."Son I was just trying to..."

I interjected. "You were trying to interfere period.I admit there are serious issues which needs your interference but not this silly matters which Angela and I can solve ourselves.Understand this Mr McKop this marriage is between Angela and I.We are not married to you.Its the

two of us in the marriage not the three of us.If you really want to have a say in these matters then do me favour and tell your daughter to grow up and to start acting like a married woman not a girlfriend. Thank you." I dropped the call.I know it may have been so disrespectful for me to say that but it had to be done.

Angela walked down all red faced."Treet how can you say things like that to my father?!"She yelled.

"For the last time I told you not to yell at me because I'm

not a child.If you run to your father to complain for silly matters you will pack your bags and go to his house.It'd high time you stop living under his wings and perform your duties as a wife.We have been married for two years now but all we do is argue,fight,annoy the hell out of each other not even once have we reached a common ground.Aren't you tired of it too because hell I'm exhausted.Angela I want our marriage to work.I want us to be a lovely couple that everyone admires and learn from.Is it too much to ask

for? I love you Angela but sometimes you make things so difficult for me that I even doubt your intentions in this marriage. What is it that you want Angela? Do you want us to fight until death do us apart? You know very well that you're difficult and a few men would stick around but I don't want to leave I want us to fix whatever it is and be a happy family. Don't you also want a peaceful and happy environment? Babe please don't you want that too?" I held her hands and she started crying.

"I'm so sorry babe I know I can be very hard on you and I'm
so sorry.Its just that I grew up with only my father.I never
experienced what a happy family is because he always
changed women like clothes.I didn't have anywhere to
learn how to be a good wife because my own mother
didn't groom me.She is somewhere in the world enjoying
her life.I just have this bitterness.I don't know what's
wrong with me and I'm so sorry.Please babe don't give up
on me.Iwant us to be a happy family too.I know the

problem is on me and I will try to fix myself."

I hugged her."Its ok babe don't cry.Say what? You can go to your trip.Go have some time to refresh,blow off some steam,unwind and when you get back we will start over." I also needed some time alone to clear my head because trust me being at my place was so toxic.I preferred working till late than going home that's how toxic it was.People would admire my mansion and cars not knowing how unhappy I was staying in that big house and

driving those luxurious cars.Its not always as it looks like.

She jumped in excitement. You would not believe that she

was crying a minute before. "Really babe." I nodded my

head."Ohh my God Thank you.I love you so much let me go

fix my makeup real quick."She ran back upstairs.

"Remember to behave.Mike will come pick you up

tomorrow ok." I said walking her to the car.

She kissed me and grabbed my already hard cock."I will be

a bad bad girl when I come back and I will buy some toys

too."She bit her lower lip and ran to the car leaving me with a hard on.When she left,I went upstairs and switched on my mac book.I clicked on my favourite Brazzers subscriptions and watched the videos while jerking off.I released and went to take a shower.I wore a simple outfit and drove to Tyson's place.Unfortunately for me Tyrone was there and I know he was going to make fun of my situation.

"Man when last did you have sex because I can smell your

sexual frustration from over here." Tyson said after we
shoulder bumped. I kept quiet and gulped down my vodka.
Tyrone laughed. "Ahhh for this one it must be a dry season
for him because now he is watching porn to release." I
choked on my drink. How did he even know that. "I saw your
subscriptions on your phone, half." He winked
I kept quiet in embarrassment. I mean it was
embarrassing for a grown ass man like me to
masturbate. That shit is for teenagers and men with wives

like Angela.

Tyson pulled a serious face."That is not a laughing matter

Tyrone.Most married men have been there especially

when the Lady of the house doesn't feel like it or she is too

tired to just open her damn legs and let us do the damn

job.But Treet watching porn videos and masturbating will

only affect you because the short time you take to

ejaculate when masturbating will be the same time you

release when fucking for real.So please stop "Jennie in the

hand" it will down your sex game."He patted my shoulder
and I just nodded.

He looked at Tyrone who was suppressing a laugh."And
you dickhead stay out of other people's privacy will you?"

Tyrone laughed."I'm sorry but I just can't help it sometimes.

I mean he is my twin I'm bound to know these things. And
me being nosy helped in this situation because he was

never going to tell you he is doing "Jennie in the hand." He
burst into laughter.

9

TREET

Short lived happiness.

My wife called the following afternoon telling me she had returned from her girls getaway and I was ecstatic. I took it upon myself to go and pick her up because trust me I had missed her. Yes she was a headache at times but I had made a decision that I will forget all that happened in the past and start on a fresh page. It was high time we lived up

to the vows we made to each other the day we tied the knot. Talking about weddings in a few days to come it was our wedding anniversary and man was I happy? I had plans, great and wonderful plans. I was aiming to impress and I was confident she was going to be happy.

"Hey babe." She ran to me with her arms wide open and I picked her up, swung her around a little bit and kissed her all over the face.

"Ohhh you guys I just admire you. You're so sweet." Ariana

one of her friends commented.

"I second you on that." Lily the other one said."On that note

how about we go on a triple date or vacation. How does

that sound."

Angela sighed sadly."I'm sorry to disappoint guys but we

can't.I mean the three of us have always been

together,going out and all but now I want to spend some

quality time with my man.He is a busy man so when we

find time to be together we have to use it wisely, so no

guys.You can go on a double date.My babe and I got

plans.Right babe"She looked at me smiling and I was too

surprised to say anything. The Angela I knew could have

taken full advantage of the situation and put me on a tight

spot that I wouldn't deny going but now she wanted us to

spend quality time together.That was a first.

I kissed her."You know.I love you so much right."

She giggled."I know and I love you more. Let's get out of

here already, I can't wait to eat you up."

We said our goodbyes and I drove us home. I had given all my workers three days off because like I said, I wanted to spend some time with my wife. We didn't even reach the bedroom. That's how desperate we were for each other. I just had her right there in the lounge. Man it felt so good being inside of her again. It has been a month and I was dying with blue balls.

"That was amazing." I said breathing heavily.

"Yea but I'm still hungry. You know I can't get enough of

you." She said stroking me and I was hard for her again.

"Let's take this upstairs." I said.

She sulked."No,let's be spontaneous.We doing it here.I

want you to fuck me on the kitchen counter too,against

the fridge,on that piano too everywhere."

I smiled,she was talking my language.After a long hot

session we were both exhausted so we just ordered our

dinner.And we ate while having a conversation.

"So I was thinking maybe we should try for a baby." She

said out of the blue and I choked on my food.

"I'm sorry what?!" Its not like I didn't hear what she said.

She sighed."I said maybe we should try for a baby.Ok I

know I messed up and its justified if you haven't forgiven

me yet.Its understandable I was wrong to trap you like that

with a baby that wasn't yours but baby I didn't know who

the father was.I only wanted you to be the father because

you were the stable one.I'm sorry I was wrong and if I have

to live the rest of my life making it up to you I will."

I held her hands."It takes courage for one to acknowledge their mistakes and apologize.I admire you for that.I

forgave you but I think the timing is just bad.We just found our way back to each other having a baby will compromise things for us and you will be more focused on the child than me.We still have plenty of time.I ain't going anyway, you ain't going anyway. We will have a child maybe five years later.For now let's just enjoy each others company."

"But I saw how you looked when they told you the baby

didn't make it. I saw your happiness when the baby first
kicked and when we went for the first scan. I have never
seen you so happy and I feel ashamed to have robbed that
away from you. In all honesty you married me because of
the child right. I can still give you another one, your own
Treet...I--" I kissed her to stop her from talking.

I smiled cupping her face. "You're right I married you
because of the baby but as time goes by I learnt to love
you. I see you're still stuck in the past, its time to move

on.You made a mistake like everyone else on this planet.You acknowledged it and I forgave you.Itss time to move on.A child is not going to strengthen our marriage we are going to do it on our own.There are a lot of divorced people out there with 4/5 kids.That should be enough proof for you to know that having a child when there is no love cannot change a relationship.We should love each other first for our marriage to be strong.Like I said we just got each other back let's love each other like

nobody's business so that even when the baby comes he

or she will come to a peaceful environment."

She smiled."You're always right and I hate that."

We both laughed.I had missed this.Laughing and smiling

with my wife,being happy in general.

She stopped smiling and looked at me."What is it?"

"I had missed this.Its been long since I felt this happy." I

smiled.

"I will try my best to make you happy."

We went back to our bedroom, made love once more and slept. The following morning I woke up and she wasn't in bed. For a moment I thought everything that happened was a dream but she walked in wearing one of my favourite t-shirts holding a tray.

"You know I can't cook to save my life right so I ordered.

Good morning." She said besides me and we kissed.

"I thought I was dreaming. That shirt looks sexy on you"

She sat on my laps.

"You do know that's a dangerous position right."

She giggled."I know and I sat like this because I want you

to fuck me.Morning glory."

I laughed.""God somebody has no shame."

She laughed too."What!!! I want my husband to work on

me there has no shame in that."

"Ok so your wish is my command."

With one swift move she was under me and I worked on

her real good that she ended up having a funny penguin

walk.The following days were just of pure

happiness.Angela was trying to make our marriage work

and I admired her efforts.Our anniversary was in a few

days and I was excited about it.

"I'm sure you're tired let me take this briefcase and ohh I

have prepared a bath for you.Go take a bath while I

prepare your dinner.After dinner I will give you a

massage"She winked taking my briefcase. I could get used

to this.Things had changed whenever I got back home

from work I was welcomed with this kind of treatment.I

took a bath and we had dinner together, made love and

went to sleep.On our anniversary I decided not to go to

work.

"You can take my card.Go out with your friends and spoil

yourselves." I said giving her my card.

"Why don't the two of us go and spoil ourselves?" She

asked.

"No you go.Have a full body massage or whatever that you

girls do." After a lot of convincing she decided to

leave. That way I could easily put my plan into action. I

asked for my helpers to assist me in decorating the open

area by the pool and we did a great job. After working for

two hours we managed to transform the place and looked

so beautiful. The Land Rover Discovery Sport was delivered

at home. It was her present I knew she was eyeing it for a

long time now but didn't know how to ask me to buy it for

her. I went upstairs and I realized she forgot to take her

phone with her. Before I could pick it up Tyrone called.

"Hey bro." I said sounding excited.

"Hey wassup." He was low and I immediately picked that something was not right.

"What's wrong half?" I asked.

"There is something I need to tell you. I know you will hate me for this but one day I hope you will forgive me." Tyrone was not the type to take things seriously but when he does it will be really serious.

"I will come over to your place because it really needs me to be there to explain in person not over the phone."

He hung up before I could even say a thing. Man this day was planned for my anniversary, what happened to postponing. Angela's phone beeped. It had a password on and I just typed Angela it opened.

"Treet deserves to know the truth. I'm on my way to your house."

Somehow I had a feeling it was linked with Tyrone and in

as much as I wanted to stop myself I kept on scrolling.

There were Angela's nude pics that he was sending to this

unsaved number. I couldn't believe that after everything I

have put up with and everything I had to go through to

make this marriage work she was cheating on me like

this. While trying to save the number she was sending the

pictures to in my phone, it turned out to be Tyrone's

number. No words can ever express how enraged I was.

"Calm down Treet there has to be a misunderstanding." I

told myself not to run into conclusions. Maybe there was a sort of a misunderstanding. Maybe it was mistake she meant to send the pictures to me but mistakenly sent them to Tyrone. I went downstairs when Tyrone called telling me had arrived. He came with Tyson. I guess that's how serious the matter was. We exchanged pleasantries and I sat down waiting to hear his story but he took his time without saying anything.

"Make it quick half. I don't have all the time in the world I

have things to do."

He looked at Tyson. "Where do I start bro."

Tyson sighed and gave him a pat. "From the beginning."

He nodded and looked at me. "Before I say this you have to know that I never intended for things to happen the way they did and I'm deeply sorry. From the bottom of my heart I'm very sorry."

"You're scaring me man. Tell me what is going on because I have questions for you." I said pulling a serious face.

"Maybe we should start with what you have to ask while I find a way to put everything to the table for you." He said.

I took Angela's phone and opened their chat."Care to explain why my wife is sending you nude pics?Or maybe is it a mistake?.If it is a mistake what did you mean when you said Treet deserves to know the truth.What truth?"

The way I was calm about it.I didn't even trust myself with my next move because I was boiling inside.I was praying that it really turned out to be a mistake.

"Look man I can explain." He said nervously.

"Yea go ahead.You're here for that reason." I was an

erupting volcano as each minute passed and my patience

was running out.

"I slept with her." He said and looked at me, fright written

all over his face.

"You slept with who?" I guess we were talking about

different women here right.It can't be my wife.She has

been on her best behavior and we were happy.This day

was our anniversary for crying out loud.

Tyson intervened." We are talking about Angela here man."

"That's it!"Shut the fuck up Tyson this ain't about you and

me.Back to you Tyrone who the fuck did you sleep

with?"Maybe I just wanted to hear someone else's name

but the truth was on the table.

"Angela.Your wife ok.I'm sorry dude.I really am." He

scratched his head.

I grabbed his collar and punched him.

"My wife dude can you listen to yourself. You slept with my wife really. What have I ever done to you man huh. When did that happen and why?"

"Don't do this to yourself Treet." Tyson said

"No no shut up Tyson. I need to know everything. Had he slept with Danileigh he could have been in the hospital right now." I looked at Tyrone.

"It happened a month ago. It happened once Treet. I was drunk and we met at a club. It just happened. I never eyed

your woman I swear to you but it just happened and I'm so
sorry."He knelt down.

"Tyrone I want you to leave my house right this moment
because I swear to God I will hurt you and I don't want my
twin brother's blood on my hands. The same twin brother
who slept with my wife.I came to you man with my
burdens telling you how my marriage was affecting
me.Heck you even saw porn subscriptions in my phone
because my wife was not giving me sex and that made

you happy right? You even made a joke out of me. You were happy because you knew you were sleeping with her."

"It only happened once I promise you. It was a mistake."

I chuckled bitterly. "A mistake!!! Really? A mistake is

wearing two different socks. Are you telling me you

removed your pants by mistake, you removed hers too.

You even had an erection by mistake. You fell and your dick

ended up in my wife's pussy by mistake. I trusted you

man. Leave my house I never wanna see you again."

"You guys can talk about this come on dude." Tyson said.

"Both of you leave my house before I totally loose it. You

know very well what happens when I loose it and I don't

wanna hurt anyone so please leave." They both obliged

and left but Tyrone couldn't stop apologizing and I was

having none of it. I mean what kind of a brother was h? My

twin on top of that. Also the fact that Angela was sending

him nude pics meant she still wanted a piece of him and it

angered me more. Where did I go wrong as her husband? I

zoned out trying to think where I missed it with Angela.

"Hey babe. What are you thinking about." She said

snapping her fingers at my face. She disgusted me.

"You forgot your phone." She immediately panicked when I

said that and I remained calm.

"Ohhh and do you really have to put your name as your

password anyone could get it right." I looked at her and the

shock was priceless.

"Tyrone sent you a message and he was here not so long

ago."

She started sweating and I waited to hear her lies. I love

listening to lies when I know the truth.

"Babe...I...I...I can explain. Its not what it looks like. I can

explain"

I took my car keys because another moment with her I

was going to hurt her and I wasn't an abusive husband. I

was raised better than that." Explain what? That you slept

with my twin and you liked it. You still want a piece of him

right."I started walking out

She held my arm."Babe wait we can fix this.I promise you

we can.Can we talk about this please."

"We can't talk about this.Now let me go because I swear if

I stay a minute longer I will hurt you.Let me go." I yanked

her hands off.I went into my car and she ran to the front

blocking my way.

"Move Angela

I will run you over." I shouted.

"Please please babe.Can we talk about this.Don't leave me please." She pleaded.

"I said get away from there." I was enraged than ever.

She came to my side crying."I know its not easy to forgive me for what I did but please babe please.Give me one more chance please.I can change. I will change because I love you so much Treet."

"You love me?Do we hurt the people we love Angela.Where did I fail as a husband.I can't even stand you right now." I

drove off.I made it to my club legs and liquor and I thanked
God I never had an accident.I ordered five shots and sat on
the counter.I drank my sorrows away in the club.Women
came and offered themselves at me but I just showed
them my wedding band. Let me rephrase that..my useless
wedding band.I slept at one of the rooms at the club
because I couldn't stand going back to my whore of a
wife.When I woke up the following morning I had a bunch
of missed calls from my mom,Angela,dad,Tyson and

Tyrone. I just switched my phone off and drove back home. Running away was not going to solve my problems I had to face this head on. I arrived and there was no one at home. I switched on my phone there was a message from dad.

You need to come to the hospital ASAP your wife is admitted. Rodeo City hospital.

I took my car keys and drove to the hospital like a mad person. I arrived at the hospital and the receptionist didn't

give me a hard time.

"Ohhh my baby I have been so worried about you. We tried

your phone last night and you weren't picking up." Mom

said cupping and kissing my whole face the moment I

walked to the waiting area.

"I needed my space. What are you all doing here and what

is he doing here?" I angrily looked at Tyrone.

"We will discuss this issue later but right now I think you

should go see your wife. She drank some poison early this

morning and it almost killed her but thanks to one of the
helps who saw her and brought her here. We are waiting
for the doctor to allow us to see her. They are still busy
with her." Dad explained.

I don't know where Mr McKop came from but within a blink
he was holding my collar." What's wrong with yo? What
kind of a husband leaves his wife? You went out to sleep
around leaving my daughter."

I yanked his hands off and I swear it took a lot for me not

to punch the craziness out of him."What kind of a wife

sleeps with his brother in law?I left because one more

minute with your daughter I was going to hurt her.She

opened her legs for my brother and that is ok with you?"

He looked down in embarrassment.

Dad intervened. "Let's not do this here son please.This is a

hospital and there are sick people around here."

I chuckled bitterly. "What am I even doing here? I mean

Tyrone is here clearly she means a lot to him.You might as

well marry him off to her. I'm done with your daughter and
I'm done with this snake of a brother. She can drink poison
and kill herself for all I care. I no longer care at all. I'm so
done. When she wakes up I want a divorce."

Mom started crying. "No babe please. This can be solved
ok. When the going gets tough you don't run away. You
don't choose the easy way out. You made vows, live up to
them. God is against divorce. You will be sinning against
God. Learn to forgive because God always forgives you. If

you divorce Angela today, tomorrow you will marry

someone who is worse and you will divorce that person

again. The cycle will continue. Instead you should work

things out with Angela." Now she was drawing

unnecessary attention to us.

I looked at her in disbelief. "Are you sure I'm your

son?" What kind of a mother would say that to their

child. To tell you to hold on to a toxic marriage. I loved my

mother to the moon and back don't get me wrong but

sometimes I doubted her intentions. Clearly there was nothing left for me and Angela but she was telling me to hold on.

She held her chest trying to breathe." How can you ask me that?"She started hyperventilating.Good thing we were at a hospital so the doctor's took her to one of the rooms.I started feeling bad,maybe I shouldn't have asked her that.My other family members were not making things easier for me either,with the way they were looking at

me.They were clearly blaming me for her condition.The

doctor came back and we all rushed to him.

"Is she ok...is she out of danger ...what's wrong with her?"

We all asked at once.

Well she had a panic attack but she is lucky she was here

and we managed to stabilize her a minute late it could

have been a heart attack.Did someone in her family had

heart problems because it seems like Mrs Jackson has

heart problems too."The doctor explained.

Dad sighed."Well her late mother died because of a heart failure so I guess it runs in the family."

The doctor nodded taking notes."Ok we will have to keep her under observation for one more day and see how this goes.We need to observe her stress levels and most importantly don't tell her bad news or anything that worries her because we might loose her considering the fact that we found out about the possibility of her having a heart problem a little bit too late.That will be all."He walked away.

"I need some air." I walked to the parking lot. A few minutes later my father followed. He gave me a pat on the shoulder and we stayed for some time without saying anything to each other.

"What does this mean for me?" I asked looking at him.

He sighed. "I know we are asking for a lot from you son."

"So I'm the family's scapegoat right. I have to be sacrificed for everything." I looked at him with tears in my eyes.

"Marriage is never easy son. Me and your mother weren't

like this back in the day. We used to fight like cats and dogs. If you go around looking for a perfect person you will never find happiness. I understand what she did with your twin was huge but give it time. I once cheated on your mom with her sister and she cheated on me with my friend. We separated got back together again and separated again and got back together again. During all that time we learnt that we couldn't do without each other. We solved our problems and now we are happy. No

marriage is perfect Treet and if you run away like this you
will always run away. Divorce is never the solution. I was
never a fan of Angela and I'm still not but the two of you
never gave each other a chance that is why it is one
problem after the other. I know it's not going to be easy for
you after the betrayal but give it time Treet. Forgiveness
doesn't change the past but it enlarges the future. One day
you might do something wrong to her, roles may reverse
and she will be the one with power either or not to forgive

you. Will you be ok if she just screams divorce without giving you a chance?"

I sighed "I gave her so many chances dad. I tried with her but we are just running around in circles."

"Give her another one. You always sin against God but he forgives you all the time." he said.

"You do understand I'm not God right. I need my space and tell mom to get well soon for me." I went into my car and drove off.

She sat down and started crying again holding the pregnant test sticks.

"Its negative again.I'm not pregnant Treet."She wailed.

I rubbed her back." Give it time.You will get pregnant

ok.We will have our baby.Don't cry babe come on"

"Time really?Time Treet.Time is what I don't have.We have

been married for ten years and I'm still not pregnant. Do

you think what the doctor said 8 years ago might be true. I

ruined my life Treet.I ruined us." She cried.

So after I drove off that day at the hospital I went out of

the country to refresh for about a month.I handled my

business in France and no one knew where I was and I

was ok with it because I needed my space.It wasn't easy

for me to just forget what Angela and Tyrone did to me

and I needed time to think what I was going to do.I

returned home after deciding to give her one more chance.

Call me stupid,that's fine because I know I was but if it

meant being with Angela to save my mother I would do it again and again. I loved my mom very much that if being with Angela was going to make her happy, I was going to be with her then no matter how unhappy I was .Upon returning home we started our marriage counselling sessions and Angela really tried to change I guess that's how we survived another 8 years together meaning we have been married for 10 years now.She tried by all means to please me but every time I looked at her I would just

imagine her with Tyrone and it turned me off. The marriage was never the same again and my love for her started slowly fading away. As for my relationship with Tyrone. It was never the same too. We only met at family gatherings and exchange pleasantries other than that we never talked. He tried to apologize. Tyson tried to intervene but I told them off. I was having none of it as a result he got tired too and stopped apologizing and calling so that was it. A family meeting was even held. I told them that I forgave

him but I would never be able to forget what he did and they stopped trying to mend our twinship because he messed it up. Anyway looking at the matter at hand Angela was trying to get pregnant but 8 years back when she drank that poison the Doctors pointed out that she ruined her womb so chances of her getting pregnant were very slim. Angela being Angela still wanted to get pregnant and she was hanging on that slim chance. She had faith that she was going to be pregnant and I was the supportive

husband. We went to one gynae after the other but they still said the same thing. She still worked on that slim chance.

"We will get pregnant when the time comes now let me go to work or otherwise I will be late."

I was not happy, not after everything but work was my solace, it was my happy place.

"Ok babe, I will bring you lunch later on ok." She was really trying but her efforts were all in vain, we were never going

to be the same again. I nodded and walked out.

Work was just work I had a great deal with some

insurance company and it was going to bring in millions

for me. It is a well known fact that most of the tallest

buildings in the city are insurance companies so building

for them was a great deal for me. After the meetings it was

lunch time before I knew it. I decided to go to a nearby

restaurant. I totally forgot that Angela had promised to

come. I sat at a table on the far end where I could see

anyone who enters and leaves the restaurant, also I was
avoiding paparazzi. I ordered and while waiting for my
order she walked in. Just like 10 years back at that party
when that girl walked in and everything was in slow
motion. I relived that moment again when this gorgeous
African woman walked in. From the way she carried herself
she looked uptight, closed off and confident. I felt
something in me moving, something that was dead coming
to life again. She was on her phone all along and she

ordered. I watched her every move as she ate, smiled and spoke on the phone. I wanted to go talk to her but I looked at my wedding band and stopped myself. That was the first time I saw her. At the Christmas Eve party was the second time. I couldn't even eat but I was satisfied just by watching her. When she was done she paid her bill and walked out confidently. I was happy and content too. I paid my bill and left.

I knew the moment I landed my eyes on her it was going to

be trouble for me but I couldn't stop thinking about her. For the short moment I saw her, she made me happy without even trying. There was something about her. Anyway I arrived back to my company and Angela was still waiting for me. I dismissed her in the name of work but honestly I didn't want anything or anyone to spoil my mood, I wanted time to think about the breathtakingly beautiful woman I had seen at the restaurant.

Maybe I should hire a PI to get me something about her.

I thought but quickly dismissed that idea.

I went back home all smiles that even Angela noticed I

was in a good mood. We had dinner and Angela's food

tasted like poison but that day it tasted delicious because

that caramel beauty was all I could think about. We had

showered together and she started touching me. I know

she wanted me but I wasn't in the mood.

"Not today I'm tired." I wore my pyjamas and went into bed.

She joined me and started sniffing. "You haven't forgiven

me right Treet?You're still holding on to what happened

eight years ago.You're still disgusted by me right Treet?"

I looked at her."Where is that coming from?"

She looked at me with tears coursing down her

cheeks."Whenever we make love Treet its no longer the

same.Its not making love to you anymore.Its either having

sex with me or fucking me like some whore.There is no

longer that emotional connection Treet.I can feel it.Now it

has gone to rejection.Since when have you ever been tired

to have sex?Treet no matter how exhausting your day was
you can still have the energy to have sex.Are you seeing
someone? Did you have sex with someone that you're to
tired for me?I saw how happy you were when you get back
from work.I know its not because because of me.Treet I
know I wronged you but I'm sorry.I just want my husband
back.You're no longer the same.This marriage is not the
same anymore. Your love for me is not the same
anymore.I can feel it Treet."She held my hands."I'm sorry

Treet,I'm deeply sorry."

I sighed."You're being paranoid.You're reading too much

into things Angela.I was happy because I won the deal that

I have been fighting for all this while.Get into the covers

you will catch a cold.I'm not cheating on you."I perked her

lips and tucked her in bed.We spooned but my mind wasn't

there.All I was thinking about was her.

10

TREET

Nice to meet you again.

I woke up the following morning with a retard smile on my

face. I surely was going crazy. There was something about

that beauty that made me happy. I even hummed a song

while showering that's how happy I was. Everything in my

life was suddenly becoming positive and I had changed

the way I saw things. Happy days ahead!! I got off the

shower and wore the suit that Angela had chose for me

still humming Happy by Pharell Williams.

"Your mood is on another level today. Make it quick and come have your breakfast." Angela peeped through the door.

I smiled at her. Something I had stopped doing a long time ago. "I will be there in a minute." I fixed my tie, sprayed some cologne and combed my Afro curly hair. I was good to go. I took my briefcase and went downstairs. The breakfast was all greasy, fried

eggs,bacon,sausages,beefsteak sandwiches. My stomach growled because I had a huge appetite. While eating I realised Angela was just having a protein shake and fruit salad.

"And then?Are you on a diet." I asked feasting on my eggs.

She sighed."No not really but I did some

researches.Healthy eating will do good for my womb and I

should also try some herbs they talked about.Going all

natural will help than relying only on medication."

Suddenly I lost my appetite. I wiped my mouth with a napkin. "Don't do this to yourself Angela."

She looked frustrated. "I'm not doing this to myself. I'm doing this for us. I want to have a baby Treet don't you get it. Meet me halfway here. I know you low key want a Junior us too and I wanna give it to you. I want to be the one to give you your first born. The last thing I want is some woman walking in here heavily pregnant claiming its your child and trust me it can happen. As it is the media is

already talking about it, calling me names. Woman will
throw themselves at you just so they could have their way
with you and the next thing they claim they are pregnant. I
don't want that. I know you're a man you get tempted and it
can possibly happen. Yesterday you came in here smiling
like a retard, God knows if it was because of a wo-----"

"Whoa whoa whoa hold up right there. So I ain't allowed to
smile now? I should always be moody. I ain't allowed to
have a good day too? You know what? We are not talking

about this otherwise you will ruin my day which haven't even started yet.I'm leaving.You can eat grass for all I care.Its your choice and once you put your mind onto something no one can convince you otherwise.You behave like a dog off the leash,sprinting right straight into traffic."

I took my briefcase and walked out leaving her shouting my name.

I wasn't about to let her ruin my day.I thought of that beauty again and I was back to my happy place.I walked

into my building and greeted everyone from the first floor to the last. They were all surprised with my jolly mood because I normally nodded in response to their greetings. I did a Michael Jackson slide while going to my office and I heard my PA laughing, ummm well.

She walked in all smiles. She was an elderly woman who knew how to get things done and I was planning to promote her.

"Good morning Mr Jackson. Here is your latte just the way

you like it"

I smiled."Good morning Monica. Ain't you the best."

She sat down. "I know I am.Well I came to remind you that

I won't be in today and the following two weeks."

I frowned at the thought of her being absent.She knew

what and when things needed to be done that I didn't have

the worry of crosschecking. "Ohh Christmas holiday?"

She nodded."Don't worry the Human resources

department already have someone to cover up for me.She

knows her things so don't be worried."

I smiled."Do I look that worried."

She nodded laughing. "That worried."

"Well can you blame me.You know your things around here

and you always get your job done what am I going to do

without you.I just hope this person who is covering you

knows her job."

"She does.And ohh congratulations on winning the deal

with the AllHope insurance."

I smiled."TJ always wins."I winked."How is my day looking
by the way."

She stood."Well you have golf with Mr Ferguson late in the
afternoon."

I frowned."Ahhh cancel that and tell them some
convincing excuse.I can't spend the whole day under the
sun with old men."

She chuckled."Ok that will be all for today. You just have
to check on your constructors so that we give AllHope the

best building ever."

I nodded. "I will be on it but I'm glad I have some time to

breathe today."

She gathered her files and walked to the door.

"And yea it's good to have you back Mr Jackson."

I looked at her curiously. "I have always been here."

She shrugged. "Yes you have been here but you have been

absent. Today however you're focused, determined and you

seem happier. Its a good start. I saw the MJ slide you

did."We both laughed and she closed the door.

Maybe I was going crazy. I saw that lady once but already

people were noticing how jolly i wa.Who does that?Who

gets so much happy after seeing a person once that too

from afar.I didn't even know her and here I was literally

going retarded.

"Hello Treet." Someone brought me back to reality. I

swung my chair around only to be met by a woman

wearing a skimpy outfit and too much makeup. Don't tell

me she was the one covering for Monica.

"Hello Treet. My name is Sarah Ballard I'm the one cove---"

I raised my hand, stopping her from talking. "First of all we

are not friends I'm Mr Jackson or sir to you not Treet. I

know you're the one covering for Monica I don't need

much info about you. You can leave I will call you when I

need something."

"Ok sir." She walked out with a tail between her legs. I didn't

like forward people and I had a tendency of putting them in

their place. Man did she had to spray before coming into my office.

I walked to the balcony to get some fresh air because I couldn't stand that woman's perfume. Anyway watching the busy city was something I enjoyed doing. Later on I decided to meet with my team and they were coming up with a great plan. Not that I was sure of it because that wasn't my field but it sounded promising. I made a mental note to hire another expert to confirm if things were

coming together. I wanted the AllHope project to be perfect. It was lunchtime before I knew it and I took my car keys and drove down the street to that Rodeo downtown restaurant in hopes that I would see her again. I went and sat on my table and waited. I ordered a simple meal but I didn't eat it because I was disappointed. She didn't come. Maybe she was a figment of my imagination or I had started hallucinating so as to overcome my own sorrow. People deal with these things differently and

maybe that was me hallucinating so as to cope with my miserable life. I mean how can a real person make me that happy without even talking to me, without even trying. Stay positive TJ. My inner voice shouted and I smiled again. If it was my hallucination then so be it. I was happy in a long time after all. I paid my bill and walked feeling rejuvenated again. I drove back to work and Sarah followed me the moment I walked inside the office. Two weeks with her were going to be a headache I could sense that.

"And then what is it?I didn't call you " I said sounding annoyed.

She came to my side and was all over me.She was literally suffocating me with her cleavage."Ok I have some files to show you."

I arched my eyebrow looking at her.I knew what she was playing at."You're in my personal space right now.Move away will you."

"Ohh I'm sorry." She started explaining. Well she was good

expect the fact that she wanted me to fuck her. It was that obvious.

While she was at it, the door opened and my dear wife walked in.

"Hey get off my man." She shouted.

"Angela what are you doing here?" I asked looking

surprised because she didn't tell me she was coming for

lunch and to top that lunch was long over.

"So I came with lunch for my husband only for me to find

some bitch all over him.You're even entertaining her because you don't seem bothered by her boobs which are all over your face.Is she the bitch that have been making you smile lately.And you girly I will show you today.Next time you will think twice before messing with my man."

Before I knew it she attacked Sarah grabbing her hair and Sarah screamed. It was chaos inside and it didn't help that she left the door open.People were peeping taking pictures and videos.I was too shocked to move fast but

when I did I managed to stop the cat fight. I separated them from each other Sarah didn't have her wig on and she was holding some of Angela's hair in her hands. While Angela on the other side had bruises and she was crying because she lost a nail.

"Sarah you can leave. I will get back to you later." I said firmly and she walked out with her wig in her hands.

I locked the door and activated the sound proof but hey the damage was already done anyway.

"What's this madness Angela. What's this hood rat

behavior. What's wrong with you?" I shouted.

She laughed sarcastically. "No what's wrong with you. Is

she the bitch you have been sleeping with. Is she the slut

who has been making you smile huh...huh? Tell me

Treet. Where did you fuck her in this office, at this couch, at

that table.. Where huh where?" She shouted back.

To say I was angry is an understatement. I just couldn't

understand how Angela's mind worked really. Who in their

right state of mind causes a chaos at their husband's

place of work?

"You're testing me Angela McKop and I swear I'm close to

reaching my limit. You can't just walk in here and throw

accusations, worse of all attacking people. Are you on

drugs huh? Leave right now, I can't even stand you." I

pushed her out of the door and locked it.

I was frustrated I just gulped down my Scotch and

gnashed my teeth while feeling the burning sensation. I

had started my day in a very good mood and things did a massive turnaround thanks to Angela. When it was time to knock off, I gave Sarah some money. I know it wasn't the best way to apologize but she needed her face to be fixed from all the claw marks she got from Angela and it looked like she needed another wig. I just gave her all the cash I had on me and said I was sorry then walked out with my workers giving me nasty stares. When I went to the parking lot the reporters were waiting for me. Sometimes it sucks

living under the spotlight. I refused to comment and drove off to one of my bachelor pad in Calabasa there was no way I was going back home to Angela. I would lose my goddamn mind. Thank God the pad had everything I needed so upon arrival I switched off my phone and went to take a shower. I ordered from some nearby Chinese restaurant, ate and then slept. The following morning I went to work and gave strict orders to the security not to allow Angela inside. The last thing I wanted was drama. I

didn't have much to do at the company because I had
people to do things for me so by lunchtime I knocked off. It
was time to face Angela

I was more calmer and less angry.

When I arrived home. She ran to me.

"I'm sorry Treet about yesterday. I just lost control. I...listen

Treet." I walked away without saying a word to her. Talking

some sense into Angela was a waste of breathe. She ran

after me and I slammed the door on her face. Serves her

right. When I switched on my phone I had tones of missed calls from mom and Angela.

I called mom.

"Treet are you trying to give me a heart attack. What is this thing I'm seeing on the internet? Are you cheating on Angela now? Bringing whores to your office, your place of work. Do you know the kind of image this brings on Jackson constructions? Are you trying to send me to an early grave?" She shouted.

I sighed."I found a cardiologist for you mom in case you have a heart attack or panic attack."I dropped the call and made a mental note to look for the best cardiologist for her or she would continue to use her heart problems to trap me.I decided to hit my indoor gym to blow off some steam.Once again Angela tried to apologize and talk to me but I ignored her ass.I just didn't have the energy for her.

"Could you make something for me Vanessa.A snack maybe?" I said to my chef while in the kitchen.

Angela came in running. "No don't worry Vanessa I'm on
it.I will make a snack for him.You can continue doing
whatever you were doing."

"Vanessa make me a snack right now." I said firmly and
walked out leaving Angela embarrassed. I'm not the one
who want to show his marriage problems to everyone but
Angela was getting on my nerves lately.

"Babe can we talk.I can't handle the silent treatment
anymore.Please Treet." She said.

The day went on and I continued ignoring her. At night she tried touching me. I mean like seriously after everything. I walked out of our bedroom and went to the guestroom. I know I acted like a woman but you will understand if you have a wife like Angela. Days passed and we barely talked. It was either one word answers from me or nothing at all. It was the Christmas season and my family invited me for the traditional Christmas festive week. That meant meeting up with Tyrone.

"Ohh I'm sorry I can't come dad." I said to my dad who was talking to me over the phone.

He sighed. "This is the eighth year without you on

Christmas Treet. We are family and you're always coming

up with excuses. I know you and Tyrone--"

I interjected. "Dad I have a lot of work to do. The family

company is in my hands. The entire company depends on

me so I can't come. Angela will come in my place that is if

she is interested."

"But Treet--"

"Look Dad I gotta go. I have an incoming call." I lied and
dropped the call.

I talked to Angela about going to the festive week. She was
reluctant about it and I convinced her because I really
needed to breath.

"But you won't be there Treet." She said. "I know we are not
in good terms right now but it will be so awkward if you're
not there and I will be all alone."

"My family will be there and nothing will be awkward."

By evening our chauffeur drove her to my parents' place. I

could finally breathe. You know Kevin from Home Alone

when he finally realized he was actually home alone, how

he ran around the house screaming in happiness. That

was me. A grown ass man running around in

excitement. Thank God I had just sent all my helpers on a

holiday. I received a call while jumping on the bed. Believe

me I was really jumping on it. We all have our crazy

moments. Cut this guy some slack.

"Hello Mr Ferguson how are you doing?" I said catching my

breath. We talked and he invited me to the yacht party. Its

not like I had anything to do on the Christmas eve anyway

so I agreed to come. On the day of the party well Mr

Ferguson had ordered a limousine to pick up each

guest. Extravagant for no reason if you ask me. I went to

the party and well it was just another boring party.

"I'm glad you honoured my invitation Mr Jackson and

thank you for gracing us with your presence." We

exchanged a handshake with Mr Ferguson.

"How are you Mr Ferguson and this party is amazing. I

couldn't miss it for anything." I lied. Of course I could miss it

for anything. It was fucking boring.

"So enjoy Mr Jackson. I have to go and welcome Ms

Brown. She just arrived." He smiled and I turned to see who

he was talking about. My eyes landed on the caramel

beauty and my heart danced. Finally I got to see her again. I

watched how the dress hugged her thickhourglass body
nicely and my blood heated.I watched her every move,how
she carried herself and interacted with the others.I found
my happiness again.I saw the other vultures were all over
her and waiting to have her but I wasn't going to let
them.When she went to a secluded place I followed her
and we had our episode there.She left me wanting more.I
was a married man.Yes it was wrong but felt so right.
Good thing she left her shoes.My caramel Cinderella.

I laughed at my silly thoughts.

"Hey wassup Tom.Can you get me every information on

Ms Brown who was one of the VIP guests at Mr

Ferguson's party yesterday. I want the information

ASAP.Where she lives and everything about her in

general.I want it right now." Tom was my PI.When I

returned home from the party.I called him first before

doing anything else.Like always he didn't disappoint.

"Majesty Brown...the name sounds familiar"I was

impressed with everything about her. An independent woman who was making a name for herself. That was a turn on for me. She was single. A cherry on the top. I took my car keys and waited for a moment thinking about what I was about to do. Is she worth jeopardizing your marriage like this? My conscience asked.

Fuck it what marriage? You need some fun too.

Well fun it is. I drove to her apartment and when I walked in and our eyes met her desire for me was clear in her eyes

and we didn't waste time. We had our mind blowing sex. It

felt like we have done this before. Her touch was familiar

and there was this connection I can't put in words. I felt it

and that moment I knew it was going to be more than just

casual sex for me even though all she wanted was

fun. There was something about her that I couldn't put my

finger on. Angela called and I had to leave. Talk about

ruining moments. I found her home with Tyrone.

"Hy bro. I just had to drop her off everyone was drunk and

she was afraid of driving long distances. Nothing

happened I swear." He explained.

"I didn't ask." I said coldly and went upstairs to take a

shower. Her scent was all over me. In as much as my

marriage was a mess with Angela I still respected her

enough for her not to know I cheated on her. I'm a jerk I

know.

"Your mom prepared some cookies for you." She started

narrating the events that occurred at my rents' house and I

wasn't even listening to her all I have been thinking of was

Majesty. Her moans, how she vibrated when she

cummed, how she held onto me for dear life. I found myself

smiling like a retard and Angela was looking at me

suspiciously.

"Are you even listening to me." She asked.

I sighed. "Yea, the cookies are tasty." Not more than

Majesty's cookie.

"Ohh and Merry Christmas. Your present is somewhere in

our bedroom." Yes I was a fan of Christmas but I didn't go all out like buying Christmas tree and decorations. Those things are interesting only when you have a stable home and family. She ran upstairs excitedly and came back with same level of excitement.

"Thanks babe you bought me the diamond earrings I have been eyeing for a while." She tried to kiss me but I fed her a cookie instead, stopping her from kissing me.

I smiled. "You're welcome. Let's make some more

cookies.Its Christmas after all."She nodded and we went to the kitchen to make a mess.

A few days passed and I was missing Jesty like crazy.I

tried calling her but she never picked up my calls,heck I

even went to her place but she wasn't there.I wanted to

spend New year with her but ended up spending with

Angela. Sex with Angela was just sex.I know its wrong in

so many angles for me to say this but I actually felt like I

was cheating on Majesty with Angela.Ridiculous right.A

week after new year I gathered enough courage and went to her company. Funny thing it wasn't even that far from mine.

Seeing her lightened up my day,I was happy.I was content.We had our mind blowing office sex,that too was just on some other level.

"Wow." I said looking shocked when she told me to leave after our mind blowing session. I mean that's the line guys normally use.

She looked at me fixing her skirt."What Treet?You got

what you came here for.Sex right, now its time to leave I

have somewhere to go."

I chuckled shaking my head."I feel used really Jesty does it

have to be like that.We can't even talk like a small talk,just

fuck each other and leave.Just like that?"

She frowned."What?You want a closing prayer."

I was speechless. She sighed."Ok Treet let's set some

ground rules here.First of all we are using each other no

hiding about that.You're married but you want me for sex

fine because I just want sex from you too.I'm not

expecting more.So with that in mind there is no need for

some aftersex pillowtalks and unnecessarily calling each

other or meeting if its not about sex.Otherwise if we do the

don'ts it will send a wrong message about what we are

having. So either you agree to this or not.Your choice."

I sighed."Fine.Whatever you want Jesty."

She folded her arms. "Now its time for you to leave people

will suspect."

I tried to perk her lips but she blocked me with her hands.

"That is for your wife"

I sighed and walked out. When I went back to my place I

found out I had an appointment with one of the best

cardiologist in town. I drove to her place immediately and I

booked on behalf of mom. I wasn't about to lose her but

most importantly I wanted her to stop using her health on

her advantage.

"My doctor is fine Treet. I don't need another cardiologist."

She protested.

"Yes son I don't think that is necessary." Dad intervened. I

could sense some nervousness but I rubbed it off.

"Come on guys this one is the best in town. I can finally

sleep not having to worry about mom's heart so let's go

before we miss the appointment." They were reluctant but

I insisted and they ended up agreeing. I drove them to see

her myself and mom immediately went to do the checkup

when we arrived. She called all of us to her office after the scan results came out.

"So looking at your mother's scans I realized there is nothing wrong with her in fact she is as strong as an ox."

She said.

"But the other doctor diagnosed her with a heart problem.

It was even a family thing. My grandma died of a heart attack. Right dad?" I looked at him, he was nervous.

She lean back on her chair. "Are you sure because there are

no genetic traces of a heart problem in her. I could have immediately picked it if there was."

"S-so maybe it was a misdiagnosis." Mom stammered.

"No doctor can misdiagnose such a big thing. You can't mistake a panic attack for a heart attack its too big not to notice. And the funny thing is we didn't find anything in your system that indicates that you were taking medication for your so called heart problem."

I looked at both my parents. "Thank you for your time Mrs

Hayes. My secretary will send you your payment."

I stormed out when I realised I have been taken for a fool

again. They both ran after me to the parking lot.

"Please wait Tree. We can explain. Please son listen to

me. I can explain. I did this for you Tree, for your own

good." Mom said.

I looked at her with tears in my eyes. "You do this for

me? You lied to me. You both lied to me and you're saying

you did this for me. Do my happiness even matter to

you? For eight years, fucken eight years I have been worried about you mom. I was scared that one day I might wake up and told that your heart failed you. I had emotional distress when you know you were as healthy as they come. Sometimes I couldn't even sleep but you could because you knew you were as strong as an ox. You trapped me and tricked me into staying with Angela when you knew very well that I wasn't happy and I would never be happy. Now you have the audacity of telling me you did

this for me,for my own good at that matter.Do you guys
even love me,do I matter to you.I have been living only to
please you and I didn't ask for much.I just wanted you to
consider my happiness too but no to you Treet is a
scapegoat and a fool to be taken for a rid.As for you
dad,what can I say?You knew everything dad.Even now
you know I'm not happy but you continued lying to me."I
went into my car and drove off leaving them.I wanted to go
to legs and liquor but found myself parked outside

Majesty's apartment. The guard didn't give me a hard time so I rang the bell and she opened then frowned upon seeing me.

"We don't have an appointment Treet." She said blocking the door.

I hugged her. "I know and I'm sorry for breaking the rules like this but I just found myself here. Just hold me Majesty. Please just hold me."

"Ok ok get in." She locked the door and we went to her

bedroom.

"I'm sorry for coming to you like this but I just found

myself here." At this moment. I was crying. I know men

don't cry, but crying doesn't necessarily mean you're weak.

"I shouldn't be doing this with my flings at all but you're

making it so difficult for me." She wiped my face and

hugged me. That's all I wanted to pour my heart out.

I wailed. "It hurts so much Majesty. They lied to me, it hurts."

She kept on rubbing my back. "Shhh shhh I know it

hurts. Stop crying and face it head on."

11

MAJESTY

An act of love can warm a frozen heart.

Looking at him crying like that, I felt for him. It was clear he was going through a lot but that's karma for you. That bitch is always watching and hell she doesn't forget the address. Seeing a man cry is a rare and uncomfortable sight. I didn't know what to do or where to start comforting him. I kept on rubbing his back and surprisingly he fell asleep. Sometimes you have to be a mother to this gender

they need it trust me.They act all tough outside but in the
inside they are just big babies who need nothing but
mother's love.Us woman we were born nurturers and
emotional beings sometimes it is our duty to care for this
other gender because caring is in us.I removed his shoes
and tucked him under the covers.It was kinda cold.Yes he
wronged me in so many ways but I just had to be the
bigger person especially at this point when he needed a
shoulder to cry on.Poor thing!

I started to prepare dinner since it was already a minute past six. By the time he wakes up I was sure he was going to be super hungry. The lamb casserole was in the oven while I slapped some steak on the grill. The aroma of caramelized onion and tomato purée filled the room. The roasted pork shoulder was ready so as the garlic fried rice. After grilling the steak, I set everything on the table. It has been long since I cooked but I still had it in me. I smiled looking at my wonderful work. I made some hot

chocolate and went upstairs. He was snoring lightly. He

looked so peaceful while sleeping.

"Wakey, wakey, sleepy head." I shook him lightly.

He looked the other way. "Just five more minutes." "You

need to eat and leave. Wake up Treet." I shook him more

vigorously. He woke up sulking and frowning. What a baby.

"I'm still sleepy." He complained.

I sighed. "I know that but you need to eat and leave. You

cannot spend your night here." He wasn't my only fling. I

had plans. This Mexican dude was coming that night.

"Here drink this. There is a new toothbrush and towel

somewhere in my cupboard. You can use that. Make it

quick and come have something to eat." I gave him the

cup.

"I don't feel like eating." He stood up from the bed.

I folded my arms. "Excuse me Mr. I slaved in the kitchen for

you and hell you're eating. You're not leaving this house

without eating."

He chuckled."Ok ma'am."

I stormed out of the room angry.I can't believe he wanted to turn down my food.Cooking was never my passion and I slaved in that kitchen for his ass.He came downstairs and sat down.

"Wow smells so good.I can't believe I didn't want to eat just a few minutes earlier."

I rolled my eyes."Wash your hands."He looked surprised when I helped him wash his hands with warm water.He

said grace and we ate in total silence.

"It was amazing. Thank you for everything. I know I crossed the boundaries but thank you for opening your doors for me."

"You're welcome and umm you should leave now. I have someone I'm seeing tonight." I said bluntly.

He looked down with sadness written all over his face. "Ohhh okay another fling?"

"Not that its any of your business but yes I have an

appointment with someone." I took the dishes and placed them in the dishwasher.

"So I will leave you to it." He stood up and took his car keys.

I felt bad. I knew he wasn't ok and just asking him to leave

like that wasn't right. I was a good listener and maybe just

listening to him was going to help him. Sometimes we

need someone who just listens and tell us its going to be

ok.

"Treet wait." I said.

He stopped turning the doorknob and looked at me."You can sleep over here.Only if you want to."I said.

"You don't have to change your plans for me." He said.

"I already did the moment you knocked on my door.I will tell him not to come." I wasn't planning to do this or getting involved in each other's personal lives but I just couldn't stand it seeing him leave all sad like that.I might have been an ice cold bitch but at the end of the day I was a human being with feelings.

He smiled lazily and came back. "Thank you so much." He

hugged me and I hugged him back.

"Let's go sit on the couch and you tell me what's going

on. Someone once said talking helps so you might feel less

burdened. I'm a good listener. However this will be the first

and last time Treet. I don't do this with my flings. You were

looking all sad and shit so I thought I could just help. Dn't

get the wrong message. I hope I have made myself clear." I

said firmly and he nodded.

We went and sat down and he began to narrate his story.I

felt for him and what he was going through because I was

once there so I know better.It still couldn't forget how my

father chose not to report my rape case because the

Jackson family sponsored him.He didn't support me as

my father and he let me down.My mother too chose her

marriage over me.She wanted me to be sent to the rurals

to suffer in order to save her marriage.When the people

who are supposed to be there for you do not give you the

comfort and love you need, it hurts, especially when it is your own parents. Now the funny thing is the situation had vice versa it was his turn to feel what I felt. Karma is such a bitch.

"I know how it feels to be let down by the people you rely on the most. Especially your parents. I don't have anything much to say to you but just know that it will be ok one day and this too shall pass. Every problem has a solution so do not worry. I'm not saying go and forgive your parents right

now.You're allowed to be angry especially after all the lies
and tricks they used but being angry doesn't get you
anywhere. They are your parents and one day you're bound
to forgive them.Forgiveness doesn't change the past but it
sure does enlarges the future.You will have to forgive
them."

You're a hypocrite.My inner voice shouted.Here I was
preaching about forgiveness but I couldn't forgive my
father for killing my mother,I couldn't forgive my uncles for

taking everything away from us,I couldn't forgive Justin for what he did to me,heck I couldn't forgive him and his twin for what they did to me.I just couldn't. I know its crazy that I was sleeping with him after everything he did and I hated him at the same time.Self-contradiction at its best,I know.

He kept quiet for a while.He looked at me like he was searching for something in my eyes.I tried to keep up with the eye contact but failed miserably.I hated it when he challenged me like that.He was trying to destroy the walls I

built around myself and I didn't like it one bit.

"Majesty do I know you from somewhere? Have we ever met? Please be honest with me." Out of the blue he asked.

God let's hope he doesn't remember. I said inwardly. "No I don't think we have ever met before. Or maybe I resemble someone you know. Other than that we have never met"

He sighed. "There is something about you. Whenever I'm with you there is this connection I fail to understand. There is this thing pulling us to each other. I know you feel it but

you ignore it. Anyway I heard what you said but its so
difficult for me Jesty to just forget how my own parents
took me for a ride. I hate them right now. I'm so angry
Jesty. How could they do that to their own son. I'm their
son. Doesn't my happiness matter. I'm so angry Jesty I
can't help it."

I looked at him sternly. "Your anger is justified Treet but
understand this, anger is like a rocking chair, it gives you
something to do but doesn't get you anyway. It is toxic to

you and no one else. I know best. Holding grudges,

anger, hatred all those bad feelings will push you back in

life. You said they don't consider your happiness, which is

true considering all that they did but understand this is

your own choice to be happy. Being happy doesn't mean

everything is perfect sometimes it means you have chosen

to see beyond the imperfections. Choose the latter

tree, choose to see beyond the imperfections. Your

parents or your family do not determine your

happiness.You choose to be happy.Forgive them.Whatever

they do next

ignore their shit and do things that makes you
happy."

He smiled."From now on I will see things from your

angle.Where were you all this time?"

I smiled back."I was always here.I'm feeling kinda

sleepy.Let's go to bed."

We went to my bedroom and I wore my pyjamas.

He frowned."Remove them."

"And then.Why should I?We are not having sex today

Treet."

He ignored me and removed my pyjamas. He tucked me to

bed naked like that.And he spooned me from behind.I felt

somehow.The last time I was cuddled was with Justin and

now he was doing it and it was making me feel things.

From the hugging and crying,it was creeping into my heart

and I hated it.

"Don't think too much.Go to sleep." He kissed my head.

I finally drifted to sleep and I didn't even had any

nightmares of a baby crying. For the first time in forever I

didn't take any sleeping pills or wake up in the middle of

the night panting and sweating. I slept like a baby.The

following morning when I woke up he wasn't in bed and I

was kinda of pissed.He should have told me that he was

leaving.Douche.After insulting him silently he walked in

wearing his trousers only and holding a tray.Well maybe I

was too quick to judge him. Did he really have to look that sexy though.

"I couldn't leave without thanking you for your hospitality yesterday. So I made you breakfast. I don't know what you like exactly so I made a little bit of everything. Good morning." He perked my lips and placed the tray besides me.

"Eew morning breathe." I said covering my mouth.

"I don't care about it." He French kissed me and I let him.

"Now have your breakfast. I will leave after you're done eating." He sat down.

I took a bite on the bacon.It was heaven. "By any chance are you a chef."

He chuckled. "I just know my way around the kitchen.Finish up."

I ate everything because it was amazing.

"Done now you can leave."

"Yaaa I'm leaving but tomorrow I'm coming to fuck the

daylights out of you. It took me a lot to restrain myself

yesterday and even now" He wore his T-shirt.

I got off the bed. "Whatever that makes you sleep at night."

He left and I went to take a shower. Then I decided to call

that Mexican dude. I was horny and I couldn't take

advantage of Tree. He was emotionally unstable and I

hated having sex with people whose emotions were all

over the place. They catch feelings. Anyway the guy was

angry because I told him not to come yesterday but since

he wanted the cookie so bad he was on his way. When I heard the door bell I literally ran to the door and opened for him.

"Hey." I said

"Hello." He replied and we started kissing.

His excitement matched mine and I hoped that he knew what he was doing. Man I was wrong. He had zero foreplay.

"Hey hey hey stop rubbing my clit like maaaad. Are you a DJ or something?" I was so pissed. I mean who does

that.He apologized and we proceeded.My God I was so disappointed. His strokes were so weak.He couldn't even use his big member. When he thought he was making me feel good.I was actually worried about Treet,if he had arrived home safely and stuff.I was even thinking about what I was going to have for dinner.

"Do you like this.Do you like what I'm doing to you." He said tickling me.

I frowned and pushed him off me."What the fuck are you

doing?"

"Babe we were having a good thing going. We were having a good time." He said.

"A good time? Man your strokes are so weak. I thought you were going to show me some salsa dance moves you Mexican guys do but yohh. Get out of my house man." I threw him his clothes.

He clicked his tongue. "Bitch."

"Yaah nehh. Now get the fuck out. Who said I wanted to

laugh. You came all the way here to tickle me." When he was done putting his clothes on I pushed him out of the door. I was so frustrated. A lot was on my mind and the sexual frustration wasn't making things easier for me. I ended up going for a jog that's how pissed I was.

"Mind if I join you?" Some nigger said running besides me.

"Its a free country." I continued jogging.

When I was tired I sat on the road benches and he sat besides me.

"Here." He gave me a water bottle.

"Thanks." I drank the water, panting and he was looking at me. "You spiked it?"

He laughed. "No. I'm TyJ." He offered a handshake. I looked at him hoping maybe we could attract and he could help with my sexual frustration but there was nothing. I didn't feel attracted to him in any way.

I shook his hand. "I'm leaving." I stood up.

He chuckled. "Hey wait up. What can I do to get this

beautiful lady's number?"

I kept quiet for a while looking at him. "I'm still waiting for

the punchline because I'm sure that was a joke right."

He laughed scratching his head. He looked so cute. "I

haven't been in the game for a while."

I laughed too. "I can see that. I'm Majesty by the way and

that's all you're getting. Thanks for the water." I gave him

his water bottle and jogged back home. I could feel his

eyes on me and I knew he was following me. Stalker!

The moment I walked in Petty called.

"Hey Pee wassup." I said panting.

"Eew girl were you having sex." He said sounding
disgusted.

"You have little faith in me. I was jogging. So Peter why did
you call. I'm sure this ain't a casual call seeing that you
used the company phone." He knew when I called him
Peter I will be talking business.

"Ohhh yea umm since you couldn't meet T Jackson

yesterday. He wasn't in the city but he is back and he wants to meet up. He has a gallery exhibit tonight. You can meet him there. I will text you the address."

"Sure thing." I dropped the call and threw myself on the bed. Damn people in the movies make it look like jogging is easy. I was idle all day long, contemplating about calling Treet or not. I threw my phone away and went downstairs to make myself a smoothie. While I was at it my doorbell rang.

"Eth long time buddy." I literally jumped on him and he swung me around.

"Hey cupcake. How have you been?" He said sounding low.

"And then? What's wrong?" I cupped his face.

He smiled nervously. "Let's go sit down."

We sat in awkward silence for a while.

"Ok that's it. What's going on.?" I asked impatiently.

"Ummm I have a baby Maj. Look it was one silly mistake. I

just..I didn't mean for it to happen but the baby is here. She

just left the baby at my doorstep.I did a DNA and it's mine."

"Wait wait wait.You don't have to explain all that to me

ok.Where is the baby?" I asked.

"In the car." He said.

"Are you insane Eth?You left the baby in the car?" I took his

car keys and ran outside.The baby was wailing in the car

and I opened the door.My own fears came back again.The

baby reminded me of Gift,only that this one was a she.I

felt my tears coursing down my cheeks as I picked her up.

I started shushing her."Pretty please stop crying."

I looked at Ethan who couldn't stop smiling.I smiled back
at him with tears on my face.

"How old is she?What's her name?Did you buy her some
milk?" I asked.

"She said she is 4weeks.She doesn't have a name yet.And
yes I bought some milk and fed her but I failed to remove
the diaper." He scratched his head.

I laughed."Haa that explains the smell.Bring me her things

and I will change her."

He rushed outside and I changed the baby. Once I was

done she stopped crying.

"Ok give me her milk.She needs to be fed."

He rushed outside again and came back.

"Ohhh crap Eth, this milk is for 5months olds not a month

old.We should go buy her some food and clothes right

now." I ran to my room and wore my white vest, grey

shorts and white sneakers.It was already 6pm.He drove to

Rodeo Collection shopping mall. We bought her clothes to change at that moment because I didn't like what she had on. I wrapped her with some white and pink baby blankets neatly.

"She is so pretty, was her mom Chinese. I mean look at her eyes."

He nodded laughing. "And you're fucking Asians now. I just hope she doesn't demand to eat rats and dogs when she grows up." We both laughed.

"Ok let's go shop for her now."

He held the baby, while I picked clothes and everything necessary for her including her food.

"Ohh excuse me." I turned and some lady was smiling looking at me holding baby rompers.

"Yes what is it?" I asked politely.

"Umm I'm having my first baby and I can see you already have yours. I wanted to ask your opinion on the baby rompers. Which one should I go for?" She asked looking

excited.

"Umm they have the age tags here. And I also think you

should go for the color white its universal for both genders

and even though white is too OCD its pretty on the kids." I

explained.

"Ohh thank you. Can I see your baby."

"Sure." We all gathered around her admiring the baby.

"Ohh Angela here you're. I have been looking for you

everywhere."

I recognized that voice and my heart pounded furiously against my chest. I looked up and our eyes met. He looked surprised just as I was.

"Oh baby come look at their baby. She is so pretty. What's her name?" The wife said excitedly.

I bit my lower lip and looked at Ethan. "Umm her name is Girly."

"Ohh Girly that's a nice name. By the way I'm Angela and this is my husband Treet. We are having our first baby." I

looked at Treet and he looked at me not knowing what to say.

Its not like I didn't know he was married but something in me felt pained.What hurts more was that I remembered this bitch.She was the one who butchered me years back.He actually married her.They must have been so much in love.

"I'm Ethan and this is the mother of my child Majesty."

Ethan lied after realizing that no one was saying a word

but I was exchanging a not so friendly eye contact with

Treet and things were getting awkward.

We finally broke the eye contact. "Nice to meet you and congratulations on the baby." I said.

"Ohh thank you. We found out not so long ago. You know what. We can exchange numbers and maybe you can help me with some ideas on the nursery and all the baby stuff."

She said excitedly.

Treet sighed. "I don't think that...--"

She interjected. "Baby please come on. Please

Majesty. Please your Majesty."

She gave me her phone and I didn't have a choice. I gave

her my number. She called me.

"That's my number. I will call you."

"Sure. Umm Eth. Let's go and check something umm for

Girly."

Treet's presence was suffocating me. We left and I could

feel Ethan's eyes on me.

"Out with it." I said.

"You know him don't you?" He said with his eyebrow

arched.

"Who?" I said looking at Girly, well I will call her Girly.

"You know who I'm talking about." He said.

"Ohh yea. I know him we met at some party. I can say he is

my acquaintance or something. Well in business." I am a

bad liar. I know.

"It took me two minutes to see that its more than just

being acquaintances between you two."

"Eth can we please not talk about this." I said avoiding eye

contact with him praying that he doesn't remember who

Treet really was.

"I know you're an adult and you make your own decisions

but Majesty he is married and his wife is pregnant for

crying out loud!" He literally barked.

"What's with you? You did say I'm an adult." I asked.

"You don't get it do you, you just don't get it right." He

sighed.

"Get what Eth?" He kept quiet. I sighed. "Drive home

Eth. Girly needs to be fed and I have to go somewhere

tonight." I said.

"To see another fuck buddy." He said with his eyes

focused on the road. Did I just see him clenching his jaws?

"It's a business meeting Eth. You have little faith in me." I

looked outside.

We arrived at home and I made Girly's milk and fed her.

"I'm sorry for lashing at you like that." He apologized.

"Its ok.Let me put Girly to bed.Did you tell the rents about

her." I asked as I carefully lay her on my bed.

"No I haven't told them yet and by the way I like the name

Girly." He smiled.

"It just came to my mind." I smiled back.

"Why haven't you told them yet?" I asked.

"Because they are going to be so disappointed in me." He

sat down.

"You're a grown ass man Eth they will understand. Look

umm let me prepare for the exhibit tonight. I really have to

go. You and Girly can stay for the night I will be back in no

time." He nodded. I went to the guests room and took a

quick shower.

I wore a simple black Givenchy empire waist dress with a

Chinese collar and leather strapped Prada heels.

"I will be back before you know it. There is some food

somewhere in the kitchen or you can order." I perked his

cheek and kissed Girly then rushed out. I wasn't in the mood for driving so I just called an uber and it dropped me off at the gallery. The work was exquisite and I could earn some real money if I could license his work.

"I love that painting very much." A familiar voice said. I

turned and it was TyJ the dude I jogged with earlier.

I laughed lightly. "You're sending some stalker vibes you

know. If I didn't know better I would say you're following

me."

He smiled."Maybe.What is this beautiful lady doing

here?Your Majesty."He did a dramatic be and I laughed.

"Umm I'm here to meet the artist behind this work." I said

admiring the beauty.

"Hmm do you know him?" He asked looking sternly at me.

"No I don't. Typical artist don't want their pictures taken

but he is really good.This is beautiful." I said.

One elderly man came and shook hands with him and I

was confused."You're really good Mr Jackson.This is

beautiful."

My jaws dropped.

"Thank you." He said and looked at me smiling.

"Ohh my God this is embarrassin. Why didn't you tell me all

this while that you're the person I'm here for?" I covered

my mouth laughing.

He laughed too. "There was going to be no fun, had I told

you that I'm TJackson. Anyone I'm Tyrone Jackson."

"Majesty Browns. Wait you look familiar." I said.

"Yea I'm sure you know my twin Treet Jackson the
business giant."

Not again God no no please.

"You're Treet's twin." That was a rhetorical question. I was
speechless for a while. I didn't understand why fate was
playing me like this bringing my past back to me. I pushed
those thoughts aside, this was business.

"Umm I'm from Majesty Agency and we are interested in
your work. Umm we could license your work and sell it to

the highest bidder or a classier, use it as an inspiration for a clothing line. Here is my card if you're interested, you can give me a call."

He kept on gawking at me. "Can you repeat what you said."

I gave him a confused look.

"I love the way your lips move when you talk."

I just chuckled and shook my head. He was really Treet's twin.

He smiled. "Anyway I'm interested. You know what let's do

this. On our next meeting you come to my studio and see

my work. How about that?"

"No problem just text me the address" I said.

"I have to go."

He smiled and we exchanged a brief, non sexual cheek

kiss and I left. When I arrived home Eth and Girly were fast

asleep. They looked so cute. I took a picture and went

downstairs to eat my dinner which Ethan had left in the

microwave. I was about to join them in bed when Treet

called. I carefully walked out without making noise to avoid waking the father-daughter duo.

I answered. "What is it?"

"I'm outside." He dropped the call. The audacity! I marched outside and indeed he was parked not so faraway from the gate.

"What the fuck are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be cuddling with your pregnant wife?" I half shouted.

"I didn't know she was pregnant. She didn't know either. We

were trying for a baby and it came when we least expected

it. Why didn't you tell me you have a kid and a baby

daddy?" He asked firmly.

"He is my best friend since diapers and that ain't my kid

either. Anyway we don't owe each other any explanation

because this is starting to send some " affair vibes". We

are not in a relationship Treet. You know what let's that's

stop this shit and act like we never met." A lot was going

on in my mind honestly.

He held my waist. "We are not stopping. No way."

"Treet you're going to be a father. Respect your wife

please. Let's just stop" I said panting because his touch just

did wonders to me and I was super horny.

"You and I are not stopping anything. You said I should do

things that makes me happy. I should be selfish for once

and being with you makes me happy. You're my happy

place." With that said he kissed me. We ended up having

sex in the car. This was so wrong on many levels and he

was my first fling who was married but I couldn't resist

him. After he drove off I went to the other bathroom and

wiped myself. When I walked into my bedroom Girly was

crying and Eth was snoring. Father of the century.

I shook my head and woke him up which was a struggle.

"Try to calm her down while I make her bottle." I said and

he pouted, he was really sleepy. Poor thing. "Welcome to

fatherhood buddy."

12

ETHAN

There is a difference between boyfriend and boy friend,

that little space called a friend zone.

"What does Majesty think about you having a baby?How is

she taking it?" My dad shot me a look.

Maj had just dropped Girly and me before going to work.I

had to break the news about Girly to my parents and man

was I on the hot bench.They were happy they had a

granddaughter but unhappy because she was born out of

the wedlock. After being on the hot bench for about an hour or so they finally warmed up to me finally being a father. Now my dad was bringing up the discussion I always avoided.

Mom intervened. "Does Majesty's opinion matter? Its not like she is his girlfriend or wife."

Dad and I exchanged glances without responding to her statement.

"Am I missing something here? Ethan is there something

you're not telling me?" She shot me a look and I swallowed
deeply.

Majesty and I have been friends since diapers. Our parents
were close too. We grew up together and we knew
everything about each other. Being two close friends of the
opposite sex one of us just had to fall in love with the
other. She loves me but she is not in love with me while I
fell in love with her but never got a chance to confess my
feelings hence I was stuck in the friend zone for as long as

I remember. My dad saw through me one day while we were having dinner. He caught me staring at her. From there onwards he kept a close watch on me and how I behaved around Majesty as a result I let the cat out of the bag and told him my true feelings. He advised me to confess my feelings but every time I tried to do so something always came up. The rape first happened, with me partly to blame for leaving her at the party. I gave her time to heal while I was dealing with my own guilty. When I thought she was

ready to accept someone in her life, Justin happened. After Justin she completely changed and became someone so different. She became the Majesty I didn't know. I tried to go through her but failed miserably. I thought during and after Justin's episode it was an eventful time of her life and she needed much time to heal but she changed and became someone so intimidating and cold. I tried telling her how I feel but the fear of rejection got the best of me and I decided to just love her from the sidelines, hoping

that one day maybe she will notice me and we will have our happily ever after or the feelings will fade but none of that happened. I continued loving Majesty with her oblivious to it.

"Answer me Ethan Jaji is there something I'm missing here? Are you and Majesty dating? My mom barked.

I sighed." Mom I'm in love with Majesty. I'm planning to tell her how I feel, being in a relationship with her and maybe wife her later on" There I said it. My dad accepted the love I

had for Majesty and being someone who practically grew up in my family, I thought my mom would actually advise me to confess my feelings to her but when I laid it out there on the table about my feelings for Majesty her reaction was something I never dreamed of.

"Are you insane!" She shouted. Luckily Girly was upstairs with the house help.

I looked at her with surprise written all over my face. Dad was equally surprised.

"Mom I'm talking about Majesty here. Majesty Browns not some whore."

She laughed sarcastically. "What is the difference between Majesty and a whore. They are one and the same thing."

"Excuse me!!! Mom what's wrong with you?" I was enraged.

"Nothing is wrong with me. In fact something is wrong with you. You're in love with Majesty? Don't make me laugh. Look

I accept her as your best friend. That is more than ok for me but someone you're actually in love with now that's

ridiculous."She looked at me like I was crazy.

"What's ridiculous about him being in love with

Majesty.Did you just call your friend's daughter a

whore?Her mom must be turning in her grave." Dad said.

"That is the truth Majesty is a whore and we all know that.I

understand she is a very hard working woman and very

independent.I applaud her for that but have you taken a

look at her social life.How she is living her life lately.When

we moved here she completely lost all her morals and

started sleeping with every Jim and Jack here. Whoring
around like her life dependence on it and now you're telling
me you're in love with her. You actually thought I would
ululate to that." She hissed.

"It's because she is hurting mom. She needs help, mental
help and she is actually using sex as her escape of pain
and loneliness. I can change her. My love can change
her. Somewhere inside Majesty is still there. The one you
used to know." I said.

She scoffed. "Change her? My God where did I go wrong with this child? Open your eyes Ethan. Women like Majesty are the type man use for fun. If you want to love someone and settle down you look for a wife material. Someone worth being called a wife or girlfriend not some used goods. Did you take a moment of thinking about how many men she slept with. Did you?"

I was way beyond pissed. "Have you taken a moment mom to think about how many women I slept with? Don't you

wanna know too? Why do the society place women under a microscope and scrutinize them but letting men get away with everything. I can't believe you mom, of all the people you're judging Majesty harshly like that when you know very well what she have been through."

"Don't get me wrong I love her so much but not to the extent of wanting her to be my daughter in law. Majesty is a whore no need to hide it. No man in his right state of mind would want to marry trash like that, damaged goods

and no mother would want such bad news for their son. Men just use her for fun and then toss her away for the next one." She said scoffing. I seriously couldn't believe my mom. I never expected her to badmouth Majesty like that. I was too shocked to utter a word until Majesty's voice brought me back to reality. I just hoped she didn't hear what mom said.

"Hey I'm back there is nothing to do at work and I just wanted to see Girly before you guys go to your house or

maybe she is staying here." She said looking at mom and my heart pounded. Let's hope she didn't hear what mom said.

Mom smiled. "Ohhh Majesty my girl Girly is staying here for a while well maybe until Ethan finds a good girl who can be a mother to her child and a good wife to him." Mom said and my dad shook his head in disappointment. Well it appeared as if Maj didn't hear mom badmouthing her but she was down for some reason.

"Majesty are you ok." I asked holding her arms and mom frowned.

"Of course she is fine.Right Majesty." Mom said removing my hands from her and dragging me away.I shot her a look but she continued treating me like a lil boy.

"Ohhh umm.Since she is staying here now Ethan can we go and collect her things then drop them here." She said.

"No no no need honey.I will send a helper tomorrow. Ethan and I have something serious to talk about." Mom replied.

"Umm ok.Bye dad,bye Ethan and mom." She walked out.

"What has gotten into you mom huh?What is wrong with you?" I literally barked.

Dad sighed."I understand you're angry Ethan but that is no way to talk to your mother."

I scoffed."I can't believe you,I really can't.What changed about Majesty huh?"

She sucked her teeth."She is not good for you.And I'm doing you a favour.You will thank me one day.I don't ever

wanna hear this Majesty nonsense in my house. Now she is even turning my son against me. Don't even think about being in a relationship with her or hell will freeze. If you want somewhere to release your stress then she is the perfect candidate nothing more than that. We will never have this discussion again." She stormed upstairs.

MAJESTY

Your mother is your mother. Nobody can replace her, nobody should replace her, nobody can do half the

things she does or have done. Nobody can compare to her. Only God can love you more than she does. She is the only one person but she is the person that matters the most. No matter where she is, heaven or earth. Love your mother.

....Majesty is a whore no need to hide it. No man in his right state of mind would want to marry trash like that, damaged goods and no mother would want such bad news for their son. Men just use her for fun and then toss her away for

the next one.....

Her words replayed in my head.I couldn't believe she

actually said that about me.Although it was initially true

how could she badmouth me like that.God knows what

else she said about me.I was hur.Her words cut

deep.When I lost my mother Mrs Jaji came through for me

and played the role of a mother in my life.I honestly

thought she loved me just like a daughter but after I

overheard what she said I started to think otherwise.She

didn't love me, she had no choice but to take me in firstly

because I was Ethan's best friend, secondly because her

husband and my father had a very tight relationship and

thirdly because she wanted to be seen as a good

Samaritan. One way or the other her true colors were going

to show. You don't badmouth people you claim to love and

that too behind their back. If you have a problem with how

your close ones are dealing with their issues you sit down

with them and talk it out not saying terrible things behind

their back. I could sense the bitterness in her voice when she was talking about me. Makanaka once told me that mom as we called her said things about me but I brushed it off and told her that she probably misheard but now I knew she was right. I was hurt and it didn't help that in a few days to come it was my mother's death anniversary. I missed her so much and maybe if she was alive things were not going to spiral out of control like they did and maybe I could have taken a different path to deal with my

pain but she wasn't there to comfort me and I did what I

had to do to lessen my pain and loneliness.

I was supposed to meet Tyrone later that day but with the

way I was feeling I rescheduled the meeting. I drove home

and thankfully made it alive there because my tears were

blocking my vision on the way. I held my mother's picture

close to my heart and wailed my lungs out. If only she was

there. I felt a déjà vu while crying. Like someone touched

my cheek. I felt her presence. I felt like she was somewhere

near.I even had goosepimples all over and the hair on my

back stood.She was watching over me.

"Mom." I looked around like I was going to see her.I just

felt like she was around.

"I miss you mom. Why did you have to leave us all alone in

this cruel world?" I cried.

After pouring my heart out it didn't make me feel better.I

walked downstairs to my mini bar and poured some neat

scotch on the rocks.I was about to drink it but I felt

nauseated so I ran to the bathroom and threw up. I cried so badly when I realised things weren't working my way. It just wasn't my day. I took my phone and looked for some flings to call but stumbled upon Treet's number. I have never called him and my pride wasn't allowing me to. When I was debating with myself. I mistakenly dialled his number and the call went through. His deep voice brought me back to earth.

"Jesty how are you." He said.

I sniffed. "Ohhh I'm sorry.I dialled by mistake.Hope I didn't disturb you.Bye"

I immediately dropped the call.No wine

no sex for me.I

hugged my mother's picture and drifted off to sleep on the couch.

TREET

No matter how busy someone is, if you mean a lot to them they drop everything and come to your rescue.

"You look troubled what's wrong babe?" Angela asked.

Jesty didn't sound okay and it didn't sit well with me. She

sounded like she was crying and that worried me a lot. I

suddenly lost my appetite. Apparently I was having lunch

with Angela

"Treet are you ok babe." She asked again.

I sighed. "Umm it was a call from work. Something is not

right so I have to go check myself. "

"But babe we are supposed to meet our gynaecologist for

our first checkup remember. Can't someone do it on your behalf."

Angela's pregnancy came as a surprise to the both of us. She was three weeks pregnant and I didn't know how to feel about it I had mixed emotions about the pregnancy. It was wrong timing. I had just found out the tricks my parents used to tie me to a loveless marriage and I had already spoke to my lawyer to draw a divorce settlement for me but when she announced she was pregnant I had to

put that plan on a hold. On the other hand I had doubts about the paternity of the child. Once bitten twice shy. I told her about it and even though she was offended she assured me that I was the father.

"We can consult the family gynaecologist if you think I'm lying. When the first trimester is over we can have a DNA test."

She suggested. However a family gynaecologist I didn't feel safe about that because anything with my family

involved made me think twice, so we ditched that plan and decided to consult the gynaecologist I chose. She was more than comfortable with that so at the end I started believing that maybe it was actually my baby after all. If circumstances were different she was never going to agree to do things my way. So it was safe to say I was going to be a father and sad to say I wasn't ecstatic about it. Don't get me wrong. I wanted to hold my baby just like anybody else but somehow I didn't have that inner

excitement. Something was pulling me back. Since it was a risky pregnancy I decided to be there for Angela through it all but once the baby was born I was going to divorce her. It wasn't going to be fair for my child but there are a lot of children whose parents are co-parenting out there and they are doing just fine. Once he/she grows up they would understand why I made that choice.

I scratched my head not knowing what to do. "We can reschedule Angela. This is important, very important. I

really have to go. In fact I will call Doctor Ballard on my way

and explain the situation to her, she is very

understanding. "I ran and took my car keys.

When I was about to leave my family arrived.

"Where are you running off to son. We need to talk." My

dad said.

"Can't it wait? I have to be somewhere right now." I said

impatiently.

"Just hear them out Treet don't be so difficult." Tyson said.

I closed my eyes and sighed."Fine just a few minutes and
it better be worth it because I really have to go."

"Well maybe I can go see the gynaecologist while you're at
it because it sounds serious." Angela said.

"I can come with you." Danileigh suggested.

"No there is no need.I can do this on my own and maybe
they will need you here." Angela immediately walked out.

I sat down impatiently. "So why are you here?"

Its not like I didn't know why they came.It was written all

over their faces.

"Son we know we wronged you but please understand this

we just had good intentions in mind." Dad spoke.

I stood up."You know what guys if you're here to apologize

for lying to me then I forgive you and I mean it.I forgive you

because someone made me realize that you're not worth

even my anger.And being angry with you for tricking me its

not going to get me anywhere but it will only be toxic to

me while you guys live your lives with no worries at all.I'm

done with you guys.I'm done with the lies.I'm done with the
tricks.I'm done with everything. Its unfortunate we don't
choose families and we can't run away from our own
blood but trust me if I had a choice,I was going to be so
damn happy right now with people who are honest with
me and who consider my happiness.I know you came here
for the sake of courtesy but you don't mean your apology.I
wouldn't be surprised if some skeletons in the cupboards
come flying my way because I'm used to it.I will just have

to prepare myself for what's coming next so that I wouldn't be so shocked. Like I said I forgive you so if you may excuse me I have important matters to attend to."

I took my car keys and ran outside, leaving them to pick their jaws from the floor. I drove like a maniac to Majesty's place and thankfully made it alive. The guard didn't give me a hard time because I was now a regular. I rang her doorbell and no one answered. I immediately panicked. Thankfully the door wasn't locked so I literally

flew inside.I found her all curled up like a dollar sign on the couch.A bottle of scotch was on the table.I rushed to her side and shook her.A picture fell down and I picked it.It was a older version of Majesty.I guess that was her mother.

"Babe wake up." I kissed her all over her face.She woke up with a little pout which made her look like an adorable little kid.I frowned when I saw how swollen and red her eyes were.She was crying.

"Treet. What are you doing here? I thought I told you that I dialled your number my mistake you shouldn't have come."

She said avoiding eye contact. When she saw me holding her mother's picture she immediately took it from me and got all emotional. Without saying anything I carried her in a bridal style. By the time I reached her bedroom she was crying holding onto me. I rocked her back and forth until she started hiccuping. I made some hot chocolate for her.

"Thanks." She said with a scratchy voice from all the crying.

I nodded and kept on looking at her.

"Well thank you Treet you can leave I'm fine now and sorry for wasting your time."

"Jesty stop shutting me out. Let me in. You honestly expect me to walk out of that door without asking what's going on. You were crying for heaven's sake." I held her hands.

"Well one has to cry to sterilize their eyes you know it doesn't always mean something is going on." She said.

I shook my head smiling. "Do I look like a fool to you?"

She took her time closely analyzing me. "Well as a matter of fact you do look like a fool. A sexy one for that matter." She bit her lower lip. I still don't get how someone can look so beautiful with a swollen face and red eyes.

I chuckled. "I see what you're trying to do but we are not changing the topic. What is going on munchie?"

She laughed a little bit. "Munchie? What is that? My pet name? Dude that's so cheesy"

I made a serious face. "We are not changing the topic. I

need to know what's going on. Who made you cry?"

She looked away all emotional again. "I told you I was

sterilizing my eyes. Stop making it a big deal and go back

home to your pregnant wife." I sensed some jealousy there

not that I was complaining but I brushed it off.

"Majesty in case you don't understand what I said to you I

will repeat, I'm not walking out that door without knowing

what made you cry. Don't even try to shut me out." I said

firmly.

She started sniffing, maybe I was too harsh and my tone was too hard on her. I hugged her. "I'm sorry babe. I'm sorry but what is going on?"

"It's just that she was like a mother to me you know. When my mom died she was there for me. Even if she wasn't my mom I started seeing her as one. Today I finally got to know her true colors and it hurts. She was badmouthing me and questioning my life choices in a very bad way. Her words hurt. Fine I'm a whore I know but I choose what I

want to do with my life and how I wanna live it.Maybe
when I'm grey and old I will look up and question some
decisions I made in my life but how dare she judges me
when she was there when I went through it all.She was
there,she saw how I suffered.I'm not perfect just like
anyone else.How dare she says I'm trash.She pretends,
she is two faced.She laughs with me but behind my back I
disgust her."

She cried and I finally got the hang of it.Majesty was

closed off and always had her guard up but she crumbled to people's words especially the ones that she loves. Words hurt her deep than anything else.

"Look at m. Look at me Majesty." I cupped her face. "There was a man called Warren Buffett he once said, you will continue to suffer if you have an emotional reaction to everything that is said to you. True power is sitting back and observing things with logic, true power is restraint. If words control you that means everyone else can control

you. Breathe and allow things to pass. I know you're hurt because she said mean things about you behind your back but always remember don't worry about those who talk behind your back because behind your back that is where they belong. Don't let it get to you no matter how much it hurts. You cried and that is enough. Forgive her and move on with your life. You're strong Majesty but hey don't let what she said define who you're ok babe." She nodded repeatedly.

"My mom's anniversary is in three days. Its going to be so difficult for me and my two sibilings. My father killed her so reminiscing the day we lost her is a nightmare." She said drawing circles on my chest,we were cuddling.I was too shocked to know this about her.She sensed it.

"You don't have to say anything, I just wanted someone to tell.Thank you for coming through for me.You can go back I'm sure your family needs you,I will be fine."

Before I could protest her phone rang. She talked briefly

and hung up.

"My best friend is here.You can leave I will be fine." She

said getting off the bed.

"But Jesty--" I tried protesting.

"No buts Treet.Thank you once again." She literally

dragged me downstairs. I didn't wanna leave.

When she opened the door the guy was standing holding a

baby.She immediately smiled and took the baby.

"What is he doing here" He said shooting me a look.Nigger

didn't like me. By the soft look he gave Majesty I could tell he wanted her. There is no way on earth I was going to let him have her. Them being friends since forever didn't matter to me. She was mine.

"He was just leaving." Majesty gave me a pleading look and I softened up because trust me I was about to burst just like this Ethan guy.

"I will see you around Jesty." I hugged her briefly to the guy's chagrin and walked out.

It was half past four when I got back home and to my

annoyance my mom was still there. She was cooking

something with Angela in the kitchen and they were

laughing and chatting up a storm. I felt betrayed honestly.

"Mom what are you still doing here?" I asked.

"Ohh son we were just talking about the baby. The scans

are in your room, its beautiful. I'm glad you're going to be a

father." She said excitedly.

I folded my arms." Don't count your eggs before they

hatch. We haven't done the DNA test yet."

I started walking upstairs. "Treet that is no right way to

talk. Are you stuck up one what happened years ago. Move

on son. Everyone makes mistakes stop walking around like

the world owes you something. You ain't a saint either."

She said coming my way.

"I don't have the energy to deal with you mother but let me

tell you this right now, this should be the last time you

meddle in my affairs as it is you're not in my good books. I

respect you very much but don't take advantage of that.I

will cut ties with you and I won't even miss you." They both

gaspd.

"Babe that's too harsh." Angela said.

"Harsh is my middle name.Do whatever you want for all care but mother when I come back.I want to see you gone.Its high time you people know your places." I stormed upstairs. I was a little harsh I know but I just couldn't think straight knowing I left Majesty with her male besty.I didn't even have time to check on the scans.I took my car keys and stormed outside again.Driving back to

Majesty's place.

13

MAJESTY

Three alpha males versus one scorned female.

I avoided having an eye contact with him but he kept on
gawking at me.

"Business acquaintances huh?" I could sense the
bitterness in Ethan's voice. Lately I couldn't understand
what was really going on with my best friend. I decided to
ignore him and continued shushing Girly.

"I'm talking to you Maj. What's going on with you and that

guy?" He half shouted.

I shrugged. "Nothing."

He chuckled. "Nothing huh?" He looked pissed off. He

stormed out leaving me confused. Maybe he fought with

his mother over what she said or something. Talking about

his mother she called just when he left.

I answered. "Hello Mrs Jaji." She was no longer worth the

title of mom. However I still respected her and decided to

forgive her. After all I don't have control over what others

think about me but I have control over how I decide to

internalize their opinions. I leave people to their

judgements. Let people love you for who you're not who

they want you to be.

"Hey Majesty did Ethan come to your place." She was

sounding restless.

"Yes he did. I'm with Girly he just left." I explained.

"Ohh okay." She sounded relieved and dropped the call.

I fed Girly, bathed her and she fell asleep. Luckily I bought a

baby monitor so I just switched it on and went downstairs to prepare dinner. While I was at it Ethan came back smelling nicotine.

"You were smoking?" I was worried about him. He usually smoked when he was so stressed about something and with the way he was acting lately something big was bothering him.

He nodded and sat down. I stopped dicing the carrots and sat besides him. I held his hands. "What's going on with you

Eth?You're not yourself lately?Can you tell your best friend what's bothering you."

He sighed."I need to tell you something Majesty."

I nodded vigorously. "Yes tell me what is it?What's eating you up."

He looked at me sternly. "You know we have been best friends for a long time right.What I'm going to tell you doesn't change anything.We will still be best friends no matter what ok.. Look--"

"You wanna break ties with me?" I asked with my voice breaking. His mother might have convinced him to break ties with me since I'm a whore and I didn't know how I could survive without Eth in my life. He has been my strength, my everything. He was always there through it all and gave me a shoulder to cry on which is another reason why I chose to forgive his mother and let everything go. He meant a lot to me and I wasn't going to be able to survive without him in my life. He knew everything about me and

understood even some crazy decisions I made. He never judged me but instead he tried to sit down with me and talk. I was as stubborn as they come but he never gave up on me.

He chuckled. "No no no I'm not breaking ties with you. I would never."

"So what is it that you want to tell me." I asked curiously.

"Have you ever heard of something called patience?" He asked smiling.

I laughed."Just tell me already."

My door bell rang before he could say anything. I stood up

and went to attend to it.

"Treet.What are you doing here?" I asked surprised.

"You promised me dinner remember." He said letting

himself in.Something wasn't right in this guy's head.When

did I even promise him dinner.Before I could protest he

was already in the kitchen.I followed and I sensed some

tension between him and Eth.

"I will go check on Girly." Eth stood up and went upstairs.

I folded my arms and looked at him. "I don't remember promising you dinner. What are you doing here aren't you supposed to be with your wife?"

"I will help you dice the carrots." He took the knife completely ignoring my questions. I gave up trying to question him because he was so stubborn at times. We prepared dinner together, Eth was with Girly. I guess he was pissed because Treet just decided to gatecrash our " him

and I time."The dinner was tense than ever.I was more focused on Girly while these two kept own exchanging killer stares.I finally breathed when the dinner was over because it was intense. Treet finally left and Eth didn't want to talk to me despite us sleeping in the same bed.Girly was in the middle but I could feel him breathing heavily that meant he was still wide awake.

"You wanted to tell me something earlier." I broke the silence.

"Yea before your fuckbuddy ruined it for me.I'm going out for a smoke don't wait up."He got off the bed and wore his tracksuits.

I got off the bed too and knelt in front of him,cupping his face.

"What's going on?" I asked.

"Nothing. Go to bed,don't wait for me,I will be back in no time." He perked my cheeks and walked out leaving me so worried about him.He wasn't himself.I tried waiting up for

him but ended up falling asleep. I woke up at 2am to feed

Girly her bottle and he was in bed wide awake. I fed her

without saying a word to him. I wasn't going to pester him

with questions if he didn't want to tell me anything.

"So there is this girl." He said out of the blue. I knew he was

stressed about a woman.

I sat up attentively. "I knew it was about a woman. What's

going on? You're finally in love and decided to lay down

your player cards?"

He chuckled."Well I was never a player you misunderstood me."

I laughed "Yea right. So this woman?"

"She is everything I have ever wanted in a woman.She completes me and I know she will be a good mother to my child.However I'm afraid she doesn't feel the same."

I got goosepimples all over.Why did it feel like he was talking about me? I brushed the thought off.There was no way Eth would feel that about me, we never had romantic

feelings for each other.

"Did you tell her how you feel?" I asked.

"Let's go to sleep we will have this conversation some

other day." Just like that he brushed the whole thing off. I

decided not to bother him and we both slept. The following

morning Ethan left early with Girly. He had to apply for a

nanny at some Baby Agency and he was called to choose

the one he wanted. I had a meeting with Tyrone at his

studio later on. I went to work and same old, same old

everything was going on very well. My new gaming app was keeping the gamers busy and many gamers meant cash rolling in. Business was just flowing. I called Ethan later to check on him and Girly and they were doing just fine. He had found a nanny for Girly who happened to be a nurse as well. The following day I was going to help him out to buy things for Girly's nursery and have her birth certificate fixed.

"Hey TyJ." I said

"Ummm let me guess you're smiling. Do I have that kind of effect on you." He said.

I laughed."Pssh please don't flatter yourself. I'm even frowning that you called.I told you I was gonna call you but I guess you know nothing about patience, you couldn't wait to hear my sweet voice."

He laughed too." That is the pride talking. Anyway I called to ask if you're still up for the meeting."

"Of course I have to see your art so I will obviously come

by your studio. I have the address so it's not going to be a

problem." I said

"Ok cool. Please don't change your plans like last time. I will

be very disappointed." He said.

"Don't worry I won't."

"So 3:30pm it is."

"Yea sure. Bye!" I dropped the call.

I met with clients and chaired a couple of

meetings. Afterwards I drove to Villa del Mar

apartments. Thank you GPS I was going to be so lost. The security didn't give me a hard time since they were expecting me. Gosh the place was very beautiful and luxurious the Rodeo apartments had nothing to it. The landscape was just to die for. I rang the bell and I was welcomed by the beautiful skyblue eyes. There was something about those eyes that drew me. In simple terms I'm saying there was something about Treet and Tyrone's eyes that you would find yourself lost in them. They were

twins but they had their own unique beauty. Treet had dangerously sexy, hot, manly and mature looks you name it and then Tyrone had those fuckboy cute looks and a little bit of being manly.

"Finally you made it. I thought you were going to postpone again." He said hugging me.

I hugged him back and man he smelled good. "Ohh no I wouldn't."

We walked in and the apartment was very cosy and the

artwork was a sight for a sore eye.You would just know by

looking around that the best artist in town did the works.

"So you live here too?" I asked.

"Apparently I do everything here.I just love being around

what I do.My art is my baby.You want some coffee?" He

asked.

"No thank you.I love your work,its good.You do sculptures

too?" I walked around admiring.

"You have a good taste then and yes I do almost

everything to do with art."

After looking around I sat down at one of the

couches. "That's great hey anyway back to business." I took

out the contract. "You can go through that with your

attorney or do your research about our company."

He took it and signed without even reading it. "There is no

need for an attorney I did my research and you guys are

legit besides I trust you."

He just knew me for a short space of time and already he

trusted me. Typical artist! "Wow ok that's great hey. Tyrone

Jackson is now my client. So I wanted you to show me

your best piece of art. I wanna see it."

He smiled. "I'm afraid you can't see it."

I sulked. "Ohh okay I get it. I'm I think its time for me to go." I

stood up.

"Well its my heart." I gave him a confused look. "My best

piece of art is my heart."

I sat down, suddenly his face was all gloomy and no longer

jolly.

"Looking back to the years that has gone by

I see

countless times I have cracked and been broken. Having

been heartbroken all over has ceased to show as cracks

but some sort of decorations. The more I'm broken the

more I'm decorated." He looked at me and smiled.

"So you can't see my best piece of art because its my

heart. My heart is the beauty of art and the art of beauty."

"Wow umm you sure are an artist." I nodded smiling.

He held his chest in a dramatic manner. "Sorry if I came on
you too strong."

I laughed. "You're so dramatic. And I must say I think I will
enjoy doing business with you."

He smiled. "Of course. Dinner?"

I gave him a confused look. "Huh?"

"Well you owe me dinner." He folded his arms.

I furrowed my forehead. "I do?"

"Yes. That day you didn't even know who I was. If you were someone else I was going to turn down your offer. Don't you think you owe me dinner an apology dinner if there is something like that." He pouted

"Ohhh umm I..." I actually didn't know if I had plans or not.

"Ok dinner on me." He shrugged.

"Okay then dinner at 7:30pm." I said

"7:30 it is. Let me walk you out."

I waved him goodbye as I drove off. I was rejuvenated in a

way. Despite everything that happened I knew Tyrone was

someone I needed to keep in my life. For starters just like

Ethan I didn't have any sexual feelings for him so things

were going to be easier for me. I could use another friend

too. I also had a twisted idea of making him and his brother

pay for what they did to me.

"Dinner with thee Ty. I don't think it's a good idea Maj

after all he is your client. We don't go personal with

clients." Petty said when I told him about it.

"Its nothing personal so I'm not doing anything wrong.Its

just dinner." I defended.

"Well a word of advice boss be careful TyJackson is an

artist and artists are very sensitive." He gathered his files

and walked out leaving me lost in my own thoughts.What

the hell was I doing?I was messing around with my rapist

and I was comfortable with it. Two of them at that matter.I

went through shit and I was still going through shit

because of what they did but I was acting all cool about it.I

drove back to Majesty Innovations but I didn't stay for a long time though everything was going on smoothly, I wasn't even needed. When I was back at home Ethan called asking me out for dinner but unfortunately I had to turn him down. He was disappointed to say the least that he even hung up on me. Well I couldn't turn Tyrone down Ethan and I had had many dinners together, more were to come and its not like I was going anywhere. I was done showering by 6:55pm and I settled for a simple black

boycon dress and fendi leather heel sandals.I applied
minimum makeup and I was good to go.I drove by the
Wine Farm and bought Domaine Leroy Musigny Grand
Cru.One of my favourite red wine.After that I drove to Villa
del Mar apartments again.Before I got the chance to ring
the bell,he beat me to it and opened. He was wearing a
white shirt which was unbuttoned on the neck and black
chino pants which hugged him perfectly. It was simple but
emphasized every muscle on his body.Unlike his brother

he didn't keep his curly afro hair instead he had a neat English haircut.

"And she is back." He said softly smiling. I would just call him smiley.

"Here I am and look what I have brought." I waved the bottle of wine.

His lips curved into yet another breathtaking smile. Its official I'm calling this man smiley."Thank you,this is my favourite. Now come inside I need to check you out."

I laughed."And you're so blunt about it."I stepped past him into the apartment.

"Stop checking my ass."

He laughed."Sorry I couldn't help it.The dress fits you well.You look amazing"

"I do?"I arched my eyebrow.

He chuckled. "You know you do." I shrugged a little awkwardly.

I looked at him expectantly waiting for him to go fetch his

jacket."So where are we going?"

He shrugged."Well we are having our dinner here.We are
not going anyway."

"Here?"

"You don't think the food here will match your standards."

He asked teasingly.

"Well its just.." I smiled not knowing what to say.

"Come on." He held my hand and led us to the rooftop.

"Wow." I said.The twinkling city view was beautiful.Let's

not forget about the stars gleaming in the sky which were complimented by the fairy lights which were strategically placed all over the place, with dramatic wooden sculptures dotted all over the place giving it a theatrical twist. Pots of jasmine were scented in the air. In the middle a table was set with a bottle of champagne waiting in an ice bucket. It was the prettiest and most unexpected view I have ever seen.

"Oh my. You went all out. This is beautiful." I admired.

"So have you changed your mind about going out? Is there anywhere prettier to eat." He questioned.

"I don't think there is anywhere prettier but who is doing the cooking." I raised my eyebrow.

He scratched his head. "Well I wanted to show off my cooking skills." He smiled nervously and walked over the table. He pulled over the bottle of champagne and removed the foil with his thumb.

"Drink?"

I smiled."Sure."I said taking the flute from him and taking a sip.

"I'm failing to imagine you peeling potatoes." I just had to say something. Is it me or the atmosphere was suddenly changing, things were getting kind of awkward.

"Well for the record I can cook.I think I'm good at it especially peeling potatoes." He pulled out the chair for me and I sat down.

"I will be the judge of that.Umm I don't think I can have

anymore to drink on an empty stomach."

"Yaaa let's eat, are you hungry? Ohh crap what am I saying

of course you're." The nigger was shy.

He ran back downstairs and came back later on with a tray.

"This is amazing." He had prepared ratatouille and lots of

meat as well as my favourite green salad.

"Thank you." He said. We continued eating in comfortable

silence.

"So what is it like being a businesswoman and owning one

of the best game tech company in the city.?"

I smiled."Tiring of course There is a lot to be done and the gamers expect a new game to play on every now and then so its exhausting at times but I love creating games so its fun."

He nodded."Hmmm I thinkI have a few ideas about a gaming app but I will share with you some other time.I was once a gamer backin the day.Used to go crazy over need4speed and GTA with my twin."He sighed with a sad

face on. I guess he was no longer close with his Treet

judging from the look on his face. "Anyway so what is it like

living in Rodeo?"

Even though the whole conversation was awkward I loved

the fact that he was trying to make things comfortable for

me. I appreciated his efforts.

I beamed in excitement. "It's amazing in Rodeo with the

most beautiful ocean and biggest waves I have ever

seen...."

I went on and on about the beaches, oceans while he listened attentively. It was fun talking to someone who listens to me and enjoy seeing me talk. Ethan was there for me and was a good listener too but with Tyrone it was different. Treet was there too but he was someone I would talk to when I was going through something terrible. I wasn't even aware that I was actually a human chatterbox until this dinner.

"I love the way you talk." He smiled. "Maybe we should go

to the beach some other time and try surfing."

"I'm not good at surfing in fact I never tried it.I'm afraid of

the waves.I only love seeing them from afar." I admitted.

"I will teach you I'm pretty good at it."He said.

"So you live alone?"

I nodded."Yes my other family members live in Calabasa."I

said.

"Living with family has many advantages for both parties

although naturally it can curtail individual freedom." He

wiped his mouth with a napkin.

"I agree." I wiped my mouth too.

"Does your stomach have any room for dessert?" He asked.

"Well not really at least not now. I hope I won't offend you."

I felt like if I could eat something else I could choke

because I ate almost everything he gave me. It was that

delicious if you ask me.

"Maybe a walk might give you an appetite?" He suggested.

"Maybe." I didn't want to walk because the shoes were not

appropriate for it but I agreed because I was enjoying his company.

"Speaking of walking. I don't think those shoes were made for walking. Pity you should have worn trainers." He said.

"Trainers would have looked terrible with the dress but I can go barefoot." I suggested.

He smiled. "Okay you could wear my sandals or I could give you a piggyback."

"Sandals. I will wear your sandals." We went downstairs

and he came with his Nike sandals and knelt down

assisting me in taking off my shoes.

"You have beautiful toes." I found myself blushing. I mean

he commented every small details about me. Usually men

comment about your ass and stuff but the first thing he

said was he loved the way I talked and now he noticed my

toes I was very impressed, truth be told.

"Thankyou." We walked out. The stars were now sprinkling

the darksky and with the rise of the moon it was very

beautiful. The landscape was very beautiful. We walked around and the lawn and shrubs were neatly cut. He kept on staring at me while I admired everything.

"What?" I asked.

"I wanna paint you." He said.

"Ummm why. I mean there is nothing interesting on me to paint." I shrugged awkwardly.

"You have no idea what I'm seeing right now just by looking at you. The stars that are sprinkling the dark sky

and the moon its making a pale halo of your hair. Also you
skin tone shines perfectly under natural light that it makes
me think of honey, the green landscape on the background
is working in my favour so as a result you're looking like
some flower fairy that had tumbled down here."

"Wow I'm impressed." I said.

He smiled. "So can I paint you?"

"Fine how long does it take?"

"An hour if you don't move and another hour because I

have never painted a person before but trust me I got this."

He said.

I nodded."Fine two hours won't hurt."

"Ummm okay but you will have to be wrapped in a silk

sheet only.I understand if you don't want that.I won't force

you to do something you're not comfortable with."

"Its ok Ty as long as I get the copy of the painting."

"You will get the original. I just wanna paint you."

So I have been sitting on the white couch that had

diamond details outside wrapped with a silk sheet for an hour and a few minutes without moving.

"Ty my neck.." I complained.

"I'm almost down. Just a few more minutes." He said.

I waited patiently and after some time he was done

"Show me." I said.

He shook his head smiling. "No I can't. I'm not done yet. I

was just sketching, I will have to paint so be patient ok."

I tried to convince him but no amount of pouts or puppy

eyes could convince him.

"That was fun." I said getting into my car.

"I agree. I had total fun today thanks to you. So are we

going to do this again or you're a busy woman. Look I was

thinking maybe I could try teaching you surfing next

weekend but its ok if you're busy. I totally understand."

I bit my lower lip thinking. I wasn't the type of going on

dates and shit like that but spending time with Tyrone was

amazing and fun. "Umm surfing next weekend then."

He smiled. "Thank you."

I looked sternly at him. "You're always smiling."

"They say smile when it hurts the most. Smile to avoid problems. Its working for me." At that moment I sensed some sadness in his voice like the time he was talking about the good old days with his twin.

"Drive safe and call me as soon as you get home ok."

"Ok smiley goodnight." He perked my cheek and I drove home. Upon arriving I saw Ethan's car parked outside. I

thought I told him I wasn't going to be around.

"Hey Eth wassup." I said giving him a perk on the cheek. He

was smoking. He was really stressed and now I was super

worried.

"How was your business dinner?" He asked.

"Went quiet well. In fact it was fun." I smiled.

"You fucked him too." He looked down at the male sandals

I was wearing. Crap! Why do I always play Cinderella and

forget my shoes with the Jackson brothers.

"I didn't sleep with him it was just dinner I promise you

Ethan." With what his mother had said about me I could

feel that Ethan was slowly beginning to judge me.

"Majesty I know you were hurt by Justin but you can't use

sex to escape your pain all the time it doesn't work like

that. There are people who love you who can help

you. Sleeping around is not going to solve anything for

you. Let me in and let me help. This cannot go on Majesty

at least not on my watch." He was shouting and I picked

he was drunk.

"Ethan I didn't sleep with him heck I didn't even kiss him or

looked at him sexually. After a long time I actually had fun

today without having sex. Innocent fun Ethan. I didn't sleep

with anyone." I found myself explaining to him but he was

having none of it.

"And the sandals?"

Explaining to him what exactly happened was going to

make him misunderstand me more.

I sighed and looked at him."I didn't sleep with him Ethan
you have to believe me."

"Yea right." He took his car keys but there was no way I
was going to let him drive drunk like that.I had Girly to
think of.I took the keys from him.

"Give me back my keys." He hissed.

"No Ethan I'm not going to let you drive like that." I said
folding my arms.

"I said give me back my fucking keys." He literally barked

and I was too shocked I have never seen him like that.I

started shaking. Upon realizing what he has done he

instantly became sober.

"I'm sorry Maj I didn't mean to snap at you like that.I'm

sorry."He tried to hug me but I moved back in fear.

"I'm sorry Majesty,I'm sorry for shouting at you.I would

never hurt you please don't look at me like I'm a

monster.I'm sorry Majesty.Please forgive me."

He finally hugged me and I broke down in his arms.

"Mom's anniversary is the day after tomorrow and you just reminded me of him. For a moment.. I thought.. I thought.."

"Shhh,shhhh I'm sorry Maj.I would never.Look I'm not going to go anywhere ok.I promise let's go to sleep.I'm sorry." He continued apologizing.

"And Girly.Where is she?" I asked wiping my tears off.

"She is at the rents.Let's go to sleep."

I nodded and we went to sleep.We spooned and he kept on brushing my hair till I drifted off to sleep.

14

TREET

I love listening to lies when I know the truth.

"Is this the time to come back home Treet?Yesterday you

didn't have dinner with us.Your wife doesn't need this

drama she is pregnant with your child for heaven's sake."

Mom was on my neck when I came back around 11pm.I

thought she was just going to stay for the night but clearly

I was wrong.Ever since she got to know about Angela's

pregnancy she has been babysitting her and getting on my

nerves.If she thought Angela's pregnancy was going to

bring us together clearly she was wrong. If anything I felt

so disconnected from Angela like never before.

"I'm not a child mom.I don't need a curfew in my own

house and stop yelling at me. And another thing, aren't you

supposed to be like at your own house with your family

and minding your own business.I don't remember marrying

you." I was so annoyed.She really was getting on my

nerves.

She shook her head and held her waist. "Is that a way to talk to your mother Treet. What is wrong with you? God where did I go wrong with this one?"

"Mom stop being dramatic and by tomorrow you should be gone. Angela is a grown ass woman she doesn't need a babysitter and this ain't her first pregnancy." I stormed upstairs and left her yelling.

I took a cold shower and went in bed. Angela came and joined me. We were not in talking terms anyway so I just

ignored her and continued thinking about Majesty.

"Are you cheating on me Treet?" She asked out of the blue.

"No." There you go.I answered.

"We cannot go on like this Treet.You rarely spend time

with me.You sometimes don't sleep at home

anymore.You're stone cold towards me.You don't touch

me,you---"

"Are you done?" I asked looking at her with my forehead

furrowed.

"Mom was right I don't need this Treet. I'm pregnant you can't Treet me like this." She got off the bed and stormed out.

I wondered for how long she was going to keep up with that act. If it wasn't for that student nurse Zoe Weaver who came through for me. I could have been in the dark. If it wasn't for her I could have been taken for a ride again.

The previous day she called me out of the blue and asked me to meet up.

...."Am I speaking to Mr Treet Jackson?" She asked after I
picked up a call from the unknown number.I was in my
office after I had a meeting with my constructors
pertaining the AllHope Insurance project.

"Yes it is Mr Jackson speaking.How can I help you?" I
asked going through some files which were on my table. I
stumbled upon the scan papers.Angela must have
misplaced them among my business files.I looked at them
and smiled sadly.Wrong timing baby, wrong timing.

"Umm I'm Zoe Weaver one of the nurses who are on intern under the supervision of Doctor Ballard." She explained.

"Okay how can I help you. Is this something in relation with my wife's pregnancy?" I asked.

"Yes. This is important Mr Jackson so is it ok if you may set up a meeting. I have to tell you something very important." She said.

What was this again. "Okay fine I will text you the address on this number right." "Yes." She dropped the call.

I could feel a bomb coming my way. I was never ready. I

had my doubts pertaining Angela's pregnancy but having

to confirm my doubts, having to confirm that I was taken

for a ride again was never something I was ready for.

"Monica please reschedule all my meetings for today. I

have somewhere important to go." I said.

"On it sir." She fixed her glasses and picked up the landline.

I texted Zoe the address of the restaurant I wanted us to

meet up and coincidentally she was there so she secured

an isolated table for the both of us. When I arrived she was impatiently waiting for me.

"Zoe Weaver." She nodded and I sat down.

"Have you already ordered?" I asked sitting down.

"I'm sorry that can wait." She said

"Okay cool so why am I here?"

She sighed and took out a file. "At first all I wanted was the

money so when Mrs Jackson who happens to be your wife

offered me some money for my silence I agreed to help

her because I needed the money for my grandmother's operation. However I can't continue with this lies its just not who I am. I will gladly return all the money she gave me and look for other ways to save my grandmother. As I have said earlier I work under the supervision of Doctor Ballard the best gynaecologist in town. Angela and her had a deal and somehow I found out about their plan so your wife paid me to keep quiet but I believe you deserve to know the truth. Your wife is not pregnant at all sir, in her medical

records it clearly states that she has a thin or no chance of carrying a baby because her womb is scarred. The scans she showed you were digitally and medically manipulated. Her plan was to either feign a miscarriage after some time or go for a secret surrogacy. The latter sounded like a plan but your sperms were needed and it couldn't happen since the both of you were not having sex lately. She wanted to go for some trip until the baby was born so that when she returns with the baby it will all be

like she gave birth herself.I wanted to proceed with the
plan but my conscience was against it and medicine is my
life,I would never risk my career like that hence I had to tell
you this.These are the real medical files about her womb
and also the financial transactions she made.If you want
to take this to the police please do but I'm begging you to
keep my name out of it.My grandmother is all I have and I
can't loose her and she can't loose me."She stood up.

"I'm sending \$10 000 into your account.I hope its enough

for your grandmother's treatment."

She was shocked."Its even way too much.Look sir I don't

want dirty money on my hands.My first mistake was

considering your wife's plan.I'm not repeating my mistake

again so no sir I'm not taking your money."

"You saved me from something huge and I'm just thanking

you for that.Go and treat your grandmother.Thank you for

coming clean.Send me your account number and I will

have my PA send you the money.I'm just being grateful its

not dirty money."

She agreed and I stood up and left. I wasn't hurt but I was disgusted that Angela could go this far. I thought she learnt her lesson but no not Angela. No wonder why I wasn't ecstatic about the so called pregnancy. I felt this coming a long time ago. I wasn't surprised. While I was on my way back to work I called my lawyer and told him to continue drawing the divorce settlement since we had put that on hold.

What I didn't know was if my mom was involved in this plot or not?

If Angela thought I was going to follow her to the guestroom and lick her ass then she was sadly mistakenly.

In fact I slept like baby with no worries at all. I just wanted to see where she was going with her plan because this time I was one step ahead. She was not going to trap me again. I tried to call Jesty but her phone was off I texted her good night and drifted off to sleep. The following morning I

found my mother downstairs with her bags being dramatic
as always.

"My own son kicks me out of his own home. The same
person I carried for 9 months and made him who he is
today. My own son uses bitter words against me when I'm
the one who taught him to speak." Now she was trying
emotional blackmail.

"Mom your emotional blackmail is not going to work. The
chauffeur is waiting for you outside. Have a safe journey." I

went to the kitchen and made myself a protein shake while

she continued saying shit to make me feel guilty.

I ignored her until she was gone. Angela came in the

kitchen sulking.

"Babe the morning sickness is killing me could you please

make me lots of bacon I'm craving it." She said. Only if she

knew that I was aware that she was feigning the whole

thing.

"Sure thing." I had to play my part too. I was angry for sure

and wanted to force the truth out of her but I wanted to see how this whole thing was going but I was surely not going to give her my sperms to play with.If that's what she was praying for.I prepared the bacon for her and as expected she said it was not good and ran to the bathroom to puke.So predictable. Honestly if I wasn't aware of the truth I could have believed her lies because she really deserved an Oscar award for the act.She was playing the pregnant role very well.

Days passed by with Angela still playing pregnant. She acted all horny blaming it on the hormones like any other pregnant women out there but I was having none of it. She dragged Jesty into her mess by begging her to accompany her to buy things for the baby's nursery. Imagine how uncomfortable it was for me to have my mistress and wife under one roof but if Angela could act like she was pregnant what could stop me from acting like I wasn't checking Jesty out. We even went as far as having a

quickie in the house when they came back and Angela never even noticed. Word of advice especially to ladies be careful of who you accommodate in your circle and who you invite in your house. I'm not saying Jesty was a snake but I'm putting it out there, be careful. Two months down the line Angela kept her act up but I was already fed up with her lies my lawyer on the other hand had successfully drawn our divorce papers and it was high time I issued them to her. I invited the whole family for lunch. They had to

know the true colors of their favourite daughter in law and

this time around she wasn't going to escape the divorce or

have someone talk me out of it. I have made up my mind. I

waited for everyone to finish up eating. They were so happy

shame Angela included if only they knew I was about to

drop the bomb on them.

"I can feel it. This baby is going to restore joy in this family.

God is finally answering my prayers. Thank you so much

my daughter for doing this for my son." Mom smiled while

holding Angela.

"What baby?" I asked looking all serious. Angela choked on

her juice that she was drinking.

"How can you ask that Treet I'm talking about the one

Angela is carrying." Everyone was now paying attention to

our conversation.

I smiled at Angela. "Angela baby are you pregnant?"

"W-what ..kind..of a question is that of course I'm ccarrying our child." She stammered.

I folded my arms nodding. "Ohh really.Let's go have a

pregnant test baby. One more time."

I knew it wasn't going to take long since Mr McKop came to her defense. I was reading everyone's facial expressions to see who was involved in this scheme. A part of me was relieved when I saw confusion written all over my parents' faces. I swear if they had anything to do with this I was going to completely cut them off.

"What nonsense is that Treet. Jackson talk to your son."

He become all defensive and I immediately knew he was

part of this mess.

"Treet what are you saying bro?" Tyrone asked.

"I don't get why my father in law here is getting all worked up. I just asked my wife here to have the pregnancy tested again. The last thing I want is to be told that it was a false alarm. Those things do happen right. Imagine something like that to burst our bubble and mom don't you agree. Am I wrong for wanting to be completely sure about this?" I said.

"Angela baby go and do the test so that he can stop

worrying." Mom said.

"Ummm..I..." I arched my eyebrow waiting for her to cook

another lie but this time she was trapped.

"Ok cut the bull you're not fucking pregnant. Here are the

damn files which clearly states that you can't get pregnant

and these are the ones which you medically manipulated

to make it look like you're actually pregnant. I can't believe

with the reputation that Doctor Ballard has she actually

was in this with you or you have something on her which

you used to threaten her. You were planning to do a surrogacy right but unfortunately it can't happen we both know why. You're so cunning Angela and I can't believe this time you almost fooled me again. Now tell me one reason why I shouldn't divorce your ass."

What is that saying again which goes like a cheetah or leopard or a hyena doesn't change its spots or is it a snake ok fuck that you know what I'm talking about.

"Angela is this true?" Mom asked looking horrified with the

news. Angela just looked down without saying a word and she received a slap that echoed the whole room. Mom just slapped Angela well that was a first.

"Ok spare me the drama. Here are the divorce papers

Angela I signed my part and you can sign yours. You can

have this house and some cars in the garage. All the money

in our savings account is yours. Let's just free each other

from this mess." I placed the divorce papers on the table.

"Jackson talk to your son." Mr McKop barked.

"Ohhh hold it right there. Is that another threat you're about to say but before you say it let me tell you something. It is important for you to hear this. Even if you pull out from our company it's ok because we won't lose anything so you can go ahead and do that. Or maybe you want to have me demoted from the position of the CEO well unfortunately that can only happen if the board members vote for it and we both know most of them are not all are going to vote me out because firstly you need a solid reason to have me

demoted which we know you don't have." I smiled and he kept quiet in embarrassment.

Angela tore the divorce papers in rage which surprised everyone. I saw that coming a long time ago. "You're my husband and you will always be."

"I saw this coming a long time ago that is why I made so many copies of the divorce papers. You can destroy them and all but you aren't getting away with murder this time." I took my car keys and drove to Majesty's place. I could feel

a heavy burden lifted from my shoulders.

MAJESTY

Hell hath no fury than a woman scorned.

So Tyron and I went for surfing and I must say it was

fun,with his help it wasn't as difficult as i thought it

was.Just spending quality time with him made me laugh

more and worry less about my problems. He was my

human therapy.He made me smile and his silly little

compliments made me blush.Did I tell you about my

painting he made how beautiful it was?The guy is talented

I admitted to myself.It was so beautiful that I couldn't

believe it was actually me. I carefully placed it above my

headboard in my bedroom.With Tyrone occupying my

mind I actually forgot about Treet for some time.Ethan on

other hand was back to his normal self and I was happy

that he dealt with whatever issues he was going

through.Well its not life without drama right.I thought

Angela had forgotten about me and I was relieved but who

was I kidding the bitch called me and begged me to go shopping with her. She kept on begging and I finally agreed. She even went as far as literally dragging me to her house for lunch and well we all know how my body betrays me when Treet is around. We ended up having a quickie in the baby's nursery. Yea yea I know it was disrespectful but can you blame me. Angela didn't even notice a thing, let's talk about being blind. I mean anyone could tell with our body language that something took place between Treet

and I but the wife turned a blind eye. I believe it's really

important for a wife to know their husband's body

language, it's very important. Men don't usually show their

emotions on their faces but their bodies betray them. With

women you can actually see their soul through their eyes

but with men you can only see what they want you to see

but unfortunately they can't manipulate the body language

like how they how they mask their emotions. Anyone could

tell that the reason why Treet had his hands in his pockets

all the time was because he was hiding his

boner. Whenever he was near me he would "accidentally"

brush his arms on my back and clear his throat but to the

wife it was just a normal gesture. Then women go all

feminism when they are told they are naturally

stupid. Shame! Talking about Angela she came to my place

one day looking like she has been hit by a train. She cried

about how Treet wanted to divorce her because she lied

about being pregnant. Ok I didn't know that we were friends

but clearly she was taking me as one of her friends. I gave her a room to sleep in and when she was done crying her lungs out she swore never to let go of her husband and work on her marriage. She even asked my opinion about it and I told her to do what she felt was right. Treet on the other hand was overjoyed about the divorce that he was even starting to plan some vacations with me and the last thing I remembered I wasn't his bae but hey I didn't have the energy to burst his bubble. The man was over the

moon.

"Tyrone are you ok.You're not yourself today?" I asked as I

realized he wasn't his jolly self.It has now become a habit

of mine to spend a lot of time with Tyrone trying new

recipes and having some fun.He loved cooking.

"My twin wants to divorce his wife." He sighed and sat

down.

"I know it's for the best that they divorce because they

were never happy and Angela made my brother's life a

nightmare but I'm worried him. Will he ever find true love

again? I wish I could be there for him but because of that

one mistake he completely shut me out and he doesn't

want anything to do with me. His anger towards me is

justified but I wish I was there for him. "I guess the

Jackson's problems have officially become my problems.

"What happened between the two of you?" I asked.

"I slept with his wife.." He started narrating how the whole

thing happened and I was very shocked but who was I to

judge him.

"Do you think he will ever forgive me?"

"At the end of the day he is your other half. For all we know

he forgave you a long time ago but pride is getting in the

way just continue being there for him and things will be

fine between you two. Now will you please smile."

He smiled and just like that my day was brightened.

Anyway time waits for no man before I knew it was almost

two years since the "reunion" with the Jackson

brothers. Treet was still fighting with Angela about the divorce because she was refusing to sign the papers. He didn't want to take her to court because he was worried about putting his family company's reputation on stake. Imagine a CEO with a divorce drama, that is just not on. While on the other hand we were fucking like rabbits. For that time he was my only fling. Tyrone finally told me that he liked me and begged that we try things out and well I decided to date him. I didn't say fucking him or

being in a relationship with him but date him like going on
dates.I made it crystal clear that I just wanted to have
some fun with him and he was ok with it.Also for some
weird reason I was starting to get sexually attracted to
Tyrone.The feeling was mutual and the whore in me
already wanted to get into his pants.So if it meant going
on dates to get what I wanted then I was up for it.We
made out a lot but never had sex together.He was taking
baby steps with me and I just had to be a lady and walk

with his pace. I felt like I was two people. One who was enjoying playing these brothers and the other one who watched everything in disgust. At some point I would ask myself what the hell I was doing?

One day my siblings paid me a visit and from their facial expressions I could tell it wasn't a friendly one. Prince threw a newspaper at me Rodeo Daily News. There was a picture of me with Tyrone on one of our dates and the other one was me and Treet kissing outside my apartment

in his car. Fuck paparazzi, devil's toenails. The owner of

Majesty Innovations messing around with the Jackson

brothers

Tyrone and Treet. The headline was in bold.

"Aren't they the same brothers who raped you back in

Zimbabwe? The names rang a bell and I did a research on

them and well their mother is Zimbabwean and the time

they were in Zimbabwe is in coherence with the time you

were raped. It can't be coincidence that while in Zimbabwe

they lived in Kwekwe. So sis tell me these are not the same

people who raped you?" Prince asked with a firm tone

while Maka was just looking at me waiting for me to

answer.

"I...umm...well Prince look...I.." For the first time in my life I

didn't know what to say.

He laughed sarcastically and shook his head. "If I didn't

know better I would say you have some mental disorder

and as a result you're messing around with your abusers

but no you're completely ok. Majesty are you ok
upstairs? Those two raped you but you go around and
smile with them heck you're even romantically involved
with them. Have you forgotten what happened to
you? Majesty make me understand what exactly are you
teaching the rape victims out there huh? Are you trying to
set an example that it's ok for a rape victim to fall in love
with their rapist and act like nothing happened. Have you
forgotten that as a result of what happened we lost our

mother. I didn't wanna say this but you know, we all know that it was partly your fault that our parents fought and our mother died. It was because you were fucking raped by the same guy you are smiling and laughing with today that our parents fought and we lost our mother. Those two brothers are the fucking catalyst in everything that happened.

Things spiralled out of control after you went to that stupid party and met them. What are you teaching our little sister huh? Mom must be turning in her grave." Prince said.

"Sis you used to be my role model but not anymore. Right now you disgust me." I watched as my siblings walked out leaving me questioning some of my decisions. I felt ashamed of myself.

Everything Prince had said was the truth as a result I found myself battling with what my mind was telling me to do and what my heart was saying. All the anger and hatred I had for Treet and Tyrone came back full force. I thought I was over what happened and I had long buried the hatchet

but clearly I was wrong. I cried while Prince's words hit home. I thought of revenging but realised I would only hurt myself at the end. So I decided to end the things between me and my Jackson brothers. I took a quick shower and wore a black boycon dress and black red bottom heels. While I was at it Angela called and asked me to go for a shopping spree with her. I could sense the bitterness in her voice so I knew she read the paper and was just using shopping spree as an excuse to see me. I agreed to

see her later on because I had an important matter to deal

with. After talking to Angela I called both brothers and

asked them to meet at the same restaurant at the same

time. For the sake of privacy I booked the whole

restaurant. I went to the restaurant an hour later when I

was well aware that they were both impatiently waiting for

me. When I walked in they both stood up, exchanged

glances and looked at me. I walked up to Treet and kissed

his lips and did the same to Tyrone that was enough for

them to know what was going on.

His eyes were filled with rage. The burnt with savage

fire. He paced up and down and gazed at me. A gaze that

spoke volumes and was enough to make a grown man pee

in their pants but I wasn't fazed at all.

"You're fucking my brother too? You brought me all the way

down here to confess about you having an affair with my

brother too?" Treet's deep voice filled the the whole

room. Tyrone was too shocked to even utter a word.

Finally he was over the shock and he spoke with the same
rage. "Is anybody else coming. How many are we in this
game of yours?"

I sighed and folded my arms. "Ok look I only wanted to do
this once. I got you both here at the same time to tell you
that its over, this got to stop. I don't wanna see you two
again. I'm not sorry if you expected more from me because
from the word go I made it clear to both of you that this
was just a no strings attached and you were ok with

it. Now it has to stop. Treet focus on your marriage and work on it. Tyrone you will find someone who will love you to the moon and back however that someone is unfortunately not me."

Treet chuckled in disbelief. "So you think this is ok You can fuck anybody you want and just what? When you are done its goodbye. You use us, screw us, play us and then dump us seriously. What kind of a woman are you?"

"The kind that you scorned. Both of you used me and

shamed me. You took advantage of my vulnerability and
you preyed on my innocence. The following day you treated
me like a cheap whore. Maybe you forgot. Let me take you
down the memory lane. Do you remember the girl at the
party 12 years ago?" I shouted and both of them
exchanged glances. I knew I have tackled their memory.
I chuckled." Great! It looks like you remember me after all. I
love the look on both your faces right now. You look like
karma just fucked you up on the ass with a

pitchfork.Checkmate."

They exchanged glances."You flipped the bitch switch so

buckle up and enjoy the ride assholes."

I checked my wrist watch."Now that everything is said.So

long gentlemen."

I walked to the door and sadly looked back at them.I didn't

feel good deep down in my heart about everything I had

said.I knew their relationship was going to sour even more

but it had to be done.Prince was right.I was supposed to

hate them and not act like nothing happened. Hating them was what I was going to do. When I got back to my apartment I removed my shoes and threw myself on the couch and wailed in pain. Treet's look was something I was never going to be able to forget let's not even talk about Tyrone's facial expression. He was hurt. You're supposed to hate them. My inner voice shouted. I took my phone and called one of my flings.

IN DR SPENCER'S OFFICE.

"That was one hell of a story.You went through an ordeal

my dear."Doctor Mitchell Spencer said.It was already dark

outsid.Well my past deserved a book after all.

I sighed."I know.So this is the point where I'm at.I

acknowledge that I need help Mitchell.I cannot go on like

this.My life has no sense of direction at all.Honestly

speaking I don't wanna die alone all sad and shit, no

family,no children and definitely no chill.I can't continue

using sex as my escape. I need help or else I might end up being a sex addict." I cried.

"We need to start from the beginning. Do you recall everything that happened the day you were raped by the brothers? We need to talk about that and your childhood to tackle this problem because the problem didn't start with you being raped. It started when you found out that your father was abusive all along and you were literally turning a blind eye. You saw everything Majesty when you were a

child but brushed it off from your memory. Your father let
you down. Then there was the Jackson brothers, your
uncles who took everything away and Justin. What takes
the cup is your father killing your mother. All of that is
leading you to paint all men with the same brush. You
might not want to admit it but you're channelling all that
anger and hatred to all men. You are looking at them with
the same eye like how you could have looked at your
father if he was here, your uncles and Justin. You think

having sex with them and dumping them afterwards is a way of punishing them for what the men in your life did to you. Which I will be honest with you is very stupid. But I have seen worse so I will not judge you. People out there do a lot of crazy things to deal with their issues." She said.

"You know what Mitchell this is not working for me. I spent the whole day telling you my story and that's your takeaway? You're making it sound as if the whole thing is actually my fault. You sit there for 100 bucks an hour

listening to me go on and on about my story but you don't have a solution to my problems.Nothing is changing." I shouted.

"Its ok for you to be frustrated or scared but you have to got to take control over your life now before your past ruins it.You need to confront all the men who did you wrong,forgive them and then you can claim your life back.It may sound like a lot but I promise you it will be ok."

She said.

"Its not gonna be ok.Its not ok if you want me to forgive
my own father who killed my mother.Its not ok if you want
me to forgive Treet for what he did well let's not forget
about Tyrone who also wanted a piece of me.Its not ok if
you want me to forgive my uncles for throwing us in the
streets and its damn not ok of you want me to forgive
Justin for breaking my heart when I did nothing wrong. I
was a victim in all of this.I never did anything wrong to any
of them.You know what?I was right from the word go.I

need to handle my own damn problem. Paying you to listen

to me is not the solution." I stood up.

She fixed her glasses. "Then what's the solution? "

"I need to sort this out on my own. Thank you." I said.

"Majesty you can't keep running away from your past

because sooner or later it's gonna catch up with you. You

can't keep running. Confront your fears, confront everyone

that hurt you and forgive them wholeheartedly then you

can move on. Otherwise everytime you're going to

remember what happened to you and you're going to do everything to get the fix which is sex. For now you're using it as an solace but soon it will be an addiction. You have to forgive and forget because you're stuck in one place. You're stuck in your past as a result you're just going around in circles"

I walked out of her office agitated. How could she expect me to forgive a man who killed my mother, a man who stole my innocence and a man who broke my heart for no reason at all.

15

MAJESTY

Forgiveness does not change the past but it sure enlarges
the future.

"Unfortunately Mary the sessions didn't go so well as I had
anticipated." After the whole saga at Dr Spencer's office I
decided to just leave the idea of therapy because it clearly
wasn't working for me. The following morning when I went
to work Mary was breathing down my neck because
apparently Dr Spencer told Mary that I stormed out. What

happened to confidentiality again?

"You haven't even started yet and you have given up

already. Patience pains but pays. You have to give Mitchell

a chance to show you what she has got." She sat down.

"All we do is talk, talk, talk and talk. In fact I do much of the

talking while she is just sitting there charging 100 bucks

per hour. I ain't a storyteller now am I? She is not giving me

any solution to my problem. All she does is listen to me

going on and on about my life and pity me that's it." I

gathered the files that were on my table and started going through them.

"Ohhh so now you admit that there is actually a problem. These things take time Maj. You can't just expect to go for one or two sessions then boom everything is alright. You need to trust Dr Spencer too she has seen and heard a lot. She knows what she is doing. Give it a try Maj everything will work out."

I let out a loud sigh. "Fine I will give it one last shot, just one

more time. And if it doesn't work out for me I will stop. "

She smiled. "Exactly that's the spirit."

"Good now go back to work. I need a new app from you

guys as soon as yesterday."

She stood up smiling. "The way you bully us around here

we need a raise."

"Your ass is fired." I laughed and she walked out laughing

as well.

There wasn't nothing much to do apart from checking out

the files of the new artists in town. I had people to do the donkey work for me anyway. After that I would just go back home. The perks of being the boss. While I was at it Petty called informing me that I had a visitor.

"Let them in." I dropped the call and after a few minutes my door opened and she ran in holding her pink stuffed monkey.

"Mommy..!!" I stood up and met her half way.

"Look who is here." I swung her around while Ethan was

just leaning on the door smiling.

"When did my baby come back."

"Yeschterday."She smiled

"Ohh you came back yesterday. Did you enjoy yourself at

Disneyland?" I asked

She nodded repeatedly smiling."Fun,fun,fun.But granny

said no to ishecream."She sulked.

"Ohh don't worry my baby I will buy lots of ice cream ok."

She smiled.

Time sure fly. Not so long ago she was an infant who gave us a hard time at night but now she was a very active and clever kid. Man was she beautiful! I never actually thought that Afro-asian hybrids would look so cute but looking at Girly now i wouldn't mind marrying a Korean or Chinese man. She had those pretty Asian eyes, in fact all her features were just so beautiful. According to her I was her mommy. I told Ethan to talk her out of it because it would confuse her in the future but the little bunny here was hell

bent on calling me mom so at the end I just let her and

decided to become her mommy much to her

grandmother's chagrin. Well that one has issues.

"Next time I will take you to Disneyland myself ok." She

smiled nodding vigorously.

"Hey. I'm in the room too you know." Ethan walked in and

gave me a perk.

"We came to take you out for lunch that is if you don't have

much to do." He looked at the files that were on my table.

"I don't have much to do. I was just checking out some artists' work and none of them impress me so let's go." We walked while I was carrying Girly and Ethan's hand was on my back. While we were approaching the elevator Treet walked out. Gosh not this again. The hostility between Ethan and Treet was real and at the moment I could sense the tension when they exchanged stares. Treet ignored Ethan and came to give me a perk.

"Don't, don't." Girly was overprotective of me. As young as

she was she didn't like any man close to me apart from

her dad. So she pushed Treet's face off when he gave me a

perk. I could feel Ethan smirking.

"I came to take you for lunch but I can see you have

company so dinner tonight at your place." He walked away

before I could even answer him. The last time I checked we

weren't dating and I made it clear that I wanted nothing to

do with him anymore why was he making my life so

difficult.

"Let's go." Ethan said leading us into the elevator.

We went to a nearby restaurant. Girly was talking about her

trip and it was funny even though I didn't understand some

of the things she was saying. After lunch Ethan drove me

back to work and left afterwards. My employees were

doing everything for me. I just signed where it needed to be

signed and welcomed our new interns. At 5pm I went back

home. Romeo was on an off so it meant I had to make

dinner for myself.

"Arrghhh gosh I hate cooking." I complained as I made my way to the kitchen.

When I was about to start peeling the potatoes Ethan called.

"Hey Eth wassup." I said.

"Mommy come here." She said in her funny accent.

"Ohhh its Girly.Why do you want me to come there sweety." I asked.

"Dinner." She said.

"Ohhh you want me to come and have dinner with you." I

smiled.

"Yesh" She said

I thought about Treet. Ahhh fuck him my baby comes first.

"Okay honey I'm on my way." She dropped the call. I had a

feeling that Ethan put her up to it.

I texted Treet and informed him that we couldn't have

dinner and I switched my phone off as I drove to Ethan's

place. I walked in the apartment and was impressed when I

saw father and daughter in aprons trying to make dinner.

"Mommy." Girly ran to me with her arms wide open when

she saw me. I lifted her and swung her around while she

giggled. That was a beautiful sound I have ever heard

"Hey you're here." Ethan said and gave me a brief hug

accompanied with a peck on the cheek.

I smiled. "I see you're trying to make something here." I

laughed. "But now that I'm here I need you two to sit down

and let me take over because the last thing I want is to be

poisoned by burnt and undercooked food."

He laughed and took off his apron. "Well the kitchen is

yours madam."

"Thank you." I wore the apron and I carefully placed Girly

on her chair much to her protest.

"But mommy.. cook." She cried out.

"No honey you will sit there and watch me cook ok."

"Cook mommy cook." She sulked.

"Ethan exactly what are you teaching my child. She

shouldn't be in the kitchen to begin with." I gave him a death stare.

"She wanted to cook I couldn't say no to that face. After all

I didn't do anything wrong she is a girl she is bound to

know about cooking." He shrugged. Father of the century.

"She is just 2 and a half." I shook my head and took some

plastic utensils as well as some vegetables and gave Girly

to cook. She clapped her hands in happiness and started

"cooking."

I wasn't a fan of cooking but I was good at it so I made my infamous kobe beef, cassoulet, nicoise salad and pap for Ethan. You can take Ethan out of the rural but you can't take the rural out of Ethan. Pap and beef was his number one meal come what may. He was even rubbing it off on Girly who loved pap like nobody's business. Well that's great at least she didn't demand to eat rats and dogs. You can't trust someone with Chinese genes. We enjoyed our dinner with Ethan hammering while eating that's how

much he enjoyed his meals and Girly was actually copying

her dad. Well like father like daughter.

"What about some chocolate dessert." Ethan asked.

"No Girly can't have sugar right now or it will be hard to put

her to sleep."

"But I can have it." He grinned and went to the kitchen.

I carried Girly and started pacing up and down while

singing a lullaby for her. A few minutes later she was in

dreamland. I layed her carefully in her bed and dimmed the

lights.

I walked back downstairs. "Want some chocolate cake."

Ethan offered.

"Umm unfortunately I have to go back hey before its late."

said checking my wrist watch.

He sulked." I thought you were sleeping over."

"I wish I could but I'm going to work tomorrow remember

and I don't have my work outfits here."

"Ok fine then.Let me walk you out."

"Drive safe ok."

We hugged which unexpectedly became longer than it

should have. The atmosphere became all awkward.

"Ahem... I will see you tomorrow." I immediately drove off.

"What was that?" I shook my head.

When I arrived at my place I saw a car parked on the

driveway. I don't get why Treet couldn't just give up. I got off

the car and saw him waiting for me on the doorstep.

"Didn't I tell you not to come?" I shouted.

"Well I knew something like this was going to happen. I

knew he was going to use the kid to get what he wants

and he won but I'm not the one to give up either. I'm sure

by now you know that about me."

I rolled my eyes and punched the code on the door. "Tree I

don't need this drama honestly. I made it clear that

whatever we had is over. Why can't you just leave me alone

and move on with your goddamn life. The message was

loud and clear. We had fun and now its time we part ways."

He followed me inside."And you expect me to walk away
just like that. Forget everything and act like nothing
happened. Majesty I can't do it no matter how much I try.I
get it you're angry at me and your anger is justified but I
can't leave you alone.I'm in love with you dammit I can't
just walk away. I know you're aware that I'm in love with
you but you choose to ignore it.Majesty give me a chance
please to win you back.I know I gravely wronged you but
all I'm begging is for you to give me one last chance to

right my wrongs. I promise you won't regret it."

"You can't love me Treet. You cannot. I'm a broken

woman. I'm too damaged for you to handle. I'm not a wife

material, I'm not perfect. I sleep around. I'm not worthy of

your love. I need help Treet and I come with a lot of

baggage. I know that is not the kind of woman you wanna

built something beautiful with. I know you need a stable

woman and I'm not that for you. I'm not perfect and I'm not

what a normal man could want in a woman. You deserve

better Treet. You deserve a woman who can give you a home, a stable family without drama. I'm characterless, I'm immoral, I'm the worst and you can't fall in love with me." I roughly wiped off my tears.

He cupped my face." I'm not perfect either and I'm definitely not what a normal woman would want in a man. I'm not a husband material either. I'm not a saint

Majesty and no one is. However with both our flaws we can complete each other. I just want you to give me a chance

to show you that we can make it work. We don't have to be perfect for each other. Affection is better than perfection right. We can make this work."

I sighed. "A lot happened between us and I have some unexplainable hatred for you. There is a lot running in my head right now and honestly I don't know what I want. My emotions are all over the place, it's too much. Treat and you won't be able to handle me. I need to clear my head. I need to focus on getting better mentally. I need to do this on my

own. And with you forever being in my space like
this, you're making it difficult for me. You don't give me time
to breathe. You're always in my personal space. Give
me time to deal with my issues and you deal with yours
then maybe, maybe we can then talk but like I said I come
with a lot and you can't handle me. "I sat down on the
couch.

He nodded. "That can work for me. I will give you the much
space you need while I deal with my own issues as well."

"Ok."

"So can I stay for tonight. I won't do anything I promise. I

just wanna sleepover here tonight and after that I won't

come unannounced."

I agreed and we went to bed. We cuddled without saying a

word to each other. I could feel how hard he was but he

was refraining himself. I wanted him as bad but I just had

to control myself.

"Treet what exactly happened 12 years ago at the

party. Why did you force yourself on me?"

He sighed. "I knew that one of these days you were going to ask me that. I will tell you everything but first of all I pray that one day you forgive me and be able to move past what happened."

He started narrating how the events took place not leaving everything out. I cried at some point after finally getting that I was actually partly responsible for what happened.

"So basically I'm the one who initiated the whole

thing...ohhh my God why didn't you tell me Treet?"

"No don't blame yourself. Its all on me I shouldn't have given you alcohol.You acted out of character because you were drunk.People loose morals because of it and I know better.I'm to blame for what happened Jesty.I should have treated you right the following morning or at least made a follow up of what happened to you but I didn't. As a result you fell pregnant and lost both our children. I wasn't there for you and you went through all that alone.I was busy

pampering Angela who was carrying someone's else child while you went through the whole pregnancy alone.If i was there none of it could have happened and I'm sorry that its too lat.What happened already happened.I lost my children and I wasn't there to share the pain with you."

"Do you wanna see how Gift looked like?" I asked wiping off my tears.

"Maybe then we can have a chance to grieve together."He nodded his head.

I walked to my closet and took a photo album.

"He had my eyes and hair." He smiled sadly touching the picture.

"Yes he had your eyes. I honestly still don't understand what happened. He was doing just fine and the next moment he had a fever and that was that. He was so healthy and out of nowhere he became sick and he was gone in a blink. They had promised me Treet, they had promised that they were going to save him but I guess it

was God's plan. I still don't understand why he chose to punish me and take all of my children away from me. It still feels like it happened yesterday." By now my tears were uncontrollably coursing down my cheeks.

"All your children?" He asked.

"Yes all. After I lost Gift there was a doctor called Justin he was always there for me. A few years later I fell in love with him. He was my first love. I fell pregnant without knowing. I miscarried so I lost three children. The doctors has it that I

might no be able to give birth again. Every time I think of that my world just come to a halt. I don't see myself going somewhere. I don't see myself in the near future having a family that is the other reason why I chose the path I chose to live my life. Because I'm like what's the point? The very exact thing that makes me whole has been taken away from me. My happiness has been robbed from me again and again. So I did what I had to do to forget the pain and the misery but it still catches up on me. I know my

actions may are not justifiable to someone who is not in
my shoes,its understandable.But until everyone knows
what it is like to feel the pain that I feel everyday when I go
to sleep.They will stop judging me. I want to be a better
person Treet.A better woman and be a good example to
other women.That is why I have started therapy something
I should have done a long time ago but it's never too late
right."I looked at him."I'm giving you a chance to walk away
Treet and find yourself a better someone."

He kissed my forehead."I still want to stay and be with you.We will get through this together.We are in this together."

After a lot of grieving we finally drifted off to sleep.The following morning before he left we both agreed on certain terms and conditions.He was not going to just visit me unannounced and invade my personal space.We would call each other and talk if there is need be.We were giving each other space to deal with our issues separately. For

the record he was still married to Angela and since they

failed to settle their issue out of court

Treet was taking it

to court. He was stressed about it and the negative effects

it was going to bring so he had to deal with it alone

without any disturbances. On my part I had decided to

continue with my therapy and I wanted to put all my focus

on it. I even called Dr Mitchell Spencer and apologized for

my behavior on our last meeting and made it a point that I

wanted to continue. She was glad to hear from me. She was even more pleased that I was giving her a chance to turn my life around. I made an appointment with her. We were going to have our sessions at 6pm to 8pm during the weekdays since I was a busy someone, then on weekends it will be from 10am to 1pm.

So after work I drove straight to her office where she was eagerly waiting for me. After exchanging pleasantries we started with our session.

"I had buried my past far, far away and you reminded me exactly why I had to remember. I have realised I have driven too fast in life, carrying the baggage of what happened 12 years ago. I carried too much pain, too much hatred as a result I missed too many chances to turn my life around and passing too many people in the dust who could have helped me. I don't want it to be like that anymore. I want to stand up, dust myself, fix myself and be a better woman. A woman whom one day might be an

inspiration to someone out there. However it's not
easy. You gave me a challenge. You told me to forgive them
and I want to try but it's not easy for me. I was with Treet
last night and we talked. A part of me still hate him but I
want that to change. I want to move on." She gave me the
face wipes and wiped my tears off.

"If forgiveness was easy there was going to be world
peace. It's not easy and you need to do it wholeheartedly. I
believe you will forgive them at your own pace and you can

move past this too. This is your first step to the right
direction. When I'm looking at you you're just like a
diamond. It is a lump of coal that has endured enormous
temperature and pressure over a very long time. No pain, no
gain right. You have been through a lot and I'm here to help
you up, dust you off so that you shine just like the diamond
you have always been. You got this Majesty, you can do
this and it's going to be ok." She held my hand in
reassurance.

I nodded my head vigorously smiling with tears coursing down my cheeks at the same time."I got this and its going to be ok."

She nodded too."You got this.You're Majesty."

We both laughed and continued with our session. When I was done for the day I felt rejuvenated when I walked out of her office.I was finally going to gather the scattered pieces of my life back together.

I switched on my phone and went to my contact list.I

deleted all my flings and fuck buddies. Sleeping around

wasn't going to help here if I wanted to do this. Mitchell

gave me a challenge as well to put my sex life on hold and

abstain for at least a month.

"Be a celibate for a while. The big part of healing is finding

something you love to do. It doesn't always have to be

sex." She said so I took that seriously.

While I was at it Prince called.

"Bro" I said.

"Did you see your sister's Instagram posts lately." With his tone I could tell he was angry as hell.

"What's wrong?" I was worried.

"It would be better if you see it for yourself and another thing she came to your place because apparently according to her you will understand her better because you live your life the way you want and no one dare to say a word to you. Deal with her because things will get messy if I do." He dropped the call.

While sitting in the car I logged in on my IG and viewed

Makanaka's post.

She had posted pictures of her in clubs wearing skimpiest

outfits I have laid my eyes on, drinking and partying and

wrote a caption .. "Opinions are like assholes everyone is

entitled to one, think what you want y'all #unapologetic

#freebird"

I sighed loudly. This was partly my fault that she was

turning this wild. I have been so involved in my own life

without giving a damn about how she lived hers. I never sat down with her and did a proper talk when it was actually my responsibility. I left everything to Mrs Jaji forgetting that she wasn't her biological daughter. For the first time in my life I started questioning my decisions and my lifestyle. What exactly was I teaching Maka? However it wasn't too late to right my wrongs and lead her to the right path. I drove like a maniac to my place. I was welcomed by music blasting and when I walked in she was enjoying

herself holding a wine glass. She didn't even hear me coming.

I turned the speakers off.

"Ohhh killjoy. You're here sis." She wasn't drunk because by the look of it she had just opened that wine bottle. I took it and poured the contents in the sink.

"What the hell is wrong with you?" She shouted. We will talk about disrespect at its best later.

"What the hell is this?" I said showing her pictures.

"Arghh those are just pictures I was partying no big deal."

She shrugged.I sighed in frustration.I was looking at my
younger version.

"How old are you again?" I asked.

"18 and I believe I'm a responsible someone. I know what I
was doing and don't even think about lecturing me
because you're the last person to think what I did was
wrong." She rolled her eyes.

"Makanaka I'm older than you and you will not speak to me

with that tone. You're supposed to be focused on your studies not going around clubbing, drinking and posting shit like this. I want you to take down this post or they will be consequences. The next thing you will fall pregnant and your whole future will be ruined." I said

"Yaah you know better neeh. I learn from the best after all. You're in no position to tell me shit Majesty because you sleep around like nobody's business. What do you know about morals? And even if I fall pregnant at least I

will be 18 than someone I know who fell pregnant at 15."

It hit home and I realised I wasn't a good example to her

but I was going to change that. I went upstairs and took my

black channel belt. I was going to go BMW (black mama

whipping) on her ass. I walked calmly downstairs and

found her busy chatting on her phone with legs on the

table.

"Maka come and help me out here in the kitchen. Did you

eat?" I asked.

She dragged herself."Yes I ate and you can make yourself a sandwich or something."Great she ate.I was going to work on her ass real good.The last thing I wanted was her passing out on me.

"Cool umm pass me the cheese from the fridge please." I said and she rolled her eyes and went to the fridge.

When she was about to open it I held her hand tightly and gave her a whip on her exposed thighs.She didn't expect it so she was shocked and before she could recover from

the shock.I whipped her again. "You have the nerve to

backchat me wena...you have a big mouth now right we

are going to change that.." _Whip!_

"I'm doing this for you and I don't want you to be like me...I

want you to be a better someone but naa you have grown

balls now." She was wailing loudly as she tried to free

herself from my grip but failed miserably.

"Sorry sisi,sorry sisi,I won't do it again." She cried but I

continued whipping her.

"I'm not beating you dear. I love you very much but I'm

beating the whore inside of you...I want her out.." _Whip!

Whip! Whip!_

"Don't touch the belt...don't even..leave the belt. I don't

want to use my hands because I will hurt you..remove you

hands. Let go of the belt" _Whip!_ _Whip! Whip!_

"Soriyi sisi ...ndiregererewo handichazviite futi...sori(Sorry

sis forgive me I won't do it again..sorry)" She cried out

while I went on BMW on her ass.

"You're speaking in your mother language now huh." I have
her three more whips. When I was satisfied that I had
disciplined her enough I stopped and she cried, hiccuped,
wiping her tears and snot.

"I love you Mekanaka very much that is why it was
necessary for me to flog you because you have crossed
the line. They said he who heeds discipline shows the way
to life and whoever pays a blind eye leads others
astray. I'm not going to lead you astray so I'm going to

discipline you when necessary. I know I haven't been a good example to you and Prince. Mrs Jaji have been taking the role of advising you but you're stubborn that I know. So I'm going to take over and discipline you and lead you to the right path. I'm cutting off your allowance, you're going to submit all your car keys. It's only an hour drive from here to California University so I will organize a chauffeur for you which means from today you're staying off residence and you will be staying with me. Things gotta change and it will

start now. Tomorrow we are going for shopping no more
whore outfits for your ass. Its ok to look good but you're
not going to walk around half naked like that at least not
on my watch. There are some painkillers in the cupboard
drink them and go to sleep you need the rest. One more
thing no more alcohol for you till you're twenty one and for
crying out loud take that Instagram post before I make
you. You're not going to be like me. Never." She kept on
nodding and sniffing I knew I got her where I wanted her to

be. The good thing about beating her ass I knew she was never going to repeat that mistake ever again that's how scared she was of getting flogged. I called Prince and informed him how I disciplined Makaanaka and he was glad I did because he thought I was going to side with her. After chatting for a while he dropped the call he had a surgery to attend to. After all the flogging I didn't have the power to cook so I just ordered. When our meals came I called her downstairs and she came with her tail between her legs.

We ate in silence and when we were done she broke the ice. "I'm sorry sis. I promise I won't do it again. I'm also sorry for what I have said. I know I have hurt you very much. I'm really sorry."

"And I'm sorry too for hitting you but I'm not regretting it. I will do it again and again and again if it means I'm leading you to the right path. I want you to have a better life than mine and I want you to make good choices so if I have to go BMW on your ass I will do it and I won't feel bad about

it. You want some ice cream?" I smiled.

"Yes." She smiled back. We took a tub and went to Netflix and chill.

While we were enjoying The Witcher, I got a call from Dad.

"I need to meet you tomorrow, I will text you the address.

"He said after we exchanged pleasantries.

From the sound of it this was serious.

16

MAJESTY

Just like a promise, a contract too can be a credit.

"Why do you look so disturbed?" Maka asked when I came back from talking to Ethan's dad on the phone.

I sat down and sighed. "I'm just worried. Ethan's dad didn't sound ok over the phone. He asked to meet up and I'm just praying it's nothing bad. I'm just having a hunch that something is not right."

She snaked her hands around my neck. "You don't have to

be so negative maybe its something else that he needs

your help with."

"You think?"

She nodded her head."Yes I think so.If it was something

bad then he could have called the whole family and talked

about it.Now stop worrying unnecessarily and let's

continue eating our ice cream and watching our favourite

series here."

She gave me the ice cream tub.I couldn't shake the feeling

that something was not right. Ethan's dad was not your talkative type but when I talked to him over the phone he didn't sound ok. Why did he want to meet up with me? I tried to brush the thoughts off but when I went to bed they came back haunting me and it was difficult for me to fall asleep. After so much struggle I managed to sleep around 2am. The following morning I woke up early since I was supposed to meet Ethan's dad around 8am. I showered and wore a long black sheath dress and black red bottom

heels.I applied minimum makeup and tied my hair.Simple
but sophisticated.

"Morning sis." Maka said while giving me a beefsteak
sandwich and orange juice.

"Hey baby.Thank you for the sandwich.I could get used to
this everyday.Look I may come back very late because
after meeting Ethan's dad I will go to work and after work I
will have to see my therapist. Don't get up to no good
while I'm away I will go black mama whipping on your fat

ass.If you need anything call me ok."

She rolled her eyes."I won't get up to no good I know

better."

I perked her cheek."I gotta bounce the sandwich was

amazing thank you.I love you.Bye."

I drove to Maggie's Coffee bay where I was supposed to

meet Ethan's dad.When I walked in he was already there

sitting at the far corner.Great I hated middle tables

anyway.I wonder why he wanted us to meet like that and

why did he have his lawyer with him. When he saw me he stood up and we exchanged a brief hug. I exchanged a formal handshake with Mr Murray his lawyer and then sat down.

"A latte for you?" He asked.

"No no I'm fine Maka made a greasy sandwich for me."

Honestly I could do with a latte but I just couldn't stomach

it at the moment because I was eagerly waiting to hear

why he wanted us to meet like this and why was his lawyer

present. I was nervous.

"Ok ok. So how have you been doing. You haven't been

attending any family gatherings for a while now." He

sipped on his espresso.

"I have been struggling to get it together but I have started

therapy now and I feel like things are finally falling into

place. Happy days ahead." I smiled.

He smiled back. "I'm happy to hear that you started therapy.

You should have started sooner but its never too late."

I nodded smiling. He continued enjoying his muffins while I was impatiently waiting for him to tell me the reason behind this meeting.

"Umm I don't mean to be rude but I have to go to work after this so I why am I here?" I asked.

He smiled. "Patience is a virtue my dear. He wiped his mouth with a napkin.

"I have lung cancer. I was diagnosed 6 months ago."

"What!!!!" It came out louder than I had intended,

unnecessarily drawing attention to us.

"I'm sorry. I..umm...I'm just so shocked. I don't know what to say.Does Ethan know?Are you sure its not a misdiagnosis?"

For someone who had such a deadly disease he was calm."I know its hard for you to believe it and trust me I had the same reaction when I was told about it.I don't smoke,I don't drink and I was like why me and why lung cancer but as times goes by I accepted that it is what it

is.God's plan."

"Can't something be done like surgery. I will look for a specialist and...Ohh God." I sighed sadly.Ethan's dad had taken a role of being a father to me when my own was in jail.He raised me and made me who I was now.If he didn't step up I don't know where me and my siblings could have been.He didn't deserve such a deadly disease.Sometimes I wonder why horrible things happen to good people.Its just so unfortunate.I thought about Ethan and how it was going

to destroy him. He was going to be so broken. He didn't have a good relationship with his mother but with his dad they were best buddies. He looked up to him in everything. He coughed harshly, trying to clear his throat. I even realised that while breathing he was letting out a wheeze. He wiped his mouth and the handkerchief he was using had blood on it. This was bad. "Surgery is not an option. The doctors tried a regimen of radiology and chemotherapy in hopes that it might delay the spread of

the disease possibly put it into remission. It showed positive effects for some time and I actually thought I was in remission and I had hope I would make it but my condition is deteriorating sooner than I expected. It doesn't help that the cancer has spread in my body and the doctors cannot do anything about it but to just try and help me to live at least for a little bit longer. My wife doesn't know as well as Ethan. I know they are not going to handle the news well especially Ethan. This is some of the

things I wanted to tell you. I worry about Ethan a lot."

I wiped my tears off. "We can't lose you dad. Ethan will not

handle this well. He will be broken and your wife? You have

been their world, you have been their pillar. You have been

my strength too. The whole family relies on you. You're our

backbone. Something can be done."

"The doctor said I have 6 months left or less considering

the fact that it's getting difficult for me to breathe at

times." He looked at Mr Murray who took out a file and

handed it to me.

I opened it. "Our contract?" I gave him a confused look. This was the contract we both signed when he agreed to invest and sponsor me on Majesty Innovations. When my company was still very small.

"Why are you giving me this?"

He sighed. "I think its time for you to comply with Article 3 Clause 4 of the contract."

"If any unfortunate happenings befall the Jaji

Family, Majesty Brown will step up as stated in Article 3

Clause 4." I read that part.

He nodded."Remember when before you signed the

contract I asked you if you understood everything.You

asked me to elaborate on that Clause and I did and you

were ok with it.You agreed to help in whatever means

necessary if an unfortunate incident happens.This is an

unfortunate incident and now I want you to step up and

help."

I sighed."What exactly do you want me to do?"

"You have known Ethan for as long as I remember. You guys practically grew up together.You know that if he gets to know that he is going to lose me in a few months time he will not be able to handle it.He is impulsive and he does anything stupid when he is hurt.No one knows him better than you do and when I die I want to make sure he is left in good hands.I want to peacefully rest knowing that I have left my only son to woman who is able to take care of him

like I did. I know Ethan is not a child anymore but he is my only son. So even if he gets old and grey he always be my boy. You know how to take care of Ethan when he is hurt...."

"What exactly do you want me to do?" I asked looking confused.

"I want you to marry my son. I want you and Ethan to get married that's my last wish." He dropped the bomb.

What the fuck. "What???"

"I know its a shock to you but that's my only wish. Before we came here in America I went to see your dad. He made me promise to take care of you, Maka and Prince and make sure that you settle down and be happy when you're older. I must say I have failed in many aspects but its never too late to honor his wish. I know you only saw Ethan as your friend but that can change. My only wish is you guys settle down and Girly gets to have her own mother. Already you're her mother it just have to be official. Ethan too gets

to marry someone he knows and someone who knows

him in and out. When I'm gone you will heal his

wounds. You have always managed and he always found

solace in you."

I sighed and shook my head. "You're asking for a lot. I never

saw Ethan like that. He has always been my friend. How

can he just become my husband overnight? How do you

expect that to happen? I can be there for him when you're

gone as friend but marrying him, that's a lot."

"I'm aware of that and trust me I didn't wanna use the contract against you."

"Ethan's happiness is not for sale and so is mine. Do you realise you're making a business deal here instead of looking over your son? Then if I agree to this it will be a compromise because I have to honor the contract so that I won't lose my company and everything else I worked hard for. I owe you my life. I admit but please don't put me in such a difficult position. You know my sentiments on the

idea of marriage. Also have you considered Ethan's feelings in all of this? Does he want this? Does he see me as his wife in the future? What if he has someone he is in love with? And most importantly is all this ok with Mrs Jaji?"

I admit I owed him my life but marrying Ethan was just too much for me. He was my friend I have never seen him more than that.

He sighed . "I was expecting this reaction from you and of

course anyone else could have reacted the same way if they are in your shoes. I can handle my wife. However I want to ask you two things. What if turns out that Ethan actually loves you and wants to be with you? Would you consider this proposal of mine. What if I had used another means of asking you without using the contract were you going to consider it?"

I kept quiet for a while trying to digest everything. Lately I have been trying to pick up the pieces of my life and

joining them together. Everything was starting to make sense but now I felt like my life just took a wrong turn and things were back to square one. I was caught between a rock and a hard place. Ethan has always been there for me through it all. He has always held my hand and gave me a shoulder to cry on when I needed it the most. What if it turns out that he actually feels something for me and as a result I have to return the favour once his father is gone. I didn't have an answer to that question.

"Ethan doesn't see me like that.I'm sure this whole marriage thing will come as a shock to him and he will loose his mind."

"Ok today you go and talk to Ethan.If he doesn't feel anything for you but only sees you as a friend I will drop this whole thing.I'm sorry for putting you in this position but I'm just doing what I think is the best.You and Ethan know each other in and out.You look good together and I think you will make a great couple.Think about it."

"Anyway when are you planning to tell Ethan and your wife about the cancer? They need to know about this." I said

"I will tell them. I have tried but it's not easy."

"I know. I will leave now." I stood up and left.

I called Petty and told him that I wasn't pitching up for

work. There was no way I could go to work when two

bombs were just dropped on me. Firstly having to digest

that any time I was going to lose the man who was more

like a father to me was already too hard and secondly the

same man was asking me to marry his son who happened to be my best friend. As it is marriage was something I was scared of especially after what happened to my mother. I drove back home.

"How did it go?" Maka asked as soon as I walked in.

"And weren't you supposed to like go to work after meeting with dad? Why do you look so worried?"

"Maka can you please take some wine in the cellar. I think I need it." I removed my shoes and threw myself on the

couch.

She arched her eyebrow. "Ohh okay. What is wrong?"

She went and took my favourite red wine. I took a gulp

from the bottle.

"Maka can I ask you something?"

"Yea I'm all ears. Shoot." She sat down attentively.

"Given a chance

would you accept Ethan as your brother in

law? I'm not saying we are dating I'm just asking. Like just

asking"

She took the wine bottle from me and gulped the

contents. "I'm sorry what?!!!" Okl didn't expect that reaction

from her because the only one who was supposed to be

gulping wine down was me.

"I said would you accept Ethan as your brother in law given

a chance." I asked.

"Why? What is happening? I mean you guys are friends. You

practically grew up together and he is supposed to be like

a brother to you right. Are you guys dating?" She was

restless or maybe I was reading too much into things.

"No no I didn't say that I was just asking. You know what

forget I asked." I drank the rest of the wine and walked

out. I found myself driving to Tyrone's place. Ask me what I

was doing there and I have no idea.

Even though our last encounter wasn't a friendly one he

still welcomed me with open arms. I needed a friend at this

moment and going to Ethan was not a good idea.

"I thought you were angry at me." I broke the ice.

"I wasn't. What you did was justified. Me and my brother

wronged you." He looked down. Besides the phone calls

and that one last time he came to my house this was our

first time sitting down and talking like normal people after

the incident at the restaurant.

"Yes you intended to sleep with me but you didn't it was

Treet who took my innocence." I said

He nodded. "I know he told me about it and I'm very sorry

that the whole thing happened. I'm sorry hey."

"I have nothing against you and I'm also sorry that you

were caught up in my mess but honestly I never planned

on revenging against you and Treet.Ok maybe I did a little

though.Meeting you and meeting him was purely

coincidental.What happened after that too was beyond my

control.I never intended to vengefully play the both of

you.As a matter of fact I enjoyed both your company in

different ways.If I led you on Tyrone then I'm sorry.I only

needed a friend from you and I'm hoping that we could

both move on from this and continue being friends."I

played with my fingers.

He sighed." What about my brother?Are you guys going to

pursue a relationship now that his divorce with Angela is

almost granted?"

Honestly deep down I was starting to consider having a

relationship with Treet.We connected in some type of

way.It wasn't all about sex for me anymore.We shared a

lot together from the pain, the loss of our loved ones. He

was my first preference if I was to consider being in a

relationship with someone. However there was the issue

with Mr Jaji on the other side.

"I don't know Tyrone. I honestly don't know. A lot is going on

right now and I have no idea where it's going to leave us."

He sighed. "All along I wondered why my brother had

suddenly become so happy when his toxic marriage with

Angela was taking a toll on him. I knew it was because of a

woman and I knew he was in love. Now I realise maybe the reason he didn't fight to walk out of that marriage sooner was because he didn't have anyone in mind to move on with but when you came into the picture things changed. I'm not saying you're a rebound. If anything my brother loves you. You make him happy that is why I chose to let you go because I don't wanna hurt him by fighting him over you. Also I saw how you looked at him. Its very different from how you look at me. You might not wanna

admit it but you feel something strong for him and we

both know what that is. I love you but I think you're better

off with Treet."

I sighed. "Sometimes love is not enough."

"I couldn't agree with you more." He nodded and we were

silent for a while.

I cleared my throat "Ahem...Tyrone what would you do. Let's

say you have to choose over someone you care about and

someone who has been there for you through it all. Who

would you choose?"I asked.

"Are you in a position where you have to choose between

my brother and somebody else because if that's the case

of course I'm vouching for my brother."He said.

I laughed nervously." No no that's not the case.It's just that

I have to choose between umm my brother and Mrs Jaji

you know the lady who took care of us.There is a situation

so I kind of need your help because I don't know who to

side with."I lied.

"I would choose someone who has been with me through it all because I believe they won't let me down. You may care about someone but you gotta ask for yourself if it is worth to destroy your relation with the one who has always been there for you. So If I were you I would choose a person who has been there through my difficult times, through thick and thin. That person will not let you down."

"Umm thanks for your opinion hey. Look I'm not staying

anymore I need to leave."

"Ok let me walk you out."

He accompanied me to where I left my car.I waved him

goodbye and drove off.I arrived home and Maka was just

sitting in the lounge the TV watching her instead of the

other way round. I wonder what was her deal but I had a

lot on my plate too so I just went to my room and threw

myself on the bed.

I didn't know how to handle the situation any more.I knew

in the near future Ethan was going to need me. I was supposed to hold his hand when he loses his father and be his shoulder to cry on just like how he was always there when I lost my mother and my children. But I could do that as a friend right. On the other hand I had to honor that clause or I would lose everything I worked so hard for. Of course I had worked hard for the company to be what it was but Mr Jaji was the one who helped me from the foundation. He also supported me through it all and if this

was his last wish I was obligated to fulfilling it. Then there

was Treet. Dear lord!

"Ohhh God what should I do." I fell asleep while battling

with my mind. I felt tiny hands on my face and someone

jumping on the bed. I slowly opened my eyes and it was

Girly. Ethan was sleeping on the couch.

"Come here my baby." She fell on my stomach giggling.

"Mommy, mommy, mommy." She said and I kissed her all

over the face.

"When did you get here baby?"

She smiled."Now now."

"Now?You got here now?But daddy is already asleep." I

pouted.

"Daddy is sleeping." She whispered.

"Yes dad is asleep so let's walk out before we disturb him

ok." She nodded giggling and we walked out.

"You could have fooled me." Maka said when I walked

downstairs.

I looked at her with confusion. "What are you talking about?"

She smiled sarcastically and shook her head. "You could have fooled me. Something is really going on between you and Ethan right. I mean you pretended like you were just asking out of the blue if it was ok for Ethan to be my brother in law, like just asking when something is actually going on between you two right."

Girly was even scared because Maka was half shouting.

"Shut it right there you're now scaring my baby. I don't get what your outburst is all about but watch it. First of all nothing is going on between Eth and I was just asking honestly. Now what I wanna know is why you're looking like you're about to burst."

She sighed. "Sorry its just the period mood swings. They are messing with my head."

I rubbed her shoulder. "I know how the hormones can be anyway let me make some popcorn right baby." I looked

at Girly.

She jumped up and down in excitement. Maka took her to

the lounge and I made some popcorn and later joined

them. They were watching Sofia the first. Man I was

starting to get used to this cartoon. With Cedric the

magician dude who is evil but none of his plans ever work.

"What are you guys watching?" Ethan walked downstairs.

"Sofia the first daddy." Girly said.

"Great then." He sat down and the whole atmosphere

became all awkward and tense.

"Umm I'm just gonna make a late lunch snack." Maka

excused herself.

"Wassup with her she looks cross." Ethan asked.

"Its the hormones." I said concentrating on the TV.

"Ohh ok."

We sat in uncomfortable silence till I decided to break the

ice. One way or the other I was going to address the issue. I

had to know what he felt about me and where our

relationship stands.

"Ethan we need to talk." I looked at him sternly.

"It sounds serious.What is it about?" He asked.

"I'm afraid we can't talk here.Can we go for a stroll."

"Sure."

We left Girly with Maka and went for a walk.We were

holding hands without saying a word to each other.Well

nothing surprising there we usually did this.

"So you wanted to talk."He said.

"Let's sit down first." We sat down on one of the road benches.

"I'm all ears." He smiled.

"You know you have always been my friend right since ages. You walked in when the rest of the walked out. We have always been there for each other. I remember when I was 10 and you were 13 we made our friendship rules and I know very well that rule number one was not to keep secrets from each other. Growing up we were transparent

with each other. We never hid anything from each other I believe that's how our friendship survived for a very long time because between us you get what you see. We are both open books. Eth I'm saying this because I want you to be completely honest with me. You and I both know that for the past few days things has been awkward between us. What is going on? Ethan if you're looking at me do you only see a friend or its something more?"

He shifted uncomfortably. "Umm Maj I don't get why you're

asking this out of the blue.Its in your head everything is

ok."

"No no Ethan something is not right here and dad asked

me to talk to you about it.I want you to be completely

honest with me about your feelings."

He sighed and looked down."Dad always pokes his nose in

other peoples business.That old man.But I don't know why

asked you to talk to me."He shrugged and I saw right

through him.He was lying.

I stood up."If you're going to keep on doing this then I'm leaving."

When I was about to walk away he held my hand."It has always been you."I turned slowly and looked at him.

"Since we were kids it has always been you.What I mean to say is,I fell in love with you Maj.Only you and I can't do anything about it.No matter how many times I tried to bury the feelings I have for you deep down they always surfaced and what hurt most is that you never noticed.I

tried. God knows I did try to forget about my feelings towards you but every time I thought it worked they would come back full force. You're everything I want in a woman and more. They can say you're a whore, you're a slut but I'm not a saint either. It's you that I want and no one else. I know you always saw a friend in me and nothing more that is why I decided not to tell you anything. Dad saw through me and encouraged me to confess my feelings. Unfortunately whenever I tried to do so something

always came up.As a result I decided not to say anything
in hopes that you would see right through me without me
having to tell you anything. I prayed that you would feel the
same way but you never did MJ.You never saw how I
looked at you and wish you were mine.Have you ever
asked yourself why I never wanted you to date when we
were teenagers?Why I always get mad when you're with
any man? Its because I actually love you.There you have
it,I love you."

To say I was shocked is an understatement. I never actually thought that Ethan felt that about me. He saw my whoring ways. He saw how I changed men. What did he love in a cheap someone like me. I looked at him waiting for him to say he was joking but now looking into his eyes I could see he was looking at me differently. That look is not the one you give to your friend. It spoke volumes. Did I deliberately ignore his feelings all this time? I thought to myself.

I was speechless for a while trying to digest what he just

told me. "Say something." He looked worried.

"I don't know what to say." I admitted.

If Ethan felt this about me and his father knew, that meant

he was going to proceed with his plans to get the two of

us married.

Was I ready to marry Ethan? Was I ready to jump from

being his best friend to being his wife? Was I ready to

forget about Treet and move on with Ethan? Most

importantly what was I going to do?

17

MAJESTY

Stuck between the two.

"I honestly don't know what to say to you Ethan I mean you

kept those feelings to yourself for how many years?This is

overwhelming.Ohh God Eth.This is a lot to digest." I sighed

heavily and shook my head looking at him.All this has now

complicated my situation even more.It changed everything.

"I honestly don't understand how you even love someone

like me."

"What do you mean someone like you?" He asked.

"I mean Ethan no man in his right mind would love a girl

who has been sleeping around.You saw it all Ethan.You

saw everything and still you feel the same about me?"

"I'm not a saint either ok.I have my history as well and I'm

in no position to judge you because I know why you did

what you did.My only fault is not trying harder to stop

you.Look Maj I long accepted that you would never feel the

same way I feel about you.You love me but you're not in

love with me. I long accepted it. I'm just hoping that one day maybe I will forget about my feelings and manage to move on. Let's just pretend like I never said anything. I don't want this to make things awkward between us or destroy our friendship. Our friendship means a lot to me and I just hope that even though I confessed my undying love for you you will not cut ties with me. I know things may not ever be the same again between us but don't break us." He sighed.

I held his hand." Let's go back home."

We walked back home in silence.I didn't know what to do

afterwards.He was my best friend and he was in love with

me and I loved him but I was not in love with him.

"Hey you guys you're back." Maka said with Girly in her

arms.We both just nodded.

"Yohhh the tension between you two one can cut with a

knife."I ignored her and took Girly and then went to the

lounge.Ethan followed and sat besides me in complete

silence. Girly was the one talking. Ethan's phone rang and it was his father. He excused himself.

"Dad asked me for dinner so I have to go. Should I leave Girly or I should take her with." He asked.

"No umm leave her. She will be fine here." I said.

"Ohh okay. Umm I have to go now."

"Yea sure let me walk you out." I stood up.

"Sure." Well the awkwardness was on another level now. We walked out and out of habit he kissed Girly and was about

to kiss me on my cheek like he always does but our eyes

met. He scratched his head and I looked the other way.

"Umm see yaa." He went into his car and drove off.

"Well baby that was awkward." I said looking at Girly. She

giggled like she understood what I meant. We went back

inside the house and Maka was done preparing for dinner.

"So you and Eth. What was that all about because clearly

anyone could see that something is going on, so

wassup? I'm your sister you don't have to hide things from

me." She smiled.

I sighed."Well apparently Ethan is in love with me.He has always been in love with him since way back.There you have it,happy."

She choked on her saliva."Wow that came as a shock to me.So what are you gonna do about it.You love him too?"She asked.

"Yes I do.I love Ethan very much but only as a friend.I have never looked at him that way.Anyway I have to go see my

therapist. I will be back at 8." I said feeding Girly pap and beef that Maka had prepared. After I was done feeding her I bathed her. That was a struggle because she wanted to do it herself. I also showered and wore my Nike track suits. "I gotta bounce guys. If you need anything call." I kissed them both and ran out because I was running late. When I arrived Mitchell was happy to see me because she thought I wasn't going to come. We started our session but at some point I was absent minded. I had a lot going on in my

mind.

"Out with it." She said.

I gave her a confused look."Out with what."

"Whatever that is bothering you because I can clearly see that something is on your mind." She fixed her specs.

I sighed."I might get married to my best friend."I said.

"Ethan?" She asked and I nodded."Why?Is that what you want?"

"Marriage was never on my to do list but Ethan's dad is

extremely ill and its his dying wish. Also still on that I signed a contract with him and one of the clauses had it that if something unfortunate happens to the family I should step up and help. As a result I'm obligated to help in this situation even if it means marrying Ethan. He trust me with Ethan's life and he thinks me marrying Eth would be for the best. I told him my concerns and sentiments on marriage and he gave me an ultimatum. He said if Ethan doesn't love me then he would drop the issue but if he

does he will proceed with his plans.I confronted Eth and it turns out he always loved him and he still does but he never wanted to tell me about it.I don't know what to do.I'm stuck."

"Who else is on your mind?"She arched her eyebrow.

"Treet."I said.

"How does he fit in all of this?"

"I know its crazy but I'm in love with him.I know it took me so long to admit but that is the truth.I know he wronged

me but still I love him. Treet and I lost our kids and I feel like with him we can heal our wounds because we share the same pain, the same misery. However when I was pregnant with Treet's children it was Ethan who was there. When I lost them he held my hand and shared the pain with me. He was always there for me, through the thick and the thin. If he was someone else he could have taken advantage of my situation and made a move on me. When I started sleeping around he could have taken advantage

of that too. My best friend has charms Mitchell and he can be a seducer. If he really wanted he could have seduced me to bed but he didn't. He respects me and all. I owe him for being there for me but I don't wanna be with him for the wrong reasons. I love Treet but I owe Ethan a lot and if anything he deserves a chance to be with me. I don't know what to do Mitchell. I honestly don't."

"I understand your dilemma but on this issue I advise you to rather do what you want and do not seek assistance

from other people to make your decision. Later it might
turn out that you made the wrong decision and you will
resent the people who advised you to make that decision. I
might advise you to go for Treet. Then you will do that but
in the long run you will realize that with Treet it wasn't
really love and the connection you thought you had was
actually lust. Or I might say go for Ethan you will learn to
love him and people always say marry your best friend but
later you will realise that it wasn't working with Ethan the

one you should have chose was Treet.I advise you to
make your own decision and if you suffer any
consequences in the future you will take the blame for it
yourself.This is your decision to make and you think it
through.As it is they look perfect for you both of them but
keep this in mind,you must know who is worth what and
don't make any hasty decision on this one or you might
live to regret for the rest of your life."

"I don't know what to do." I buried my head into my

hands. Before she replied my phone rang. It was Ethan's
dad.

"Hello dad." I said.

"Hey Majesty Ethan is in hospital." He said sounding out of
breath.

I stood up immediately. "What!!! Why? What

happened? Where are you guys? Which hospital is he in?" I

asked panicking.

"The city hospital.."

"Ok ok I will be there now." I hung up and ran out. I didn't even have time to say goodbye to Mitchell. I drove like a maniac to the hospital.

"What happened?" I ran to dad. His mother was crying sitting on the bench.

"He just passed out when I announced about my cancer. I knew he wasn't going to take it well but I didn't know it would be this bad." He coughed.

"Ok ok where are the doctors?" I asked.

"They are still working on him." He said

I sighed and sat besides Mrs Jaji.It was hard for her.I

understood her pain.Knowing that your husband will die

anytime and having your only son admitted and fighting

for his life as well was too much for her.I hugged her and

started rocking her until she was calm.

"I wonder what's taking them so long in there?" I bit my

fingers pacing up and down.

"Ethan Jaji." Finally the doctor came and we all ran to

him. Everyone was asking their own question at the same time.

"He had a minor heart attack and we also saw that he has high blood pressure. We managed to stabilize him but we have to keep him under observation for some time because he is prone to any attack. Also we have to see if there will be any need for an operation or not but for now you can go and see him."

"Ohhh dear Lord." Mrs Jaji cried out.

We walked into his room and he had tubes and drips all around his body. I just couldn't believe it that someone I was with not so long ago was fighting for his life like this.

"You guys can leave. You need to rest I will be here for the night." I said and they both agreed to leave. I called Maka and informed her I wasn't coming home that night. I didn't tell her about Ethan because I didn't want her to panic. The doctors tried to convince me to go home too but I was having none of it so they gave up. I also had to switch off

my phone because Treet was calling non stop and I wasn't in the mood of talking to him at that moment. Sleeping was difficult too because seeing Ethan fighting for his life like that was not a good sight. I couldn't lose him too. Not after everyone and everything I had lost. This one had to be spared for me at least. The following morning when I woke up he was awake too but very weak.

I couldn't control my tears. I kissed him all over the face. "Thank you for waking up. You scared me Eth. Should I

call a doctor for you? Do you need anything? Some water or something to eat?"

He smiled weakly. "Don't cry. I will be fine. Can you give me some water and stop panicking. I will be fine." I helped him drink some water and called his parents afterwards informing them that he woke up.

"Dad said you fainted after dinner." I said.

He sniffed. "Why didn't he tell me earlier that he had cancer. I could have done something. I could have looked

for some specialist. There are some cancer survivals out there. Now he broke the news when he is about to die and nothing can be done. How can I accept the fact that the man who made me who I am today, the man who taught me to kick a ball who taught me to fight and stand up for myself is about to die? It's so hard Majesty. It's so painful."

"I know Eth. I know it's hard for you to accept it but I'm

here. We are in this as a family." I squeezed myself on the

bed. We cuddled and cried together. Later on his parents came and Mrs Jaji frowned to the sight of Ethan and me on the bed. I understood where she was coming from so I took no offense.

"I will come check on you later ok." I kissed his forehead and walked out. I drove back home and I found Maka and Girly awake and busy making too much noise.

"Hey sis. Why do you look like you have been hit by a train?"

She asked.

"Mommy." Girly opened her arms for me and I lifted her.

"Ethan has been admitted at The city hospital."She almost

fell when I broke the news.

"Its the visiting hours you can go and see him.Inform

Prince as well."

"Ok ok let me go." She took her car keys and ran out.I was

left with Girly.I was too exhausted to take care of her so I

called her nanny over to my house.When she arrived she

took over on Girly and I went to take a shower and slept

after I called Petty and informed him that once again I wasn't pitching up for work. I didn't even have the energy to eat.

"Ma'am there is someone here for you." Girly's nanny

Bianca woke me up.

"Ok I will be there in a minute." I freshened up. Brunched up

my hair into a tight bun and wore my trainers. I was

rocking some black Nike shorts and a black t-shirt. Well

that's how horrible I was feeling. When I walked

downstairs I found Treet pacing up and down when he saw me he ran to me, lifted me up and swung me around in happiness.

"I finally divorced her. I'm free at last." He said in excitement.

"Wow congratulations." My level of excitement didn't match his so he picked that something was wrong.

"Ok I'm sorry for rocking up here unannounced. I know I promised to keep my distance but I tried calling you

yesterday. You weren't picking up and eventually my calls weren't going through of which I couldn't wait to share the good news so I came." He explained.

"No its ok I'm not mad that you came here to share the news but I have to go." I sighed.

"Ok where are you going? I thought you have an indoor gym?" He said scanning me.

"I'm not going to the gym. I have to go see Ethan."

He frowned. "Him again. Do I have to like compete with this

guy for your undivided attention all the time? I came here very happy that I would be able to be with you and without anyone stopping us. I came to share the good news with you but from the word go you were not happy to see me here and now you wanna go see him. Last time you cancelled our dinner because he asked you over. Is he always going to come between us?" This was my first time experiencing Treet's outburst and honestly I wasn't in the mood for this nonsense I had a lot on my plate.

I lost it too."I have to see Ethan because he is in hospital

ok and better get used to it because I might have to marry

him at the end.."It came out all wrong and I said things

that I didn't want to say.

"What did you just say?!" He was red with anger and he

was shocked.

After realizing what I just said I started stammering. "I

didn't.. I..I..it c-came out ...wrong..I ..d-did'nt want

to...say..that Ohhh God."

Majesty tell me what is going on?What did you mean just now?Tell me the truth Majesty what is going on?" He asked shaking his head and breathing heavily.

"I love you Treet b-but..."

He intervened. "I don't wanna hear that right now

Majesty.Answer my damn question. Explain to me what you meant?"

I sat down."I love you Treet like I said but maybe I cannot be with you.I have to be with Ethan.I love you so much I

do. God knows I do love you to the moon and back but sometimes love is just not enough. I can't explain what's going on right now but I promise we will talk and maybe you will understand why I have to do this but right now I need to go."

He looked at me with his eyes red and glassy. "You say you love me but you have a funny way of showing it. Is this some kind of game you're playing? Are you going to cook some excuse about marrying this guy? He was always your

first priority Majesty and I wouldn't be surprised if you
guys were dating. Were you playing me again just like you
did with my brother? Do I even matter to you? What else are
you punishing me for? I said I was sorry for everything. I'm
sorry we lost our kids. I'm sorry everything my fault but do
you have to punish me like this?" He started walking.

"No wait wait Treet you cannot leave like this. Please. Hear
me out"

I tried holding him but he yanked my hands off and walked

to his car.

"You said you want to go and see him right then go and let

me leave.Go see your future husband and play happy

family."

"You know I didn't mean it like that.Treet... Treet..Treet!!!!"

He drove off and left me calling his name.I sat down and

cried.Bianca came and hugged me.

"I swear it came out wrong.Ohhh God!!"I cried.

After crying my lungs out I tried calling him but he wasn't

picking u. My calls ended up going straight to

voicemail. When I decide to give love a second chance then

this happens. I went to visit Ethan but I was worried about

Treet. I asked Maka to go back home to check on Girly and

Bianca she was reluctant about it but had to oblige.

"Are you ok?" Ethan asked. His condition had not yet

improved much after talking to his parents his blood

pressure had rose again.

"Yes I'm fine. I just wish this whole thing was a nightmare I

could wake up from but no its real." I sighed.

"I couldn't agree more.How is Girly."He asked.

"Let me call Bianca." I did and I gave him the phone.They talked for a while but was disturbed with an incoming call.

"Someone is calling." He gave me the phone.

It was Tyrone.I answered immediately. "Hello."

"Treet was involved in an accident." He dropped the bomb.My legs became weak I had to hold on to the bed to avoid falling down.

"W-what???Is he ok." It came out as a whisper because I

had suddenly lost all my strength.

"We are at Rodeo Private hospital.It looked bad Majesty." I

could pick the worry in his voice.

"I'm coming." I dropped the call and looked at Ethan who

looked worried too.

"Is everything ok." He asked.

"A friend of mine has been in a accident I have to go." I

gathered enough strength and ran out before Ethan could

ask or say anything. It was not far from The city hospital to

Rodeo private hospital so within 10 minutes I had

arrived. Thankfully I made it alive because I was driving

like a madwoman. I called Tyrone and he told me where

they were.

"Is he ok. Did the doctors update you on his condition..."

Tyrone met me halfway. We hugged as I wailed my lungs

out.

"Its all my fault Ty its all my fault."

"Shhh shhh relax ok.He will be ok." He led me to where his other family members were.

When his mother saw me she charged at me."What is this bitch doing here?Why are you here you homewrecker?I don't want you near my son you whore."She shouted and tried to drag me but luckily her husband held her.

"Not here my wife uh uh not here.This is a hospital." He said calmly.

"You better stay faraway from my son and my family

because I will kill you if I have to." She threatened and I

kept quiet wiping my tears.

"I'm sorry. Don't mind my mother she can be overbearing

and dramatic at times." We went and sat a little bit far

from her.

With each minute passing I was getting impatient and

more worried. I started pacing up and down biting my

nails. After a while the doctor came.

"Treet Jackson?" He said and we all ran to him. Well

everyone started asking questions at one time.

"Ok ok I need you to relax here. Treet suffered a mild concussion, broke his left arm, his leg and three ribs, he has some wounds but there are nothing major. However he lost a lot of blood and to stabilize his condition we need some blood. I believe you're the family members. So who is going to donate."

"I will go." The father said and they left with the doctor.

"Ohhh God Tyrone. Is he going to be ok." I was dead

worried now.

"Don't worry he is a strong fella." He assured me.

Treet's dad came back looking like he was about to

explode.

"You have a lot of explaining to do." He barked at Treet's

mother.

"You're going to tell me why my blood didn't match my

son's blood."

The doctor came."The blood didn't match is there anyone

who has the same blood type with Treet."

"I'm his twin." Tyrone left with the doctor as well and I

prayed for their blood group to match. The parents started

shouting at each other drawing unnecessary attention.

The situation was really bad. If their blood didn't match did

it mean that Mr Jackson was not Treet's father. I could tell

this family was full of drama.

After a while Tyrone came back and I was glad that their

blood matched.

"Is there someone called Jesty among you guys?"The

doctor asked when he came back hours later from

attending to Treet.

"Yes me.I'm Majesty but he calls me Jesty." I was nervous.

"He is not out of anaesthetic yet but when he came here

he had been calling out for you non stop.I think you should

go see him first." I didn't wait to be told twice.I ran to his

room.

"Ohhh My God." I cried out when I walked in.Machines

were beeping and they were tubes all around him. His head was bandaged, so was his lower chest, his arm and leg had plasters on. His face was swollen and had bruises all over.

"I'm so sorry Treet, I'm sorry." I was afraid of touching him lest I could hurt him. So I just knelt beside the bed crying.

Tyrone walked in and he hugged me.

"It's all my fault." I cried.

"No it's not. Now stop crying because I'm sure he can hear you and he will be very worried and we don't want him to

be worried now do we." I nodded.

My phone rang.

I didn't check the caller ID I just answered. "Sis they are operating him.He had another attack just after you left and they are operating him sis." Maka cried from the other end.

"Ohhhh no no God please no.I will be there ok." I dropped the call and wailed in Tyrone's arms.This was too much for me.I just felt like dying.I don't get why this was happening to me.Two important people in my life were fighting for

their lives and I didn't want to lose any one of them.

"I have to leave my best friend is in hospital too and he is

having an operation. I have to be there. When Treet wakes

up tell him I love him so much and I will come back and

see him once Eth is out of danger." I said.

"You're in no condition to drive. Let me drive you there." He

suggested.

"No stay here with Treet he might need you when he

wakes up. Don't worry about me. I will be fine. And I'm going

to the City hospital it's not that far. So don't worry." I kissed

Treet's dry lips and ran out. With God's grace I made it to

The city hospital in no time. I called Tyrone and informed

him that I had arrived.

I found Maka and Mrs Jaji crying in each others arms

while Prince was with Ethan's dad.

"What happened when I left he was doing just f

"It happened so fast dear. One minute we were talking and

he brought the cancer topic up and then the next moment

he started having seizures. The doctors had to perform an emergency operation on him to stop him from having a stroke." Ethan's dad coughed so harshly and wiped the blood that he had coughed out.

Feeling powerless I sat down and buried my head into my hands. Where was God while all of this was happening? It was getting too much and it was now hard for me to keep up. Treet was seriously injured and was fighting for his life and then there was Ethan who was fighting for his life in

that theatre room. I started wailing again rocking myself back and forth while waiting for the doctors to finish their operation on Ethan. After hours they were done and in as much as I was exhausted I found the power to run to them and ask them if everything went well.

"The surgery went well and we are glad that he didn't suffer any stroke. One minute late we could have been talking about something else right now. His blood pressure is stabilized but when he wakes up avoid upsetting him. He

will be under observation for some time here till his surgery wound heals and when he is out of danger that's when we can discharge him. Unfortunately there is nothing we can do about his high blood pressure but only to prescribe some medication for him. He has to start taking medication."

I sighed in relief. Even though he had blood pressure problems I was relieved that he was out of danger and the surgery went well.

"Thank you lord." I said.

18

MAJESTY

Self isolation.

After the operation it took time for Ethan to wake up and

Prince had to convince me to go home. While on my way

home I called Tyrone to ask about Treet's condition. Well

he wasn't out of anesthetic yet but he assured me that he

would be alright and told me not to worry. I took his word

and went home to rest. Thankfully Girly was asleep. I didn't

have the energy to play around with her. Makanaka had

locked herself in one of the guestrooms well I decided to
let her be. I had issues to deal with as well. I managed to
stomach three spoons of what Bianca had prepared and
went to bed. I kept on tossing and turning falling asleep
was very difficult when my thoughts and emotions were all
over the place. Before I knew it it was 6am. I had dark
circles and eye bags, my face was exhausted on its own as
a result of failing to sleep. Before taking a shower I emailed
Mary and asked her to take my place because from the

look of things I was going to be absent from work for a while. I took a quick shower and wore some Adidas tracksuit and slides. I made myself a fruit salad and left before the minions woke up and drove to Rodeo Private hospital first to check on Treet. Since it was the visiting hours the nurses didn't give me a hard time. When I walked into his room he was staring into the ceiling he didn't even hear me coming until I was standing besides him.

"Hey." I said softly.

He groaned in pain. "What are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be with your future husband?"

I held his hand. The one which didn't have a plaster on. "Don't be like that Treet come on."

"What do you want me to be like huh? When the person I love is planning to marry someone else. Was this your plan all along? Did you plan this to get back at me because of what I did? I said I was sorry Jesty. I apologized but still you want to punish me like this." His voice was breaking.

"I'm not trying to punish you and you know it. I forgave you because I love you. There is nothing more I want than being with you. Sleeping and waking up in your arms and growing old with you but there are certain debts that sometimes we have to pay. I'm in a dilemma. I don't know what to do or who to choose. There is you the man that I love with all my heart. The man who shares and understand my pain. On the other hand there is Ethan my best friend who has always been there through thick and

thin. I owe his family my life. If it wasn't for them I don't know where I could have been right now. They took us in like their own when my own family had failed to do that for me and my siblings. His father is dying and he had asked me to honor his last wish and that is to marry his son and be a mother to his child."

He chuckled bitterly. "So that simply means you have made your decision and you're marrying him right. What will happen to me then? What will happen to the love I have

for you huh? I have just found out that the man I thought was my father all along is actually not my father and the woman I love with every fibre in my body is set to marry her best friend. Such is life huh."

I sighed. "I haven't made my decision yet Treet."

"But its clear you're going to choose him over me right. Its crystal clear to me because my love for you means nothing to you compared to him and his family. He has done a lot for you right but I also wanted a chance to prove

what I can do for you. Unfortunately I will never get that chance." He looked everywhere else but my face.

"Please don't say that Treet please. You know I love you very much and---"

"You don't hurt the people you claim to love Jesty. It doesn't work like that. For the people you love you can sacrifice anything and everything but like you said maybe at the end of the day love alone is just not enough. A lot more is needed for you to be with the one you love."

"Treet please.."

"You can leave Majesty.I need to rest.Make sure to close the door very well on your way out." He groaned in pain as he turned and looked the other way.

"I love you ok." He ignored me so I just walked out.I stayed in my car for some minutes crying my lungs out.After I had vented it all out I wiped my face and drove to the City hospital.I walked into Ethan's room and Maka was already there sitting besides him.

"You can't just come here without telling me first. You should be home helping Bianca with Girly." I said.

She looked at me and wiped her face. "I'm sorry I just wanted to check on him. I didn't mean to upset you. I will not come without your permission."

"You know I didn't mean that. You're allowed to visit Ethan as much as you want but I'm saying you should at least tell me first about it than just leaving the house without telling anybody where you're going. I'm sure you didn't even tell

Bianca you were coming here." I said softly.

"Fine I'm leaving. I will come when you grant me the

permission your majesty." She said sarcastically and left. I

didn't get what her deal was. I sat down besides Ethan and

held his hand. After a while he started moving and I called

the doctors. They examined him and everything was

ok. The surgery was a success so he was out of

danger. After calling his parents I went back inside.

"Hey welcome back." I said kissing his forehead.

"Missed me already." He said in a scratchy voice.

"Don't ever scare us like that again Ethan. Don't ever or I

will never forgive you if you pull that stunt again. Don't do

that to us Ethan ever again." I held his hand.

"I'm sorry if I worried you. I didn't mean to." He smiled

weakly.

"All is forgiven. So does it hurt too much?" I asked.

"Yes it hurts but I will be fine. You don't have to worry about

a thing."

"Ethan you're in a hospital bed and you're telling me not to worry. Of course I will worry." We stayed in silence for a while. I don't know about him but I was battling with my own thoughts.

"Can you please cover me up that side I'm feeling a little bit cold." He broke the ice.

"Yea sure." I stood up and started fixing his covers at that time his parents walked in. When Mrs Jaji saw me she couldn't hide her frown and pushed me aside.

"I will take it from here." She said. Ethan was too focused on smiling at her so he didn't see what happened but his dad saw. After they exchanged pleasantries he asked me to talk to him outside.

"I'm sorry about how my wife behaved earlier." He said.

"It's ok. I know I'm not her favourite person and I don't blame her." I said.

"But it doesn't justify what she did so. I sincerely apologize." I kept quiet.

"Anyway I wanted to ask if you have talked to Ethan yet?"

I sighed."I did and he confessed about his feelings for me."

He smiled."I know you only see him as a friend but you can

learn to love him.Its not like you're going to be with

someone you don't know like a total stranger.He is your

best friend and surely its going to be very easy for you to

fall for him.I know I'm coming off as being very selfish

here but I'm doing this for the best interest of my son.."

"What about what I wan?Have you spared a moment to

think about me as well or you only thought about what's best for Ethan. What if I'm in love with someone else and wanna spend my life with them? Have you ever thought of that? You're not coming off as selfish but you're actually being very selfish here." I snapped and upon realizing what I have said I regretted it.

"I'm sorry dad I didn't mean to snap at you like that. This is just too much and I'm finding it very hard to picture me and Ethan married and happy together. I get it you're a

father and you're doing what you think its the best for your son like how any father could have done for their child."

He sighed "I'm sorry if I made you feel pressured in some sort of way I will give you time to think about it."

I sighed and nodded."Ok.What does your wife say about this."

He cleared his throat and sighed."I will talk to her."

"Fine let me say my goodbyes to Ethan.I have somewhere to go." I walked back inside and clearly Ethan's mother

didn't want me there.

"I will see you tomorrow Eth." I said.

"No no there is no need honey. You should focus on your work we will handle it here. Ohh and later I will come and take Girly. As it is you already have a lot to do right." Its not like she was asking but she was actually telling me and I had no say in it so I just agreed to everything she said. I drove back to Rodeo private hospital and Treet refused to see me.

"He will come around." Tyrone said.

"I love him.I honestly do Tyrone.Does he seriously think I want to marry Ethan?I don't want to you know but my hands are tied.I don't know what to do.Treet is the one I want but maybe I cannot be with him despite my love for him.I'm trying here.I'm trying to come up with a good solution for me and its not that easy because I have factors to consider.Your brother on the other hand is not making things easier for me."

"But understand where he is coming from. If you were in his shoes obviously you were going to act the same way. He loves you to the moon and back then you seriously want him to act all cool when the woman he loves is supposed to marry someone else. Of course he would lose his mind. Anyone in his position could have done the same or worse. You on the other hand you're making it look like you're not fighting hard enough." He had decided to drive me to my house because after Treet refused to see me I

was in no condition to drive myself back home.

"I just don't want him to give up on us.I want to do

everything in my power to escape this and be with him."I

wiped my tears off.

"Don't break my brother's heart Maj.He has been through a

lot as it is already I don't think he can take more

heartbreaks.He will not survive loosing you.So I'm begging

you.He just found his happiness in a long time.His

happiness lies with you.Don't rob that away from him.He

will not be able to survive it.I'm begging you don't break his

heart."I hugged him without saying a word and he walked

out.I walked inside the house.I found Maka playing with

Girly.When she saw me she ran to me with her arms open.

"Mommy,mommy,mommy.You back." I lifted her up.I

wanted to spend quality time with her since her

grandmother was going to take her later that day.I took a

shower with her and after that I plaited her hair.

"Ma'am.Girly's grandmother wants to see you." Bianca

knocked on my door.

"Ohhh granny is here baby.Let's go."

I carried her downstairs. When Mrs Jaji saw me she gave

me a death stare and I knew shit was about to go down.

"Maka please take my granddaughter and you Majesty let's

go outside I need to talk to you."I followed her outside.

She started pacing up and down in rage.

"Maa what is it."

"Don't you dare call me Maa you get it.Its already enough

that we took you in as well as your siblings. We made you who you're. Now you wanna be a Jaji?! That will not happen as long as I'm alive. There is no way on earth I'm going to allow my son to marry damaged goods like you. So girly if you have been dreaming to marry my son better forget it. I will not watch that nonsense happening." She shouted.

I felt my tears threatening but I wasn't going to let myself cry "Mrs Jaji I understand your anger and your disgust towards me but I promise you I'm no longer the same

Majesty.I'm trying to change my life,I'm trying--"

She raised her hand."I don't care what you're trying to

do.Try to sleep with the whole of America I don't care.Even

if you try to change your life are you going unsleep all the

men you slept with.Forget about how open ,loose and wide

your vagina must be like right now but let's talk about

diseases. Are you sure about your status?Are you sure

you're not a carrier of HIV and other STIs?Then on top of

that you're barren and you want me to subject my son to

that kind of misery. Lastly there is no guarantee that you're going to stop sleeping around. Once a whore you will always be a whore. My son is too young to die. I don't know what my husband is thinking but I'm sure cancer is messing with his head. How can he want you for a daughter in law? Now you read my lips Majesty. As long as I breathe, as long as I'm alive I will never allow you to be married to my son."

Her words cut deep and they hit home. She went back

inside to take her granddaughter and I couldn't move from the place she left me at. I was trying to digest what she just said to me. Did she had to mention my barrenness? I was deeply hurt. I managed to walk inside the house and I went to my room. I cried myself to sleep. When I woke up it was time for me to go for my session but I called Mitchell and cancelled it. I had no energy to even go there.

"Sis Mary and Petty wants to see you." Maka said.

I woke up and washed my face and followed her

downstairs.I found Petty and Mary dressed to kill.

"You guys are looking like sin." I said lazily and sat down.

"We came to take you along to legs and liquor.Let's go and

and turn that place up side down girl." Petty said snapping

his fingers.

I looked at him sadly as I felt tears threatening to come

out. "I'm no longer that girl Petty.I have to get it together

hey and stop partying and act like a woman with good

morals."

Mary looked at me sternly. "Maj what's going on? Are you ok?"

"I'm not ok. My life is a mess. I'm a mess nothing is adding up. When I try to get my life back together something else pops up disrupting everything. I'm not fine at all." I cried.

"I'm so sorry friend. We were occupied with our own lives without noticing that you're not ok at all. We should have been worried about you when you didn't come to work but we just saw it as a normal thing to do. I'm sorry dear. I'm

really sorry." Mary said.

"What is going on Majesty?" Petty asked.

I started narrating everything to them from when I started

taking my therapy seriously, when Treet and I decided to

give it a try, Ethan's father asking me to marry his

son

Ethan confessing to me, the both of them landing in

hospital and finally what Mrs Jaji said to me earlier.

"Ohhh my gosh this is a mess truly. So what are you going

to do?"Petty was that friend who would cheer you up but doesn't give you an advice on important issues.Then Mary was the one who came up with good ideas and always knew what to say to a person but at times she was very judgmental.

"Choosing between Ethan and Treet is not a difficult decision to make you just have to follow your heart."Petty said.

"What if Ethan is the one for her?I mean is Treet worth

loosing what you worked so hard for? These people helped
you so much especially the father can't you do this much
for him? Ethan is your best friend and I'm sure you can
learn to love him as times goes by. With Treet honestly you
guys moved so fast and I'm sure you don't know many
things about each other. All you ever did was
sex, sex, sex. You never sat down and spoke as well as
getting to know each other. What if he starts changing and
shows you his mean side after you have sacrificed your

hard work for him?With Ethan its better because at least you know his likes and dislikes.You know how to get through him and how to resolve your matters if you guys are not getting along.He also knows everything about you.He was there for you through it all and if he still loves you after all the mess you did then his love is genuine.

Remember all the men that has been in and out of your life.He saw it all but still he stands there and say he loves you then he is for keeps.Also Ethan respects you.Imma be

honest with you I also had hots for him because he is
good looking and charming I'm sure no girl could resist
that with you included.If he wasn't your best friend you
guys could have slept together.Besides that if he really
wanted to get you to bed he could have easily done that
but he didn't because he respects you.On this one I go for
Ethan because with Treet it was all about sex if we want to
be honest.On top of that he was cheating on his wife with
you.Even though he was having some problems, he should

have solved them first,divorced his wife first then come to
you if you meant a lot to him.What guarantee do you have
that Treet will not do the same to yo?Once a cheat will
always be a cheat."Mary said

"I still advise you Maj to follow your heart because what if
everything Mary said about Treet is not true?What if he
really loves you and then what Maj will choose Ethan but
later realizes she made a huge mistake of her life.If you
choose Ethan then from the onset your relationship or

marriage will not be based on love but on compromise.I

don't advise anyone to marry or be with someone for other

reasons which is not love.Be with someone because you

love them not because you had to compromise.I strongly

advise you to be with Treet and if he turns out to be

something else then you will leave him.Some people are in

our lives to teach us a lesson so it will be a lesson

learnt.You can marry Ethan in hopes that you will learn to

love him but what if you fail and hurt him too in the

process. It's better you hurt him now with the truth than to lead the guy on. There is no such thing as learning to love someone. If love is there you can feel it there is no need to learn it. Love is not learnt it's felt. It's either you love the person or you don't there is no in between. In your scenario you love Treet so be with Treet. If it doesn't workout then it doesn't workout. Lesson learnt life moves on." Petty gave his own point of view. They were both making sense and it confused me more.

"You're confusing me even more because you're both right in your own views." I said.

"I see this is taking a toll on you. Why don't you do this

Maj? You need a breather. Go somewhere. Try to reevaluate your life and gather your thoughts and process

everything. Make your own decision based on what you see

is right without anyone influencing your decision. Go at

least somewhere with a nice scenery for at least two

weeks. Calm your mind and make your decision." Mary

suggested and it sounded like a great idea.

"Yes and I think France is the best place for you to refresh

your mind and gather all your thoughts. You have great

places to see while you're at it. I have a friend who is a tour

guide there he might help you out." Petty suggestion.

"I think you should start making preparations for me I

really need a breather and France sounds like a great idea. I

will leave you two in charge at work but don't make

important decisions without consulting me first." It was

not a biased decision to leave Petty and Mary in charge I trusted them when it comes to work they were good at their work and I knew my company would be in good hands while I'm away.

"Ok that is sorted so I will talk to my friend Thomas and send you all the information you need to know about him. Do you want to leave in a hotel or what?"

"No I don't want a hotel. I need a house for rental not something luxurious but just a good space for me and it

had to be surrounded by nature. You know somewhere
with flowers and stuff. There is this calmness around a
place where there is a lot of greens. Like a country side you
know."

"Ok so that is sorted. When do you wanna leave?"

"I will board a late afternoon flight tomorrow." I said.

"Ok cool let me call Thomas right now and fill him in. Don't
worry about a thing he is reliable and you can trust him."

He said dialling his number.

"And I will help you pack.Come on." Mary dragged me to my room and she was the one packing for me while I just sat on the bed choosing which clothes I wanted to take with.

"You're are definitely taking this coat with.France's whether is like period mood swings. So you are taking it just in case." I didn't want to pack too many clothes but I made a mistake by letting Mary help me with the packing.

"Girl its not like I'm staying there for a month.Its just two

weeks and if gets cold I will stay in doors."

Well she was having none of it so I let her do what she wanted.

"And then?" Maka walked in.

"Ohh I'm leaving for France tomorrow late in the afternoon"

I said.

"Ethan is still in hospital.Couldn't you go some other day."

She sat on the bed

"Its a business trip so I really have to attend it." I lied.I

knew telling her the truth that I was going to France to

refresh I would come off as selfish since Ethan was still in

hospital. But he had his mother to take care of him.

"Ok then.You're going for how long?" She asked.

"Two weeks." I said.

"That long?Ok while you're gone can I please go over to

Ethan's house.I would be lonely here and I can't go to

Prince's place we always fight." She gave me a puppy look.

"When Ethan is discharged from the hospital obviously he

is going to his parent's place and I think they need their space. Maka a lot is already going on in their lives and I don't think it will be right for you to go there. I don't want you to be caught up in their drama." I said.

"But we are family! I will lose my mind all alone here. Come on sis." She begged.

"Fine then." She kissed me all over the face thanking me.

The following morning I went to see Treet and he refused to see me again. I talked to Tyrone and informed him that I

was leaving to France for two weeks he took it upon

himself to tell his brother who didn't say anything in reply.

"But I don't think running away is going to solve

anything. You need to face this head on." He said

"I need a breather Ty I'm tired mentally and physically. This

is draining me and going away for some time is going to

do me good. I will see you after two weeks. Take care of

your brother and kiss him for me." I kissed his cheek and

he laughed while we parted ways.

I went to the City Hospital and I was thankful when I didn't find Ethan's mom around. I told Ethan that I was leaving for a business trip and he wasn't ecstatic about it because he needed me by his side but I had to be selfish for once.

"Do you really have to go?" He sulked.

"I will be back before you know it." I said and I kissed his cheek.

"Safe journey hey." He sighed.

"Thank you. I know I was supposed to be here when you

fully recover but its important that I go to this trip.Get well soon while I'm away.When I come back I want to see you back to your normal healthy self.This bedridden Eth is a turn off for me."

He chuckled. "So the healthy me turns you on."

I just laughed it off and perked him one more time and walked out.Mary and Petty were the ones who accompanied me to the airport.I boarded my flight and left for France.I arrived and was welcomed by Thomas he was

talkative and all jolly. Typical gay man. He drove me to Silver Lake where I was staying for two weeks. I could see how beautiful the place was especially in the evening and the smell of nature just did wonders to me. The house was big enough for me, cosy and fancy. It was close to the other one next to it which looked like a family house or a lodge kind of.

"Wow its beautiful!" I exclaimed.

"Wait till you see the lake and the whole scenery in the

morning.Its beautiful and relaxing.Also its just an hour

drive to Paris from here." He said

"I can't wait.Is it safe if I take a stroll around.I won't go far I

just wanna take it all in.The air and everything."

"Yaa its safe here so you can.Anyway I will leave you to it.I

have a busy day tomorrow."

"Ohhh ok." I said.

"If you need anything I'm just a phone call away." He

smiled and walked out.

I took a quick shower and wore my black yoga pants, a grey hoodie and some slides. It was just a minute past six in the evening so I could do with a stroll. I just wanted to walk around so I wasn't going any far. I took my phone, locked the doors and walked out. When the fresh air hit my face I felt happy and relaxed.

"A pretty girl shouldn't be out here all alone." A voice startled me. I jumped and dropped my phone. I turned and there were two guys who looked shady.

"Umm Hy.How can I help you?" It came out as a whisper.

Someone would hear me scream right because I hadn't

gone that far from the houses.I had already assumed the

worst because these guys didn't look friendly at all.

"You can help us by giving us what we want and don't you

dare try to scream."The other one said and every hair on

my body stood when he took out a pocket knife walking

towards me.

"W-what do you w-want.Is it the money I can give it to

you?" Ohh God I didn't come to France to die.I could see

my whole life flashing before my eyes as the other one

grabbed my hand roughly.

"Please let me go." I was already crying.

"Not before we get what we want." The other one said

getting hold of my hoodie.

A deep voice startled all of us as the man behind said

something in French and the two guys ran away.The man

was very tall and double my size.I couldn't see his face

clearly since it was starting to get more dark.I was not going to be able to escape this one even if I tried.

"Please don't hurt me.I will give you whatever you want please." I pleaded.

"I'm not one of them.What were you doing out here at this time don't you know its not safe." He said in his deep scary voice.

"Come on I will take you home."It seemed everything that came out of his mouth was an order.

He picked my phone and before I even said anything his hand engulfed my wrist reminding me how big he was. He didn't wait for me to protest and dragged me towards his car which made me feel so small. It's funny how gentle the hold was with how rough his hands felt against my skin

19

MAJESTY

Scarred warrior.

For some reason I threw my caution out the window. I let my guard down and decided to trust this man as he continued leading me to his car. I know I wasn't supposed to trust a stranger especially after what had just happened to me minutes ago but strange enough I felt safe with him. At first my heart was racing when he was leading me to his car he might have sensed it and he ran his thumb

over my wrist and I took it as an act of reassuring me that I was safe. Peace fell over me and my mind stopped the rush of panic thoughts. You're safe. My inner voice whispered. He opened the door for me and I climbed in. He buckled me up and when I tried to get a glimpse of his face he turned away and walked over to the driver's seat. I was crying and shaking from the fear of what could have happened to me if he didn't come to my rescue.

"You're safe. Stop crying." His deep voice commanded. He

had an aura which just demanded respect without him asking for it so I found myself obliging to his command without questions asked. He was the type that if he would ask you to jump you would ask "how high". I wiped my tears off with the back of my hand and I tried so much to keep it together as he switched on the ignition and driving off. I didn't give him the directions of where I was staying and he never asked but I was shocked when he parked right in front of the gate at where I was staying. He didn't

say a word. He got off the car and came to my side and opened the door for me. Once again his big hand engulfed my wrist as he led me to the gate.

"Key." Another command.

"Look thank you for saving me earlier but I don't think if letting a stranger into the house is a good idea." His hold on my wrist tightened for a moment. Then he loosened his grip.

"Well you were just in the car of this stranger. If I wanted to

do something to you I could have. I have got you. Keys

now." I didn't understand how one can be so commanding

and tender at the same time. It didn't even make sense but

nonetheless I dipped my hands into my pockets, took out

the keys and gave them to him. He opened the gate and

lead the way again. I followed behind and I could see his

broad back and shoulders. I couldn't even come up to his

shoulders. He was really big. It was even noticeable when

he unlocked the door and we walked through the

doorway.He took up most of it and his head was left with just an inch to reach the door frame.The lights were switched on and I tried to look up at him but with the help of his hoodi he turned his face and was able to shield his face away from me and once again.

"Next time be careful.Don't go out at this hour its not always safe."He released my wrist and I felt strange about not having him hold on to me anymore but I could still feel his touch on my skin tingling.He stepped outside before I

could see his face. I wanted to see him. I just had to see him. When he was about to walk away I held his hand. He turned around and that's when I saw his entire face for the first time. What first caught my eye was the two scars on his face. He had a long thin line from his forehead which went across his right eyebrow down to his cheekbone and there was the other one next to it but it was shorter. There were stab scars. Someone pierced him with a knife and dragged it all the way down to his chin. You couldn't miss

the scars even though he was chocolate in complexion.As

I examined his scars he was looking at me with his hazel

eyes.Treet's eyes were beautiful but this pair took the cup.I

didn't know black people had this eye color too or was he

wearing lenses.He licked his pink thick lips showing his

deep dimples in process,cleared his throat and looked

down at my hand.

"Umm I wanted to say thank you." I smiled shyly and let

him go.Thats not what I wanted to say I actually wanted to

ask how he knew where I lived.

He nodded his head. "Sure."

With that said he started walking away and I stood there watching him leave. The scarred warrior. Now I understood why he tried so hard to hide his face. It was because of the scars. I wondered what happened to him. The pain that caused the scars and having to hide his face from everyone not wanting to scare people off. I assure you just one glance at him you would think he was a jailbird or a

gangster. Surprisingly I found them beautiful and they

looked so perfect on his handsome chocolate face. He

looked like a scarred warrior ready to battle. Those scars

showed that he was a survivor.

My thoughts were dragged back to reality when he parked

at the house right next to mine. He is my neighbor! My

conscience exclaimed. I immediately walked inside and

locked the door and lean on it. After a few minutes I got it

together and went to grab something to eat before I took a

shower and went to bed. The jet lag was the worst. I was too exhausted to call anyone so I fell asleep without calling them but at least they knew I landed safely. The following morning I woke up very late around 10 am. Well a peaceful environment does that to you. It had been long since I had such a good sleep and I smiled in happiness when I opened my eyes. I kicked off the covers, got off the bed and stretched. It felt so good. I dragged myself to the bathroom and took a long deserved bath. It was

relaxing. After I was done I settled for a sleeveless yellow short jumpsuit and white sandals. It's not like I was going anywhere so there was no need to rock a Givenchy dress or anything extravagant.

"I could do with a haircut." I complained to myself as I struggled to untangle my natural afro hair. After a long struggle I perfectly combed it and branched it up into a tight bun.

Thomas had done me a big favour by buying me some

groceries so I went downstairs to make myself a greasy
breakfast but before that I had to call Treet and Ethan.Wait
no I was on a break and I needed some fresh air so I
wasn't going to call the same people who were making my
life miserable.Instead I opened my playlist and stumbled
upon Beyonce's 7/11.I played it and danced to the beat
while making my breakfast. While I was at it my doorbell
rang.I paused my song and went to answer it.There stood
some yet another chocolate skinned lady.Lindt chocolates

had nothing on this chocolate I was staring at right

now. Her skin was amazing. I'm sure she bathed in honey

and milk. Well it seems like I wasn't the only one

mesmerized around here because her jaws were on the

floor. She was staring at me with the same pair of hazel

eyes I had seen yesterday.

"Wow." She murmured.

"Umm hy." I smiled at her and she returned the smile.

"Well umm hello. My name is Lindiwe Zulu but you can call

me Lindy. Scar asked me to come check on you and see if you're alright especially after yesterday's incident." She said.

"Scar?" I furrowed my forehead. Did they nickname him Scar because he had scars on his face.

She smiled. "Ohh I mean Lindani my brother. The one who kinda saved you from the goons last night."

Ohhh so he was Lindani. I smiled. "Please come in." I paved way for her. I smelt something burning.

"Ohhh shoot my bacon." I ran back to the kitchen and it was burnt,all of it. I took the pan and threw it in the sink.Now my breakfast was ruined. Thanks Lindy.

"Ohhh I'm sorry about that." She apologized.

"Ohhh its ok umm I will just stick to eggs."

"Umm say what?Come join us for breakfast seeing that I'm kind of to blame for ruining yours.I know we are strangers but I promise you we are harmless and at the end of the day we might need to get to know each other since we are

going to be neighbours for some time. That is if you're not leaving anytime soon." She suggested.

I shrugged. "I don't know if it is a good idea."

"It is come on. The more the merrier." She smiled cheerfully.

"Umm sure then let's go. I'm Majesty Browns by the way you can call me Maj or MJ." I said as we walked out.

"I like MJ. Girl you're beautiful if I was lesbian I was going to hit on you. Are you married? Where is your family? Are you here alone."

I realised this one was a chatterbox and had a crazy thing going. I just effortlessly liked her.

I laughed. "No I'm not married and I'm here alone."

"Ohhh are you single. I have a brother who is single." She winked.

I smiled. "Its complicated."

She opened the gate and we walked in.

"So that means you're not single but every relationship is complicated though. Those motherfuckers can drain the

life outta y'all."

"I couldn't agree more." I said as we stepped inside of the house. I murmured a wow looking at the vintage interior. It was amazing. As I was busy admiring the house I turned to the dining and there were eight heads turned towards my direction and 16 eyes on me.

"Look who I have brought here." Lindy dragged me towards the table and these people were silent, gawking at me.

I first spotted Lindani who was sitting where the heads of the family sits. He had stopped eating and was gawking at me as well. When I looked back at him he did that thing of licking his lips and looked down his plate then continued eating. Next to him was some yellow bone who was dressed to kill like she was going for a Met Gala she had a frown on her face and I guess that one didn't like my presence. Next to her there was yet another chocolate skinned man who looked so much like Lindani. You could

mistake them for twins but only that he looked younger. He was buffed up too but not more than Lindani. Next to him there was a mixed race lady who looked friendly. She was even smiling than the Miss yellow bone there. Opposite to the other dark chocolate skinned brother who looked so much like Lindani was a yet another chocolate guy but he wasn't dark chocolate like Lindani. I could say he say he was caramel but looked so much like the other two brothers and he looked younger. Maybe my age. Next to

him was a boy maybe 12 years old who was light skinned.I

could say he was almost coloured.He was smiling

showing every tooth in his mouth.Next to the little boy

there was yet another little boy his age who looked exactly

like the other dark chocolate man who looked like Lindan.I

assumed that was the father. Next to him was a

photocopy of Lindy.When my eyes landed on her I looked

at Lindy then back at her then Lindy again.They were

definitely twins.Damn I could trade anything to get their

skin.They were a true definition of brown-skinned girls.

"I had the same reaction too when she opened the door for

me.You guys can breath now because I'm sure you're all

holding your breathes." The whole room erupted in

laughter but it was only Lindani and the yellow skinned girl

besides him who didn't smile.

"This is Majesty Brown our neighbor for now.I invited her

for breakfast because hers was ruined while she was

attending to me besides like I said she is our neighbor we

should show her our hospitality. Ok MJ let me introduce you to my Zulu wolf pack over here. Firstly there is my older brother there Lindani you guys met yesterday. Next to him is Delia his girlfriend. Next to Delia is Lwandile my second older brother and on his right is his wife Martha. Opposite Martha we have my third older brother Leon and on Leon's right we have Siphos Lindani's son. Besides Siphos we have Mark Lwandile and Martha's son. On Mark's right there is that girl who wants to be me

Lisa. This is my family. The other additional members are
back home in South Africa ."

Ok so it was like Lindani

Lwandile, Leon, Lindiwe and Lisa
then there was Delia and Martha as well as Siphon and

Mark. Honestly I have never seen such a big family in one
room.

"Umm hello." Yep your mighty Majesty was shy. They all
chanted an hello as Lindy led me to the table. On Lindani's

right and opposite Delia there was an empty chair. Lindy made me sit there and she went to sit besides Martha and Miss Delia there wasn't pleased. So I was sitting between Lindani and Leon.

"And by the way just to correct Lindy I'm not just Scar's girlfriend I'm his fiancé, we are engaged." She said flashing her big rock. Scar?

Lindani shot her a look. "Ohhh I meant Lindani." She corrected.

Lisa scoffed."And just so you know Delilah being engaged means you're booked and a booking can be cancelled anytime."

I noted that Lindy and Lisa were twins but had different personalities. Lisa had a haircut and Lindy had a long Peruvian weave but the both of them had one thing in common.Besides being identical twins they both didn't like Delia judging from the way they were frowning at her.

"I'm Delia not Delilah." The fiancé half shouted.

"Ladies we have a guest behave." Lwandile said passing

me a tray which had bacon strips.

"Thank you." I took the tray and dished some bacon for

myself. I was damn hungry and one thing about me I wasn't

shy to eat around people. I dished everything else that was

on the table and started eating. I concentrated on my food

as they conversed about God knows what. I wasn't paying

attention. The food was that amazing that I closed my eyes

and moaned. It was orgasmic. When I opened my eyes

everyone was looking at me.

"The bacon is amazing." I said shyly.

"Well we have our own personal MasterChef here." Leon

said and all eyes landed on Lindani who remained

quiet. Was it me or this guy was a man of a few words.

"So what do you do for a living MJ?" Martha asked saving

us from the awkwardness that was about to fill the room.

"I'm a businesswoman." I drank some juice.

"Even a vendor is a businesswoman." Delia said.

"I'm not a vendor I own a company and another one in the making." Everyone gasped and for that moment I managed to catch the attention of Lindani who was acting like I wasn't even there since I came. Not that I wanted his attention that much but the dude didn't even respond to my greeting earlier. Now he had stopped eating and was looking at me with surprise written all over his face.

"You're your own boss. I'm impressed." Leon said. That one looked like a fuckboy and I could tell he was fucking me

with his eyes earlier.

"So what are these companies about."The venom in Delia's

voice was something you couldn't miss.I could tell she

was that kind who looked down on people.

I smiled at her." Google me and read the search results

girl."

"Yebo yes go girl.I like you already." Lisa snapped her

fingers smiling while Lindy on the hand was typing

something on her phone.

"Wow you own a game tech company and an art agency. Its on the Rodeo tabloids" Lindy said. When she mentioned game tech she caught the attention of the two boys.

"You slept your way up." Delia said again. Ok I get it I slept around but for her to insult my hard work like that rubbed me the wrong way. I worked hard to achieve what I had. I used my sweat and tears and not even once did I use what's between my legs for money.

I wasn't about to let her ruin my day before it even started yet though. "Is that your style?" I looked at her and the smug that she had on her face was wiped off as Lindy and Lisa laughed their lungs out.

Lindani gave her a reprimanding look. "I'm sorry it was supposed to be a joke." She said and looked down.

"Well you're not funny." I shot back

"Do you like create games?" Mark asked saving us from the awkwardness again.

I smiled at him. "Yes online games."

Sipho looked at me like he was thinking of something. He

had eyes with a shade of violet which somehow reminded

me of Gift. I felt emotional but brushed it off. "Aunt said

your name was Mj and you own a game tech company.

Are you the one who created Mjdrive?" He asked.

I nodded my head. "Yes I am."

The two boys quickly got off their chairs and came to my

side. "You're so cool. Every guy in here love that game. Dad

and me are crazy about it. We don't pass a day without

playing it!" Siphso exclaimed.

"Really." I smiled back at him.

"Yes really. Are you married?" He asked.

I gave him a confused look. "No. Why?"

He looked at his father. "Dad can she be my girlfriend. I

mean she is smart, she is beautiful. Please please dad." He

pleaded to his father and everyone laughed. I guess he had

a way with his father because the scarred warrior ended

up smiling he had a bear cute smile.

"But you have a girlfriend already Siphoh. I'm sure Katy will

not be pleased if she finds out you want to have another

girlfriend." That was the first time he spoke since I got

there. He played with his son's afro.

"But I could do with a genius girlfriend dad. I mean she

created our favourite game. Please don't tell Katy please

dad." He pouted and Lindani laughed shaking his head.

"Deal dad."

"Deal." They did some signature handshake.

Sipho looked at me. "Now can you be my girlfriend." The

whole room was filled with laughter.

"But I have a boyfriend." I smiled.

He shrugged. "Cool cause I wanna be a side nigger."

I threw my head back laughing my lungs out. "How old are you again?"

"12. Ok its official you're my girlfriend." He kissed my cheek

and went to sit down. We finished our breakfast with

laughter and joy. I have never been so happy after a long time.

"The breakfast was amazing guys thank you very much." I said when we were done eating.

"You're welcome dear and I think like you. I will come over to your place later that is if its ok with you." Martha said. The feeling was mutual though. I liked her too in fact I liked this family. Its like we were old friends or something and they were so welcoming They didn't make me feel like

a stranger well expect Miss Delia here who didn't even want me in the room. Clearly she felt threatened by my presence. I did nothing to her. She didn't even know me yet she was just salty. I just ignored her death stares and gave Martha my attention.

"Me too." Lindy and Lisa said in unison.

"Maybe you can join us. All the ladies are going for a shopping spree and might hit the spa later on." Lindy suggested.

"Umm I want to go to the Eiffel tower today.I think I will pass." I said.

"Ohhh dad and I are going to the Eiffel tower for the second time maybe you can join us.The more the merrier right dad." Siphos looked at his father.

"Ohhh so cool you guys will hit the Eiffel tower and we will come over to your place in the evening."Lindy beat me to it before I could even turn Siphos down. The last thing I wanted was drama and I could see that Delia was a

volcano about to erupt especially after Siphos suggested that I join him and his father for the trip to the Eiffel tower.

"We will leave in forty five minutes." Lindani said and disappeared with his son to one of the rooms. I went back to my house and soon as I stepped in my phone rang. I had forgot to take it with me. Before I could get to it. It stopped ringing. I had 30 missed calls from Ethan. I called him back immediately because I was worried.

"Hey is everything ok?" I asked as soon as he picked up.

I heard him sighing. "I was worried about you. You weren't picking up. How are you? Is everything ok? Were you in a meeting?" He asked.

"Yes I was in a meeting and everything is ok no need to worry about a thing. I have a lot of seminars and meetings to attend in the following days so don't get worried if I miss your calls or forget to call ok." I know it's not good to lie but like I said before I needed a break and talking to Ethan or Treet was not going to help me relax. I needed a

moment away from the both of them so that I could make
my decision after thinking it through without anyone
disturbing me or influencing the choice I was to make.

"Its ok I know how it gets.I was just checking up on you."

He said.

I sighed."I appreciate it.Thank you.How are you?How is the
wound?"

He groaned a little bit."Its a little bit painful but I'm getting
there don't worry."

"Ok get well soon neh.Look I gotta go." I said.

"Sure and please visit the Paris tower while you're at it." He

dropped the call.

Since I had talked to Ethan.I couldn't stop myself from

calling Treet.I was glad when he picked up.

"Hey Treet." I had my fingers crossed and prayed that he

doesn't drop my call.

"Jesty.How are you.Tyrone told me you're in France.Damn

why didn't you tell me?Gosh ok I know I refused to talk to

you. I'm sorry. I know I acted childish but can you come back so that we can talk. Are you safe there in France? Why didn't you take someone with you? Maybe I should send someone over there?" I could sense the worry in his voice. He was angry but at least he still cared.

"Relax babe I'm fine and there is no need to send anyone here ok. I'm staying here for two weeks. I need some time alone. I need a breather. Once I'm refreshed I will come back and we will talk." I went upstairs.

"But two weeks Jesty." He complained.

"I will be back before you know it." I said

"Fine then I will keep checking up on you."

"No no there is no need actually. I'm living at some country

side near Paris. There is some Buddha monk around here

and he is providing some meditation sessions here. Im

joining them tomorrow. Phones aren't allowed so.. "I wasn't

good at lying but I just prayed that he buy my story.

"Ohhh ok ok I get it but when you get a chance call me ok."

He said.

"Yea I will."

"I love you." He said.

"I love you too." I dropped the call.

After talking to Treet I switched on the airplane mode.I

took a quick shower and after I was done I looked for

something to wear.I decided to just settle for a blue faded

denim jeans,a white T-shirt and white trainers.I let my hair

loose and applied minimum makeup.I went downstairs

and the doorbell rang at the moment.I went to attend the

door.Lindani and his son were standing there hand in

hand,with Siphos wearing blue jeans and a white Tshirt.Lindani was wearing blue jeans too but with a black T

-shirt. His t-shirt hugged his muscled body so perfectly

and I also saw some scars on his right arm but there were

covered in tattoos. He had tattoos on both his sleeves and

with his height and the scars on his face he looked more

intimidating than ever.However the golf cap he was

wearing partly covered the scars on his face.If he had

come to my life a year ago I was going to eat him alive.

Take a picture." His deep voice brought me back to reality

"Huh?" I gave him a confused look

He smirked."Staring is rude.Why don't you take a picture?It

always lasts."

"Ohhh I'm sorry." I laughed it off.

"Hey boyfie."I played with Sipho's afro.

"And we are wearing matching outfits girlfie." He freed

himself from his father's grip and came to my side.He held

my hand and his touch just sent some warm comfortable

feeling inside. We smiled at each other. He was going to

break hearts with that handsome face.

"Ok guys let's hit the road" Lindani said leading us to his

Land rover discovery.

20

MAJESTY

Paris the city of love.

Sipho and I sat at the back seat while we played Mjdrive

on his iPad. Talk about being spoiled. A 12 year old with an

iPad that's just too extravagant. Lindani was driving and

humming along to one of Tupac's songs. Playing with

Sipho like that made me wonder if Gift was alive is that

how it was going to be because if this was how it felt to be

with your son playing with him like this while the father is

driving you to somewhere nice,I would tread anything to have this moment again and again.I missed my son very much and being with Sipho made me miss him even more and yearn to have my own family.I was reminded of that deep pain of knowing that I would never be able to hold my own baby.I would never be able to feel baby kicks ever again.I relived that pain.

"Bam!I win." Sipho shouted excitedly dragging me back to reality.I smiled at him.He was just a cheerful kid and I

found myself falling in love with him effortlessly.

"That was just a warm up." I defended playing with his afro.

He laughed."You maybe the creator of this game but trust

me I can beat you to it.I'm the best player.I even won

against dad countless times."He said proudly.

I pouted."I just wanted you to win but now I'm regretting it

because you're bragging."

"I'm not bragging. I'm just stating the facts.I'm good at

this.Ok let's make a bet."He suggested

I smiled." Ok bring it on."

"If I win we will go to Notres Dome church after Eiffel

tower.We will also visit the Louvre Museum and we will go

to one of the famous restaurant in Paris Il Etait un

Square.If you win we will just visit Eiffel tower and go back

home." He smiled mischievously.

"Ohhh I get it this whole bet will benefit only you.You want

me to let you win so that we can visit all those places and

you will come out as the best player." I looked at him

smiling.

"Well those are your words not mine and of course this is a

bet I gotta do what benefits me." He shrugged.

I laughed."You're a cheat."

He winked."No I'm just clever."

"You're clever indeed." I smiled as we continued playing

the game.He won and seeing him happy like that made me

happy too.

When we arrived in Paris I was mesmerized with the

beauty of that city.I murmured a wow as Lindani drove in.

"I could live here." I admired.

"Wait till you see the Eiffel tower.You will be blown away."

Sipho said excitedly.

"That reminds me if we are touring around we need a tour

guide.I know someone." I beamed in excitement.

"That's great then because its hard finding a tour guide

around here especially when you want to tour on your own

and not as a group." Lindani said.

"Ok let me give him a call." I took my phone and dialed Thomas's number. Luckily he answered on the first ring. I informed him that I wanted a tour guide and lucky enough he didn't have any clients so we agreed to meet at the Eiffel tower. Lindani drove there and like Siphohad said when we arrived there I was blown away. I called Thomas again and told him where we were waiting and within a few minutes he found us. His eyes landed on Lindani and he drooled but when Lindani removed his cap and he got

frightened. I didn't even want to imagine how Lindani felt whenever people look at him and got frightened because of his scars. I'm sure it made him feel bad. Anyway I introduced Sipho and Lindani to him and they exchanged pleasantries.

"No I'm not going up there this tower is 324 meters long so there is no way I'm going up there." I protested

"Mj we will use an elevator to get up there its not like we are climbing up there and its not like we are going to the

tip of the tower. We are not even reaching the half of it."

Sipho laughed.

"No way I'm afraid of heights so no." I protested again.

Lindani chuckled shaking his head.

"Come on girlfie its not that scary." Sipho laughed his

lungs out as I shook to the fear of going on to the

tower. Hell no I was afraid of heights so there was no way I

was going to pull that off.

"You guys can go up there and come back. I will be waiting

for you down here." I said heading to the car.

"There is no fun in that." Thomas said suppressing a laugh.

"And we have to take pictures." Sipho waved his camera in the air.

"Let's go there is nothing to be afraid of." Lindani said holding my hands and literally dragging me.

"No no Lindani Zulu no. I don't want to please don't make me." He seemed flattered when I called him by his full name.

He smiled which was a short brief smile before I could see it all he was back to his serious face. "I have got you." Once again I let my guard down and trust this man. He gave me a reassuring look as I was thinking about it.

I nodded my head. "Fine."

"That was easy." Thomas smiled as he led us to the tower. I haven't realised that I was actually holding on tightly to Lindani until he squeezed my hand to ease me up. We went into the elevator and when we reached the top

my eyes were completely closed.

"You can open your eyes now." He said and I shook my

head in protest.

"Its already enough that I agreed to come up here.If I open

my eyes I will die.I just can't."I shook my head in protest.I

felt his hand reaching up and touching my face instead of

flinching away from his touch I lean in to it.

"Open your eyes." It came out as a deep whisper.

I slowly opened them and I was met by the deep gaze of

his hazel eyes.Strange enough I found myself lost in those
eyes.With his hand still cupping my face it felt like there
was a burning inside my body that was growing as time
goes by and before I could register what was happening I
reached up too and touched his face he didn't flinch
either.I traced my hands on the scars and he lean in to it.It
seems like we were both too lost in the moment and didn't
register what was going on.We both snapped out of it
thanks to the camera shutter sound.Sipho had a naughty

grin on his face.

"If you keep on staring at each other like that we won't

finish the tour." Thomas and Sipho did a high five.

I cleared my throat and looked away while Lindani pulled

his serious face like nothing happened.

"You're still afraid girlfie?" Sipho wiggled his eyebrows.

I was still holding on to Lindani because I was afraid. Now

that everything was awkward after our little episode I tried

to remove my hand so that I will hold on to Thomas but

scarred warrior here tightened his grip.

"Let's tour around." Lindani said and we started walking

around with Siphon taking pictures.

"Thomas please take the picture of the three of us." He

gave Thomas the camera and came to stand between

Lindani and I. We had no choice but to pose for the picture.

"Can we go down already. I have had enough of the

heights." I complained.

They all agreed and we took the elevator down. Our next

stop was at Notré dome church. Now I was ecstatic about it because the church was old but so amazing. Lindani excused himself and went to take a call outside. Siphon was on the altar praying and I was just admiring around and taking pictures with Thomas explaining some things to me. After Siphon was done praying he came to me all smiles. Thomas also excused himself as he went to take a call.

"You sure took your time." I said playing with his afro.

"I was asking something from God. There is a saying that if you pray while in this church God will surely answer your prayers." He said

"Ohh God will surely answer your prayers." I smiled

"I like you." He blurted out.

"And I like you too. You're very cool." We sat at one of the benches in the church.

"I meant I like you for my dad." He was serious.

"W-what is that supposed to mean." I asked

"I like you for my dad.I wish you were the one engaged to my father.I don't like Delia." He confessed.

"Delia is your mother you shouldn't say that about her."

He sighed."She is not my mom.My mother died in a car accident so I was told.I only saw her pictures.I hate Delia."I

felt pity for him because I knew how hard it was living without a mother.

"Why do you hate her?" I asked.

"She beats me every chance she got because she thinks

I'm a spoilt brat and she says I'm not a Zulu.She

threatened me that if I ever tell on her she will make sure

I'm sent to a boarding school or outside the country

faraway from my family.She said obviously my father

would not believe me even if I try.So I never told anyone

about it.I hate her because she also tries to separate me

from my father by making me look like a bad kid every

chance she gets.She is a bad person.I don't like her at

all.Mj I'm not a mischievous child I promise you but she

just hates me for no reason at all. I have never done anything to her. When she fights with dad she comes to me and beats me because according to her everything is my fault. I'm telling you this because there is a sense of confidentiality I get from telling a stranger my problems. Please don't tell anyone." I felt my cheeks moist and warm. I was crying. The pain of knowing that Delia was abusing such an adorable child here was just too much. Yes I haven't known Siphon for a long time but I felt

so connected to him and I fell in love with him. And even if

he was mischievous kid, children are like that especially

those his age but you can't use that to justify child

abuse. Child abuse has a huge negative impact on children

especially mentally and from the look of it Siphos was so

much affected at such a young age.

"She beats you!" I said in disbelief and he nodded. He lifted

up his T-shirt and there were red whip marks all over his

back. It didn't help that he was light skinned. I gasped in

surprise. Who does that to a child?

"You should tell your father the truth Siphoh and he will

believe you because you're his son. He will never believe

Delia over you." If I could I would have told Lindani the

truth myself but it wasn't appropriate for me to interfere

directly into their matters. All I could do was to advise

Siphoh to tell his father the truth. He needed that much

courage to tell his father everything that has been

happening.

"Do you think he will believe me? What if he doesn't? He was worried.

"Trust me he will believe you no matter what. Delia is just threatening you so that you won't tell on her but your father loves you and if you tell him the truth he will believe you. Also if you show him this marks he will believe you. You're his son and you come first."

He sniffed. "Ok I will tell him today."

"That's more like it. Tell him the truth he will believe

you.You're a good boy.You don't deserve this." I hugged

him and rubbed his back.

"I made a wish at the Paris tower too.Thomas told me that

if you make one there it will come true.It is the same wish I

was praying for not so long ago." He smiled looking at

me."I know I haven't known you for a long time and I may

sound crazy right now but I like you so much and it's

strange that I feel like we have met before or I have known

you for a long time.My wish is that my dad finds someone

like you or better yet you. I saw how you guys looked at each other at Eiffel tower and Thomas told me that it's called chemistry that is between you two. He said it can also develop into something beautiful. So I was praying that the chemistry develops into something beautiful like Thomas said. I really like you for my dad. I don't know you but I feel that you're a really nice person and also dad thinks you're beautiful. He told me in the morning after breakfast. Don't tell him I told you because it was

supposed to stay between me and him." He said looking all adorable.

I sighed."Sipho me and your dad are never going to be sweetheart.We are strangers and I have my own life so is your dad.I have someone I have to marry and I have someone I love.After two weeks I will leave.We will part ways and we will all continue with our lives.I'm sure one day you will find someone who will be a good mother to you ok.Unfortunately its not me.Soon enough you will

forget about me."

He sighed sadly."I don't want to believe that. You're going

to be part of my family one day."Before I retaliated to what

he said Thomas and Lindani came back.

"Are you guys done?" Lindani asked.

"Yes we are."Sipho and I stood up.

"Cool let's go.Our next stop is at Louvre museum." Sipho

jumped up and down in excitement.He drove us there and I

must say I was blown away by the historical artifacts we

found there. I always saw the museum at some numerous music videos but in reality it was way better than in the videos.

"That is Marie Antoinette right." I asked and Thomas nodded.

"That's amazing." Siphon and I posed for the picture. We spent most of our time at the museum because there was a lot to see and learn. There were also a lot of people who had come to tour so the queues were long and Siphon

wanted to see everything since he was interested in

history. When we came out I was exhausted and hungry

but the energy that Siphso still had was

unbelievable. Thoma's job was done and Lindani paid him

as well as all of our tours even though I insisted on paying

too.

"We are going to the restaurant daddy." He said excited.

I smiled. "At least finally I'm going to eat"

We went to the restaurant and ordered the famous French

large nillos bellissima piazza. We ate while Siphon and I

engaged in an interesting conversation about games.

Lindani was just quiet watching us. By the time we were

done eating I had a lot of ideas about my next gaming app.

"Do you guys need anything else before we go back to

Silver lake?" Lindani asked.

"No we don't. I'm exhausted I think it's time we go back

home." I suggested. We agreed to go back home because

Siphon looked tired too he even fell asleep. I layed him

carefully on the backseat and sat with Lindani at the front. The whole thing was just awkward for me especially after he accidentally brushed my thigh while changing gears. I relived the moment his big hands had cupped my face at the Eiffel tower. I didn't understand how my own body could react the way it did for another man who was not Treet. How could my heart pound to his touch like that. I took a quick glance at him and looked away. If it wasn't for Eminem's bad husband playing in the car then the silence

was going to make things worse.

"I told you to take a picture earlier but you didn't. Now

you're stealing glances." I sensed some mockery in his

voice but he still had a stone face on.

"I'm not stealing glances." I defended.

"Yea right." He chuckled.

"I'm serious. I wasn't stealing glances." I defended.

"Look who is becoming all defensive. Majesty you were

literally undressing me with your eyes earlier please don't

try to deny it." He looked at me with a smirk and focused
back to the road.

"Lindani Zulu don't flatter yourself." I rolled my eyes.

He chuckled."I love the sound of that."

"The sound of what?"

"My name on your lips." He took a quick glance at me then
focused on the road again.

"Are you flirting with me Mr Zulu?"

He shrugged."Guilty as charged."

"So that's what you do to every other girl out there while you have a fiancé." For some reason I felt bitter about the thought of him flirting with other ladies and the thought of Delia almost sent me to a spin. Why I was feeling that way? I have no idea.

He chuckled. "Are you jealous?" He asked.

"Pshhh me. Hell no. I mean why would I be. I'm not jealous. I

was just asking." I don't know if I was trying to convince

him or myself but either way my own voice didn't sound so

convincing.

"Yea right and just so you know, flirting is not cheating. Its

not a crime."

"If a right-handed person slaps you with a left hand. Don't

you still get slapped? Flirting and cheating are one and the

same thing. It all starts from flirting." I shot him a look.

He chuckled. "You're funny."

When we arrived the whole family was chilled outside. I

got off the car and Lindani carried Sipho inside. Lindy

Advertisement

Lisa

and Martha ran up to me.

"So how was it tell us." They started bombarding me with questions.

"Geez girls relax. It was a tour around Paris don't make it a big deal." I laughed.

"Oooh really we will make it a big deal especially after this picture was posted by Siphoh." Lindy said

"What picture." I asked.

"The picture when you and my brother were in that moment." Lisa wiggled her eyebrows and Martha gave me the phone. It was that episode at the Eiffel tower and Siphohad snapped a picture with a caption #Eiffel tower where it all starts.I knew Thomas put him to it and now I was in deep shit.

"I-its not what it looks like I promise you. Its just that I was afraid and he was trying to calm me down." I explained.

"You don't have to explain honey.You guys look so good

together."Lindy winked.

I sighed." Guys come on.Ohhh I need to leave before Delia

go all gaga on me but trust me guys its not what it looks

like and I gotta go.I'm sure the picture went viral and I have

some explaining to do"

Lindy smiled."Yea right.We will come by later on for now

let me grab some popcorns because we are about to see

some live drama also make sure you cook up some good

convincing explanation for Treet."She said and I gave her a

suspicious look.

"How do you know about Treet?" I asked.

"I saw it on the tabloids." I sighed. I'm sure she saw all my

drama with men. Dear heavens did my past had to catch

up with me all the time.

"You guys saw everything." I gave them a worried look.

Yes and it doesn't change anything. We are not going to

judge you if that's what you're worried about. Everyone has

their nasty past its just unfortunate that some of us we

can't hide it as we always live under the spotlight."Lindy

said and I felt like we shared the same burden.

"We will come over to your place and talk ok." Lisa smiled

and I nodded.

"Ohhh okay.I will see you guys later then."I smiled and

walked away.When I was at home I switched my phone

and removed it from airplane mode.I had multiple missed

calls from Treet,Tyrone,Petty,Mary and a few from

Ethan.Petty's video call came in and I answered.He was

with Mary.

"Biiiiitch what are you up to there and who is that coconut

butter you were with?" He said trying to look around.

Before I answered him Mary intervened." Girl you already

have a lot on your plate right now and now you added that

chocolate delicious thing on your list. Is he your secret

boyfriend? Who is that coconut butter? Did you sleep with

the guy? Girl do you ever change. You were there for just a

day or so but you already have a guy. Bitch do you use

some voodoo shit to attract men. Have you already

forgotten about Treet? Is he that good that you're already

posting pictures and going all relationship goals." She

shouted and they started arguing with Petty saying it was

ok to have a distraction with what was going on I needed

D-therapy while Mary was shouting back at him for giving

me nasty ideas.

"Ok ok ok you guys stop stop stop!!! Nothing is going on

ok. It was just an accidental moment if there is anything

like that. The guy saved me the day I came here. I was almost raped and he came to my rescue. Apparently he is my neighbor as well and we had breakfast together earlier. Cutting the long story short you know I'm afraid of heights right so he was just comforting me ok His son kind of snapped the moment. That's why it's creating such a misunderstanding but it's not like that you have to believe me."

"Well what was your hand doing on his face and it doesn't

need an expert here for one to understand that on the picture you looked so lost into each other's eyes. You were in your own world. Major a lot is happening right now and you adding this delicious chocolate thing will bring more trouble. I'm sure wherever Treet is and if he has seen this picture he is losing his mind." Mary said.

"And how old is the child. He was even comfortable in taking pictures of his daddy with a stranger. It's even worse he posted on his page and also posted some

pictures you were together. Trust me according to the media this is your secret family that you have been hiding from the spotlight all this while. They are going to cook many theories about the posts. Wait a minute even the dude looks familiar. Its not even a week yet girl but already you're in a two years old relationship and you already have a grown ass child with a hot chocolate thing on top of that. Haai my friend your life is full of drama shame." Petty laughed.

"Guys you're not making my situation any better here. I'm telling you it's not what it looks like."

"It's not what it looks like. When you guys were inches away from kissing, Treet is going to lose his mind." Petty shook her head. Before I responded Tyrone's call started to come through.

"I have an incoming call I have to take it." I was praying that the picture didn't reach Treet's phone but with Tyrone calling me like this I knew shit had hit the fan.

"Good luck girl." Mary said and they dropped the call.

I answered Tyrone with my fingers crossed.

"#Eiffel tower that's where it all starts.What the hell am I

looking at right now Maj?You already replaced my brother

seriously.He almost killed himself because of an

accident.He has to deal with you probably going to marry

Ethen now who the fuck is this guy again.What the hell is

going on there Majesty?" Tyrone shouted.

"Its not what it looks Tyrone.I promise you.Its a

misunderstanding you have to believe me. That guy is someone who helped me out when I was almost raped here and also he is with his family here and they are my neighbors. We just went together with his family at the Eiffel tower. I'm afraid of heights so he was trying to cheer me on and his son kind of took a picture of that moment. I know it looks somehow but trust me it's not what it looks like. "I tried to sound as convincing as I could.

"I'm an artist Maj and analysing pictures is my specialty

surely that picture speaks volumes. You were even

touching the guy too."

"Tyrone you have to believe me I love Treet. I would never

do that to him. It's just a picture and you're misinterpreting

the whole thing nothing is going on. Did Treet see the

picture."

He sighed. "My brother is going through a lot right now. Of

course I would never let him see that picture or he will

lose his mind and for the sake of my brother's life and if

you love him like you say you do I'm hoping you're telling
the truth."

"I am telling the truth Tyrone."

"Ok fine and stay away from that guy." He dropped the call.

I sighed and threw myself on the couch. I was just relieved that Ethan didn't see it but it was not going to take time till he sees it. My life was just a mess. I stood up and decided to go upstairs to take a shower but before I could someone rang the door bell and I went to answer it.

"Ohhh no Delia not right now." She was standing there breathing fire.

"Bitch you're dead." She said.

21

MAJESTY

You won't get away with it. At least not on Lisa's watch.

"Delia if you're here because of the picture then I have nothing else to tell you because already it seems you won't believe whatever that I'm going to say to you anyway." I said.

"Great because I wasn't here to chit chat with you like we are old friends. Read my lips girl I know shit like you. You're the type that wanna put their claws on everything in pants

but bitch let me warn you.I will not let you touch what's

mine...I will--"

The way she was fuming you would swear she found me

fucking her man but nonetheless I understood where she

was coming from.Maybe I would have also reacted the

same if I was in her position.

"Whoa whoa whoa girl hold it up with the threats already.I

ain't trying to get my claws on anybody.I'm dealing with a

lot right now and your man is not even someone I wanna

add to that list.I understand the picture was taken when we were in a very compromising position and I sincerely apologize for that.I'm sorry but I assure you I'm not trying to get my claws on your man.Now can I get back to what I was doing if you don't mind."

"Now you ain't going anywhere before I teach you a lesson bitch.." Before I could register what was happening she attacked me by pulling my hair.I screamed in pain because I least expected it.I could take it if she was to get all mad

and shout at me but getting physical was way overboard

and I had to carefully place "being a lady" on the side and

unleash my ghetto side. You can't mess with a

Zimbabwean girl who grew up in the hood and think you

can get away with it. This hair pulling thing hurt like shit but

luckily I didn't lose balance so I managed to kick her in

the stomach and she fell down groaning.

"I don't wanna fight you Delia. I know you're angry and all

but fighting is the last thing I want to do especially when I

know nothing happened." I tried to negotiate but she was having none of it. She quickly grabbed my right leg, bruising me with her claws in process and pulled it. I fell and the back of my head hurt and I twisted my left leg. I groaned in pain. She sat on top of me and tried punching me but I pushed her too and sat on top of her instead then went all gaga on her.

"I told you I didn't wanna fight girl I told you.." I said

throwing mean punches on her yellow bone face. I was not

done butchering her face when someone lifted me off her

like a potato sack. I didn't try to fight because I knew

Lindani was too powerful. Martha, Linda and Lindy came in

running when they saw Delia on the floor her face bleeding

instead of helping her they came to me.

"Girl you can beat the shit out people. Look at her. I like you

already." Lisa laughed her lungs out. Lindani helped her up

and literally dragged her out leaving the girls in stitches.

"I'm sure after this she needs another nose job. I don't

know what's her problem she always does this even to a girl who breathes the same air as Scar." Martha said.

"She is a psycho."Lindy laughed.

"I didn't mean to fight with her.Maybe I could have acted the same way if I was in her shoes.I don't blame her.In the picture we were in a very compromising position."I admitted.

"Yea I get that but that doesn't give her the right to act like she just did.You just don't go on attacking people.Scar told

her that nothing happened you were just in a

compromising position and she stormed out. We thought

she was going out of fresh air but not Delia shame. And

trust me you're not the first one she attacked. She is so

insecure its not even funny. This is also not her first fight

she always does this. Scar almost lost a number of clients

when she attacked them going all hair pulling and

scratching. She has issues."

I shook my head. "But besides that you don't seem to like

her that much."

"Because she is someone easy to hate.I can't like

someone who once hit on my man, seduced my sister's

boyfriend, she is also Lwandile's ex girlfriend and has her

eyes on Leon too but she is wearing Lindani's ring.Can you

believe her." Lisa exploded.

"Wow that's a lot."She had so much drama but I bet

Lindani loved her to the moon and back otherwise why

would he stick around and want to marry her even after

knowing this much shit about her. Ethan loves you girl and

he still continues to even after all the shit you did. My

conscience said and I brushed it off.

"So Martha what advice can you give me about marriage?"

I changed the topic.

Lisa popped her eyes out. "Are you getting married.?"

I sighed. "Umm I'm in a situation where I might end up

getting married."

Lindy furrowed her forehead. "Arranged marriage?"

"Yea kind of but not your typical arranged marriage where you have to marry a stranger its my best friend that I have to marry."

"Treet?" Martha asked.

"No Treet is my lover. My relationship with him is kind of complicated and when we tried to make it work umm I got the proposal."

Martha nodded. "So now you're in a dilemma because you don't know what to do. That's the reason why you came

here alone because you wanted to make your own

decision without anyone disturbing you." I nodded.

"It's starting to make sense now." Lisa said.

"But arranged marriages are so African I didn't know black

Americans do those too." Lindy said.

I laughed. "I'm not black American I'm Zimbabwean. I just

moved to America years ago."

They all looked at me with surprise written all over their

faces. "Really I would never know especially with your

accent."

"Yea right." I smiled.

"Anyway my advice i would give you about marriage is you

should always know that just like life marriage is also like

a wheel. Its not a bed of roses but its not a bed of thorns

either.Some days are good and some days are bad but

when it gets bad always remember why at some point it is

good.Lwandile and I are not always lovey dovey.The road

can get very bumpy at times but I'm glad that before he

was my husband he was and he still is my best friend. We understand each other and we always find a way to resolve our problems without have to seek help from the outside. Husbands are hard things to deal with even hot water doesn't make them tender but communication is the key. Never go to sleep without resolving your issues and no matter how angry you're at your man don't ever force him to sleep on the couch and you also shouldn't storm out and sleep in the guest room. No matter how angry you're at

each other sleep on the same bed and talk it out. I think its
mainly about communication and understanding each
other. Respect him too. Men love that and once you respect
him he will kiss the ground you walk on. I have five main
issues that I think everyone who is married should take
seriously. Communication, Love, Honesty, Respect and
Loyalty. Those five things can make the marriage stay
strong for a very long time. Do you want to marry your best
friend and ditch your lover?" She asked.

"I don't know yet. Whoever I choose between the two I will lose something in return. If I choose my best friend I'm going to lose the love of my life and if I choose the love of my life I'm going to lose my company. Everything I worked hard for."

Lindy shook her head. "I'm just giving my opinion on this one but I'm not saying make your decision based on my opinion. But know this Mj. Tomorrow you could wake up and the person you love can love somebody else but a

hundred dollar bill will always be a hundred. Your company will always be your company. I can't sacrifice my sweat and tears for men because those motherfuckers change so no."

Martha nodded. "I agree with her and I don't think marrying your best friend would be such a bad idea. You already know each other very well and I know its difficult for it to turn from friendship to love but I think it will work with the best friend. I'm saying this because I married my own best

friend but if you love your other guy very much and if he is worth you losing everything then go for it. Do what you think is right."

"The problem is I don't know what is right." My doorbell rang and I limped to the door.

I sighed. "What do you want Lindani?" I folded my arms. He ignored me and walked into my house. Ok now he was acting like he owns it and I was getting irritated. It was already enough that I had to deal with his girl. I didn't have

the energy to deal with him too.

"Ummm chommie I have to check on Mark." Martha stood up and left.

"And we have a phone call to make." Lisa and Linda followed Martha. I don't think leaving me with Lindani all alone was a good idea especially after what had just happened.

"Lindani I think you should leave. The last thing I want is your fiancé on my case. Please just leave before she

storms in here and act all crazy. She already

misunderstood my intentions and you coming back here

will only make things worse." I said.

"Sit down." He commanded.

"Lindani I don't think you're getting what I'm saying

here. You shou--"

"Now! Sit down. I hate repeating myself woman." He said

firmly and I limped to the couch and sat down without

saying a word. He placed a transparent case on the table

that's when I realized that all this while he came with a first aid kit. He knelt besides me and touched my right leg which had a huge burise thanks to Delia's claws. He took out a white cloth and some disinfectant and wiped the blood away. I didn't even notice I was bleeding. After wiping it clean he let it go and took my left leg and stretched it. It made that bone cracking sound.

"You twisted it. I noticed." He bandaged it.

"By tomorrow the swell will go down. If it doesn't then keep

on applying this ointment." He placed a white bottle on the table and stood up. He made his way to the kitchen and I heard the tap running. He was washing his hands. He came back and packed his first aid kit.

"Thank you." It came out as a whisper.

He nodded. He was about to walk away but stopped then looked at me. "Next time don't entertain Delia. Cat fighting doesn't suit you."

I scoffed in agitation and yelled "Ohhh so you wanted me

to be chilled and act like a lady when she was busy pulling my hair."

He shook his head and sighed. Then looked at me for a while without saying anything. The aura and vibes that I was getting from that look sent cold chills down my spine. My anger was on hundred but it dropped to one and was replaced with embarrassment. Was it necessary to yell Maj? My inner voice reprimanded. I bit my lower lip so as to avoid saying anything out of the line. I was now conscious

about my tone. I didn't get how he can easily command respect without him having to say a word. "Don't put weight on that leg or else it will take long for the swelling to go down." He said and I remained quiet playing with my fingers.

"Are we clear?" His deep voice echoed in the room

"Crystal clear." I nodded.

"Good." He walked out and I breathed heavily. I didn't even know I was holding a breathe like that.

"How does your brother do it? I mean he demands respect without saying a word. He gives intimidating looks and it just send cold chills down my spine." I was with Lindy and Martha. They came back as soon as Lindani left. They were helping me out to prepare dinner and Lisa had remained back at their place preparing dinner for the guys.

They laughed. "He is a Zulu man Mj."

"No I don't get the same vibes from Leon or Lwandile. Yes I have never spend much time with them but still I could

have felt it. I mean with Lindani even if you sit besides him for just two minutes. He has this aura and it sends chills and his size makes things worse."

"That's Scar for you and also his line of work needs someone who is like that." Lindy shrugged.

"His line of work?" I asked.

They exchanged glances. "He is a business tycoon and sometimes you have to be tough for things to work and for people not to undermine you."

"But I have met so many businessmen who are highly respected. They don't act all tough and scary like Lindani."

"Yea you're right but with Scar it's different. He has to do what he has to do even if it means walking around and scaring people with that tough look to get the job done." Martha shrugged.

"And you call him Scar because of the scars?" They both nodded. "What happened to him?"

Lindy smiled. "It's not in our right to tell you unfortunately."

"Its ok I understand."

"But when he is with our mom its different. She brings the

best out of him and he is a completely different person

when he is around mom. Even when Ariana was alive she

managed to bring the best out of him too. I just wish he

could find a woman apart from our mother and Ariana who

will bring the best out of him."

"Ariana?" I asked.

"His late wife." Martha said sadly.

"She was a great person and she managed to tame the beast but with Delia haii she unleashes the beast out of Lindani instead. That one is a headache."

"Even aunt Thandiwe hates her." They started laughing. I was left out because I didn't know what they were talking about.

"Ohhh my dear. Aunt Thandiwe is one of our overdramatic aunts. Very talkative and calls a spade a spade. She has a sour tongue and its hard to win her over. She is just a bitter

person. We thought she would get along with Delia since she didn't like Ariana for being just a good person but they are like fire and ice. It gets even more funny when they exchange words every time they meet. I miss her though she gets on my nerves a lot. We should have brought her along." Lindy laughed.

"Yohh she sounds scary." I shook my head.

"She is scary indeed but our mother can put her in her place shame." Martha said dicing the carrots.

"You must be a big family you guys."

"Yes we are a big family. After our father died our mother

had to marry his brother. It is tradition and already our

uncle had a family of his own so we became one big

family altogether. It's mom, Lindani, Lwandile, Lisa and me

from our side then uncle, aunt Thandiwe

Leon their first

born and his sisters, Zara and Ntokozile from their side so

we are ten in total."

"Wow so how do you manage with such a big family. I mean I can't deal. I'm used to being alone and being in my own space. Growing up it has always been mom, dad, my lil brother, my lil sister and me. When they died their friends who had one child who happens to be my best friend took us in. So it was just the six of us but still I was somehow uncomfortable. When I managed to stand on my own I moved out." I said peeling the potatoes.

"You will have to adjust dear when you're faced with the

situation where you have to mingle in a big family. Imagine if you get married into our family you will just have to get used to it. Or if you come with your "I can't deal being around too many people" norm they will see you as someone who thinks they are better than anyone else. I came from a very small family too. It was just me, my mother and my little sister but when Lwandile and I got married I had to adjust. First it wasn't easy and I found it very hard to interact with the others especially Leon's

sisters Zara and Ntoko but with time I got the hang of

it. Even if we don't get along that much it's bearable now."

Martha said.

"Haaai those are just like their mother shame." Lindy threw

her hands in the air.

"I bet your lives are full of drama."

Martha. "Tell me about it."

We continued with our conversation while preparing

dinner. They kept me company and for some time I even

forgot my own problems. Lisa and Sipho came later on and

joined us it was noisy but fun. I also got to know that

Martha was a stay at home mom. She was even four

months pregnant and she was also taking care of

Lwandile's other child from a prior relationship before they

got married. The child had remained in South Africa with

her mother. Her name was Mary. Lindy was a CEO at a

charity organisation which dealt with women especially

the victims of abuse and she was planning to open other

branches all over South Africa. Lisa studied medicine. She didn't become a doctor right away but she owned three pharmacies in Johannesburg where they all lived. Martha was 30. Lisa and Lindy were 26 just a year younger than me. I wanted to ask how old Lindani was but reminded myself that it was none of my business.

They set the table and we all sat down to enjoy pap, grilled chicken, spicy diced potatoes, steamed vegetables and coleslaw that we had prepared. The food was delicious and

the conversation was just flowing and fun. Siphó would throw jokes here and there. For a twelve year old he really could match up with Trevor Noah.

"So I told dad Mj" Siphó blurted out.

"What are you talking about?" Lindy asked. Siphó looked at me and I nodded reassuring him.

He stood up and removed his shirt. They all gasped.

"Who the fuck did this to you?" Lisa shouted.

"Don't scare him." I calmed Lisa down because she was

already breathing fire while Martha and Lindy were

shedding tears.

"Delia.She has been beating me and threatening me that if

I tell dad she would have me send to a boarding school or

out of the country faraway from the family."He sniffed and

started narrating how it all started,when and why.He

narrated everything without leaving a thing.Delia's second

name was Cruel I'm telling you.At some point she would

beat the child because he spilt some juice or any other

silly mistake that you could ever think of. That was just pure cruelty.

"Ohhh that bitch is so dead. She is so fucking dead. She thinks she has a fucking right to lay her filthy hands on my nephew. I'm going to deal with her bitchy ass." Lisa stood up but Lindy managed to calm her down.

"Let Scar deal with her ok. Blackwidow calm down." Lindy said holding her sister.

Blackwidow? Ok.

"How dare she?" She breathed heavily.

"And why didn't you tell us Siphó? Why did you keep quiet

all this while? Is this the reason why you didn't want anyone

to see you naked or swim with anybody?" Martha tasked

and Siphó nodded.

"Ohhh God I should have noticed that something was

wrong. I'm sorry for turning a blind eye. I'm sorry

Siphó. Sorry neh." She cupped Siphó's face and hugged

him.

"I'm sorry for not telling too but none of this is your fault."

Sipho said.

"She will never again lay her hands on you Sipho. Do you understand or she will have me to deal with." Lisa assured

Sipho and they did some signature handshake.

"And she will have to go through me too. If she ever again threatens you or beats you don't hesitate to tell us or your dad ok. We will always be by your side and we will always believe you." He hugged Lindy too.

"When we go back home I will organise a therapist for you.Ok sweety."

"Thanks aunty."

"Ok let's go get some chocolate ice cream." They went to the kitchen with Lindy.

Martha looked at me and smiled."Thank you so much for encouraging him to speak.If it wasn't for you then we all could have been in the dark and I don't know for how long it was going to continue. I promised Ariana to take care of

him and I feel like I'm failing. I'm a mother. I should have noticed that something was wrong. Siphos is a jolly and cheerful kid. He never portrayed any signs that other kids show when they are abused but I should have known that beyond that smile was pain. How could I not notice? I even trusted Delia with him. She pretended to like him in front of everyone but I shouldn't have fallen for that act especially after knowing the kind of person Delia is. I thought at least they got along. Lindani is a very busy man. He is a busy

body and he is barely at home so it means all that time

Lindani was at work Delia was busy abusing the poor

kid. She won't get away with it shame." She cried well I

guess the hormones were not doing her any favours.

"Don't blame yourself anymore Martha. What is important

is you now know what has been going on so you can keep

a close eye on him and take care of him. It's not ignorance

but like you said Siphos is a cheerful kid and it's hard for

one to notice that he is being abused because of that

poker face he shows people."

"Well Scar better deal with his bitch accordingly because if

I do I will fuck her ass up with a pitchfork." Lisa folded her

arms and sucked her teeth and I could feel the truth in

each word she said.

"You know Scar is against gender based violence and he

will never lay a hand on a woman but this time, this time

Delia crossed the line." Martha shook his head.

"Ohhh if he can't lay a hand on that bitch then I will do that

for him. You know what can I crash over here for today Mj. I

don't think I will handle myself if I go back to that house

with that bitch. I will kill her." Lisa said.

"Sure you're welcome here all of you. I could do with some

company." I said.

"I would have loved to stay for the slumber party too but

my husband needs me to warm the bed for him you know."

Martha winked. We all laughed and it eased the

tension. Lindy and Siphon came back with five tubs of ice

cream. Martha excused herself and went to answer her

phone. After a short while she came back with a worried

look on her face.

"Lwandile said they left with Leon to go look for Scar. After

a heated argument with Delia he left the house and Mark

is coming over here. If that's ok with you Mj." Martha said.

"Its ok."

"Typical Scar. They should let him be because he is trying

to cool off because one more minute with that bitch he will

kill her and throw her body in the acid tank." She said

looking all chilled but it made my heart pound in fear

because I felt like she was telling the truth. She might have

sensed my fear she smiled.

"I meant the last part literally. He doesn't really kill people

and throw their bodies in an acid tank." Luckily Sipho was

in the lounge I'm sure he was going to shake in fear had he

heard this. Within a few moments Mark came in and he

went and joined Sipho in the lounge.

"Now that no one is at home and it's only that bitch Delilah.

I'm going to teach her some manners." Lisa stood up and

Martha tried to stop her.

"Let her go. Delia deserves whatever that's coming for her."

Lindy said and Lisa stormed out. Lindy continued looking

all calm about it but now I was kind of frightened. Maybe I

shouldn't have interfered in their issues but it was a matter

of a child's life here. Someone had to do something

fortunately or unfortunately I became that someone. All I

ever wanted was a soul searching getaway trip but

wherever I go drama follows or I follow drama either way

me and drama were intertwined.

"Sipho and Mark guys you should listen to this song.I

downloaded it especially for you two." Lindy said inserting

earphones in Sipho and Mark's ears.I have no idea where

she got those earphones from.

She looked at us and smiled."Wait for it."

I looked at her in confusion and within a few minutes we

heard some screams."Music to my ears." Lindy shrugged.

I just shook my head.The screams went on until I couldn't

listen to them any longer.

"I think we should go check on them or Blackwidow will

not stop." Martha said.

"Blackwidow." I furrowed my forehead.

"I mean Lisa,Blackwidow is her nickname.Anyway let's go

check on them." Martha insisted.

"No you stay here Martha with Sipho and Mark.Mj we can

go if you're not faint hearted."

"Let's go I just want this to stop I hate violence." We went

over to their house and I almost peed on myself when I

saw the state Delia was in. Her face was unrecognizable as

it was covered in blood. A portion of her hair was on the

floor.

"Stand up bitch. I said stand the fuck up. You're used to

beating a defenseless kid now stand up and let's talk

woman to woman." Lisa grabbed her by the hair and

punched her face. Delia screamed in pain.

"Blackwidow stop that's enough." Lindy shouted and that's

when she stopped and threw Delia on the floor.

"Let me take a shower and get her filthy blood off me." She

stormed upstairs.

"Umm we need to get her to the hospital." I used to think I

was capable of going ghetto on someone and teach them

a lesson but this was on some other level. Delia was really

roughed up and she looked awful.

"When she used to beat Sipho up did she take him to the hospital? My nephew has fucking scars on his back so she should deal with it." Lindy said.

Lisa came back all clean and changed. She threw a towel at Delia.

"Clean yourself up."

MAJESTY

Love is an unusual game. Its either there are two winners or none.

"They haven't found him yet?" I asked. It has been hours since we have been told that Lindani had left. After Lisa dealt with Delia we went back to my house and stayed up for a while waiting for Lwandile to update Martha about Lindani's whereabouts but since they left looking for him, they haven't found him and it was getting everyone

worried.Well I was kind of worried too.

"No they are in Paris right now.They have gone to all the

places they can think of but he is not there.I'm telling

Lwandile to just come back home.I know he is extremely

worried about him but Scar is a big guy he can take care of

himself.Its now very late for them to roam about." She sat

down looking all worried.She was on the verge of crying.

"I think maybe he is not faraway. Maybe he did not even go

to Paris.I mean if he stormed out of the house to get some

fresh air he would probably go somewhere quiet and peaceful not a busy city like Paris." I said.

"You have a point there.I mean yes he would not go

far.Whenever Scar is angry he goes somewhere with

water.Yes!Thank you Mj you're the best.Martha call

Lwandile right now and tell them to come back because I

know where Scar has gone."Lisa stood up and wore her

jacket.While Martha called Lwandile.

"Ok its 11pm right now.Where are you planning to go at

this hour?We are all worried about him but you can't go out at this hour.Why don't we wait for Lwandile and Leon to come back so that you will go with them?"Lisa said.

"I cannot wait for another hour Lindy.You know very well I can't sleep without him here right so its either you accompany me to get him back or you stay.Mj do you wanna come?" She asked.

"Umm its late Lisa and its scary out there."I was almost raped when it was not even that dark.Going out at this

hour was very risky.

"I got you trust me and we are driving to Silver Lake its not

far from here.I think its 10minutes or so."I also couldn't let

her go alone so I agreed.

"Fine let's go." Lindy and Martha decided to stay back and

look after the kids.Lisa drove yet another white land rover

discovery into my yard.I hopped in and she drove off.

"I swear if something happens to my brother I will end that

bitch's pathetic life." She clenched her jaws.

"You sound like you mean it."

She looked at me briefly."Cause I actually mean it.I will kill

anybody who messes with my family.I love my family.If

anyone wants to get to my family they will have to go

through me first.I love my brother Mj.Scar did and

sacrificed a lot for everyone when our father was killed.Our

mother was in no condition to take care of us and Scar

took that role of taking care of everybody. He was just a

kid himself.He was about Sipho's age when he took it

upon himself to become the father to all of us. We never had it easy growing up. We were not born with silver spoons in our mouths but when our father was killed it became worse. He was involved in some shady business and that got him into trouble. Scar even witnessed our father's death and it was never easy for him. Our mother was extremely ill on the other hand and we had to move away from home because the people who killed our father were after us too. We lived in shacks under a bridge for

some months and only survived on one meal per day. The rest of the money that Scar worked for would go to our mother's medication. It wasn't easy but as young as Scar was he hustled, hustled and hustled until we managed to have a proper roof on our heads, eat three times a day and go back to school. He worked hard for that. He is more of a father to every one of us than he is a brother. We owe him our lives which is why you're seeing everyone getting worried and going crazy that they can't find him. Then

bitches like Delia undermine the value that Scar has in our family by messing with his son. She signed her death wish shame. She used to get on my nerves and I tolerated her nonsense but this time she crossed the line. If she pushes again a little bit harder a bullet is going through her skull and I will hide her body where no one can find it mxm."

I wiped off my tears listening to her. Who would have ever thought that despite being filthy rich now they once suffered so painfully like that. I thought I had suffered and

it could last me a lifetime but this was on some other level.

"Where were your other relatives all this while?" I asked.

She scoffed. "Enjoying their lives honey. They even went as

far as taking the insurance money and the pension that

father had left us. Till now I don't like my uncle. I never

did. Even though things are ok now I still loathe him. My

father was the black sheep of the family. When he died

they just came to bury him because they had no

choice. They took the money that was supposed to be ours

and turned their backs on us afterwards. They were capable of providing for us but they didn't. The money that father had left even though it wasn't much it was going to sustain us. They took it all and spent it on themselves and their children while we fed on crumbs like rats. After Scar bought a house for us they came knocking on our door the following morning. Demanding that our mother gets married to uncle because it was tradition. Where was tradition all those years that we suffered? They only

remembered about tradition when Scar was working hard and changing our lives for the better. Only then they thought about tradition."

"My God that's a lot."

"I know right." She stopped the car and turned off the ignition.

"I was right after all. Scar is over there." I looked to where she was pointing and there was a car parked on the lakeshore with its lights on. The person standing on the

lakeshore with his hands in his pockets was surely

Lindani. With how big he was you wouldn't miss him.

"Then go talk to him so that we can go back home. It's cold

over here." I shivered and decided to go back in the car.

"I'm not good at this talking shit. If I go to him I'm just going

to tell him how much I loathe Delia and I'm going to kill

her. That will not make him feel any better because right

now I'm sure he doesn't want to hear anything to do with

Delia. I should have brought Lindy. She knows what to say

to people."

"So what now. We stay over here and wait for him to cool

off." I asked.

"Don't you know how to talk to people. Of course you know

I mean you encouraged Sipho to tell his father what has

been going on so you can talk to Scar.

I shook my head vigorously. "Hell no I can't your brother is

scary and intimidating so please no. I can't."

"Yes you can." She dragged me towards the lakeshore. She

was too powerful that I failed trying to fight her.

"Good luck.Go ahead."She gave me a thumps up.I slowly

walked towards him and I was shivering because of the

cold wind.

"I want to be alone." He said without even turning. I

stopped on my tracks and thought of just running back to

the car but I gathered enough courage.I walked over to

where he was and stood besides him.

"Ohhh my God its cold over here." I shivered and rubbed

my arms.

He took off his jacket and gave it to me without saying a

word.

"Thanks." I wore it and it smelled so good. We stayed quiet

for some time until I decided to break the ice.

"I have been there too. When I lost my child I felt like I

wasn't a mother enough and I felt like I failed him. I thought

of every silly mistake I made when I was looking after him

and took the guilt of being responsible for his death. I

should have made sure he wore warm clothes, then maybe he wasn't going to have that fever. I should have made sure that he was covered well at night and maybe he wasn't going to catch that cold. All of that I said to myself when I was told my child was dead. For years and even now I still feel like somewhere somehow it was partly my fault. But you Lindani you still have a chance to do right by Siphos. Probably you're blaming yourself for what happened to him and I would be lying if I say it's not partly your

fault. You're his father and as his father it's your responsibility to notice these things. Don't get me wrong I'm not trying to teach you how to be a father to him nor am I undermining your parenting skills. All I'm saying is you didn't pay much attention when you needed to. Martha said you're a businessman and you're always at work. It's fine I understand. Maybe you're building an empire for your son but you need to pay more attention on him too. I don't know what you said to him when he told you about what

has been going on but even if you reassured him and told him you were on his side

Advertisement

acting like this afterwards would make him blame himself for everything. It will make him have doubts. It's fine you wanted to get some air for a little while but we need to go back home now. Your family is worried about you and Sipho was dead worried about you too before going to sleep. After he told you what he told you you were supposed to tuck him in bed and assure him

again and again that you will always be there for him no

matter what. You still have a chance to make it right

Lindani but as for me I only hope that one day I may get a

chance to tell my children that I will always be there for

them. I only hope that one day I will get the chance to

always be there for my children but deep down I know that

I will never get that chance again. It's now up to you to

choose to mop around looking at the lake like this or going

back home and be there for your child" I sighed and turned

to leave.

"Thank you." He said. I stopped and looked at him. He

looked back at me. We exchanged an eye contact for some

time but I broke it and looked at the lake.

"Thanks for being honest with me and not sugarcoating

the truth or telling me what I wanted to hear. Its equally my

fault that this happened to Siphos that too under my

watch. I truly wasn't paying attention like you said and I'm

going to do better from today onwards." He was a man of

a few words so that was it.

"Ok then let's go back before we freeze to death." I looked

at where Lisa had parked the car but there was nothing.

"Where did Lisa go now?"

"Well this was her plan to get me back home. She left you

because given that I had refused to listen to you. I would be

left with no choice but to drive you back home. Let's

go." We went over to his car. He opened the door for me

and turned the air-con inside then drove us back home.

"I can't believe you Lisa." I said shaking my head and rubbing my hands together. Everyone was in my lounge including his brothers Lwandile and Leon.

She laughed and hugged her brother." I'm sorry but I had no choice. Thank you for coming bro."

Lindy hugged him too, they were all over him, he sure was a father figure more than he was a brother.

"Don't scare us like that bafo." Lwandile said rubbing her wife's back who was now fast asleep on his laps.

"I'm sorry.I didn't mean to.Where is Siphо?" He asked.

"Ohh he is upstairs sleeping in my room." I said.

"Ok umm he is a light sleeper. I will come take him

tomorrow. For now can I please go check on him,where is

your room?" He asked.

"Upstairs.The first room on the left."He nodded and went

upstairs.

Lindy looked at me."What did you say to him because

when he is angry I don't even wanna get close to him."

"Yea true he is the hardest to deal with when he is angry."

Leon said.

I shrugged. "I just told him the truth."

"And that will be?" Lisa asked wiggling her eyebrows.

I laughed. "Why don't you ask him. I'm tired I need to

sleep." I yawned.

"Whatever you said to him worked and thank you for

that. Let me take my other baby home. Goodnight."

Lwandile said and carried his wife back to their house.

"Thanks MaZulu." Leon winked at me walking out.

I scrunched my face. "Mazulu?"

Lindy laughed. "That one has a huge crush on you and has

this weird dream of marrying you one day that's why he

called you MaZulu."

I just shook my head. "Weird dream indeed. Anyway guys

let me go to sleep. I'm exhausted." We exchanged

goodnight hugs and they left. I went upstairs and met

Lindani on the door.

"Once again thanks and goodnight." He said.

"No sweat. Goodnight too." I said and walked past him.

"Umm Majesty." He called.

I stopped and looked at him. "Lindani.

He scratched his head. "I'm sorry about your child. I know

how it is like losing someone who means a lot to you. I

have been there too." He chuckled and looked down. "I'm

not really good with words but don't blame yourself for his

death. I'm sure you were a very good mother and it was not

your fault. Its going to be ok one day." I got emotional and cried. I felt his big muscular arms engulfing me into an bear hug. I really needed it.

"I'm sorry if I opened your old wounds."

I sniffed and broke the hug. "Umm its ok I just thought that chapter of my life was closed. Its ok umm goodnight hey."

"Sure." He walked out.

I took my pyjamas and changed in the bathroom then I joined Sipho on the bed. He must have felt someone

getting into the covers because he snuggled closer to me
and I cuddled him then fell asleep. I haven't had such a
peaceful sleep in a long time and this night I slept so
peacefully I even dreamt of my mom. She was standing
faraway wearing a white dress but she was smiling from
the other side I was with Siphon and we were smiling back
at her. I woke up with a huge smile on my face. Siphon was
still fast asleep so I went downstairs to make some
breakfast for us. I went all greasy and meaty. He was still

fast asleep and he looked peaceful. I couldn't wake him up. Instead I joined him in bed and ended up falling asleep again. After a while I finally woke up when I felt like I was being watched. Indeed I was being watched. Lindani was standing besides the bed with his hands in his pockets. I couldn't explain the look on his face but watching us like that was the most creepiest thing I have ever woke up to.

"That's creepy. How did you even get in." I said getting off the bed and stretching.

"I'm sorry if I scared you. You two looked peaceful and I

was thinking of ways to wake you up without getting my

ass kicked." He joked.

I chuckled. "No one was going to kick your ass."

He shrugged. "Couldn't take that risk I read somewhere

that sleepy girls are grumpy girls and you don't look like a

morning person either with a face like that. When you woke

up you looked like you were going to kill me and the messy

hair and swollen eyes is making you look even more

scary."He chuckled.

I laughed."Get outta here."

"The front door was open.Try being extra careful next

time will you." He was back to his intimidating self within a

second.Did he have a switch where he could just be fun

and carefree in a minute and switch back to being

intimidating and scary.

"Am I crystal clear Majesty?" He asked.

"Yes." I nodded.

"And how is the leg?" He asked.

"Its getting better I will apply the ointment like you said."I

said

"Good."

"Umm let me leave you to it.I will just go and fix my hair

and my swollen eyes." He chuckled when I walked out.

I took a quick shower and wore a simple black sheath

dress then went downstairs. I found the father-son duo

having breakfast. Hey that was for me and Sipho! My inner

voice shouted of course I wasn't going to say that to him.

"Hey Mj.You took too long to come.We couldn't wait."

Sipho smiled at me chewing some bacon.I sat down and

played with his afro.Lindani kept quiet and continued

eating. Ohh God my bacon. I sulked.

"Its ok sweety." I joined and ate what was left.Eggs

only.These Zulu guys ate everything.Mxm.

"Thanks for the breakfast it was amazing." Lindani said

wiping his mouth with a napkin.

I didn't fucking prepare it for you. You douche and you
freaking ate all my meat you greedy Zulu man. I so wanted
to say it to him but I didn't for obvious reasons.

Instead I said. "You're welcome."

"Mj I will see you later dad and I are going to Lake Silver to
have a man to man talk" He was ecstatic.

"Cool good luck then." I directed it Lindani and he nodded
his head.

The following week was just filled with nothing but fun and

happiness. Miss Delia was always indoors well Lisa aka Blackwidow did a number on her yet again so she was really butchered and being yellow didn't do her any favours. Her lips looked like a lip surgery that went wrong. Let's not even talk about her eyes that were nowhere to be seen because of the swellings. Lisy was really a man in a woman's body if you ask me. Lindani and Siphos spent much of their time together so I didn't see much of them for the past following days.

"The house is quiet without Sipho around." Lindy

complained.

"Where is he?" I asked.

"He went on a road trip with his father." Lisa said.

I have been spending much time with them including

Lwandile and Leon. With Leon hitting up on me every

chance he got but obviously despite him being cute and all

I turned him down all the time. Now we having a braai over

to my place.

"MaZulu your phone is ringing." No matter how many times I told him to stop calling me that he was having none of it so I gave up. I took the phone and it was Prince.

"Hey bro." I smiled.

"Hey Maj how are you doing?" He didn't sound ok and that got me worried.

"I'm fine are you ok?" I asked.

"Its Ethan's dad Majesty." He sighed.

"Ohhh my God. What happened?" I asked.

"He is in a critical condition and Ethan is falling apart. I

know you wanted to take a break but we need you here. No

one can handle Ethan better than you do please come

back." He said.

"Ok ok I'm booking a late afternoon flight right away."

"Ok thanks very much." He dropped the call and I sighed.

"Guys I really wanted us to have this braai but I have to fly

back like right now." I said.

"Why? What happened?" Lindy asked.

"My best friend's father is in a very critical condition I really have to go." I ran upstairs and started to pack. Martha and Lindy were helping me out while Lisa went to book the flight for me. I took a quick shower and wore a grey tracksuit and trainers.

"And I can't leave without saying goodbye to Siphos did you talk to Lindani?" I asked Leon.

"Yes I did and he is trying to get back here as fast as he can. Its going to take him two hours to get here."

"My flight is leaving in an hour." I cried out. I didn't have a

choice I had to leave. Lisa, Lindy, Leon and Martha

accompanied me to the airport. Lwandile was left with

Mark. Luckily my flight was delayed and I was grateful for it.

"Mj...Mj. Were you going to leave without saying goodbye

to me." Siphon ran with his father behind him. I met him

halfway and hugged him.

"Ohhh my dear I didn't want to leave without seeing you

but I didn't have a choice hey. I'm glad my flight got

delayed."

"I'm glad too." I stayed with him and the others until it was time for me to leave. For some reason I felt extremely sad about it. Almost depressed.

I hugged Lindy and Lisa. "Don't be strangers guys."

"You too. We are going to call you every day." Martha said.

I hugged Leon. "And you find yourself a girlfriend please. Lay down your player cards."

"I'm going to marry only you MaZulu." He said.

We all laughed then suddenly it was quiet when I looked at Lindani."Umm."He chuckled then bit his lower lip and looked down.

"Just hug each other already." Siphosaid and everyone laughed.He walked closer.We hugged and stayed like that for a while.

"Ok that's enough or you will miss your flight." Lisa said and we laughed it off.

"We will keep in touch." Lisa said and I waved them

goodbye. It was sad Siphos was even crying and I ended up crying too.

"I will visit you." Siphos said and I smiled sadly and walked away.

When I arrived in Hollywood I drove first to Rodeo at home and left my bags. Ignoring the jet lag I went to The City

Hospital then called Prince telling him that I had arrived. He told me the room number and I ran there. I walked inside

the room and gasped looking at the condition Mr Jaji was

in. The number of tubes that were connected to his body were scary. Ethan was sitting besides the bed with his mother on his side and Prince was sitting at the other side. He turned and looked at me. His eyes were bloodshot red.

"Ohhh my God Ethan." He stood up and came to me. We hugged.

"Not too tight I'm still not completely healed yet." He said and smiled sadly.

"I'm so sorry I wasn't there."

"The doctors said he has less than two months left. Its bad
Maj. Its really bad." I went besides his bed. I greeted Mrs Jaji
and she ignored me. I exchanged a brief hug with
Prince. He was still awake. When he saw me he smiled
faintly.

"Can I talk...to..Majesty...a-alone...p-please." He said in a
weak low voice.

Mrs Jaji gave me a death stare and they all walked out. I
sat besides him. He took my hand into his shaking hand.

"P-please...Majesty...p-please...I...I..don't have m-much time left..please..I know..I'm asking for..much but please."He pleaded with me.I knew at this moment I had to make a decision.A difficult one for that matter.I knew the decision I was about to make maybe one day I was going to look up and question it or regret it in the future but it was the right thing to do at that time.Either way I was going to loose something at the end of the day.

He coughed."Please...Majesty.I'm begging you"With

shaking hands he brought them together pleading with me.

I cried because this was very hard for me "You don't have

to beg me. You don't have to." I cried and sniffed again.

"I will marry your son. I will marry Ethan. I will do it but

please stay a little bit longer please just until at least we

get married. Live until then so that you can see your son

walking down the aisle please just try hang in there a little

bit longer."

He smiled weakly. "Thank you Majesty. Thank ... you. I will

...try to ..stay strong... a little bit longer like you said"

"Ok now if you don't mind I need some air." I ran out.Ethan

tried to run after me but I immediately went into my car

and drove off.They say love is an unusual game its either

there are two winners or none at all and at this point there

was no winner.

23

MAJESTY

Matters of the heart.

"Hey give me another shot. Make it a double." I shouted to

the bartender. Just after leaving the hospital I drove

straight to the nearest bar. I haven't touched alcohol in a

long time but at this moment I just needed it to numb the

pain I was feeling inside. I knew it was in my hands to

make the decision. It was up to me but Mr Jaji left me no

choice. How was I going to turn him down when he begged

me like that. How was I going to tell the man who took care of me and my siblings that I did not want to marry his son when it was his only wish? Before I got wasted I called Petty and told him where I was. I knew I would not be able to stand on my own after this. Luckily he didn't take time to arrive he even brought Mary along with him.

"Girl I thought you were supposed to come after two weeks." Mary said giving me a brief hug

"Well surprise surprise." The alcohol was slowly getting

into my head

"And then what are we celebrating?" Petty asked.

"Ohhh we are celebrating that today I agreed to marry my

best friend which then means I'm going to lose the man

that I love. Such is life neh. Cheers to my miserable life." I

grinned with tears coursing down my cheeks.

"You agreed to marry Ethan?!" Petty shook his head.

"Yes Petty I did. Not that I wanted to but because I had

to. Look at me honey, look very closely at me. Do you think I

had a fucking choice?I didn't have a choice.I don't want to marry Ethan because the person that I love is Treet but I'm going to marry him anyway.Despite having it all I'm not happy.Instead I'm just one miserable bitch.I don't know what the man up there is planning for me but all I'm asking is for one little thing from .Happiness.My happiness lies in Treet and we have been making plans you know but like they say,we make plans and God laughs.A year ago if someone was going to tell me I would be in this situation. I

was going to laugh at them and tell them they are crazy

but look at me now. All miserable, sad and shit. "I drank my

shots and gnashed my teeth as I felt the burning sensation.

"Is it really that bad marrying your best friend. I mean you

guys could work things out. You might be surprised when

this whole thing works out in the future." Mary said.

I burped and looked at her. "The point is I'm not in love with

him. I'm in love with someone else. Maybe if this had

happened without Treet in the picture things could have

been easier for me. So it's difficult now because my heart belongs to another."

"Are you really in love with Treet?" Mary asked.

I scrunched my face. "Is that even a question?"

"Yes it is and you answer me."

"Of course I love him." I said. "You know Majesty I think you really don't love Treet. You think you do but you don't. Let me be real with you my friend. Treet came into your life at a point where you needed love. You might not wanna admit it

but you were tired of sleeping around and the pressure of

settling down was starting to hit you left, right and

center. Then Treet came to your life. You hit it off pretty

quick. He is everything a woman could ask. Also the fact

that you shared some history was a cherry on the top so

as a result he was the perfect candidate to get you back in

the dating game. Yes I might sound crazy right now but

soon enough you're going to realize that what I'm saying is

true. You claim that you really love Treet from the bottom

of your heart right. Then if you really do love him like you say you do, you were not going to think twice about who to choose. Yes your companies are important its your hard work, your blood, sweat and tears but with love on the side you were going to sacrifice all that and start your new life with Treet. For heaven's sake you didn't even fight for your love Majesty. With the resources you have you could have taken Mr Jaji to court if need be and try to fight for this case but you didn't. You didn't even try. If you really love

Treet you were not going to hesitate to stand your ground
and choose him instead of Ethan but you didn't because
you are forcing yourself to believe that you're in love with
Treet. When at the end of the day you are just desperate
for love and Treet happens to be there. I will not sugarcoat
the truth and I'm sorry if I came off as if I'm offending you
but you really needed to hear that. If Treet really meant
everything you were going to fight for your love." She said.

"You don't understand Mary. I had a lot of things to

consider Mr Jaji took care of us and.."

"It was his fucking choice to take care of you guys.He

wasn't held at gunpoint and stop using that as an

excuse.You chose your companies.You chose to marry

your best friend because you don't love Treet like you

claim you do.Finish and klaar.You're here drowning

yourself in alcohol because the guilt is starting to eat you

up and you think its a broken heart.I don't know what was

or what is going on between you and Treet but love is not

the word for it."

"You just don't understand what I'm going through

because you're not in my position Mary. I don't need to

prove my love for Treet to you or to anybody else for that

matter because I know that I love him. You can stand there

judge me and say whatever shit you wanna say but you

will never understand because you're not in my shoes. You

don't know how tight and painful they are. My hands are

tied. You expected me to drag Mr Jaji to court the same

person who made me who I am, the same person who fed
me, who gave me shelter. I understand what he is doing is
very wrong. I know that very well but for me to just drag
him to court I would come off as very ungrateful on top of
that he is about to die and you wanted me to pull that
stunt. If he didn't take us in when my own relatives turned
their backs on us I wouldn't have been where I am right
no. Maybe I could have been in the streets right now. Yes
he is very selfish for trying to force me but don't blame me

for not fighting him. You really think that idea didn't cross my mind? It did but I brushed it off because I thought about how it was going to break Ethan and all when he was always there for me. Like I said I don't wanna do this but do I look like I have a choice to you. Well you're not in my shoes so it's very understandable for you to stand there being judgemental, telling me how I didn't fight and shit. You're not in my position so you will never ever understand. So why don't you just stand there with your

judgemental ass while I drown myself in alcohol and deal with my broken heart which according to you is guilty eating me up."

Mary shook her head."You need Jesus Majesty.In fact the holy trinity.The father the son and the holy spirit.That's what you really need."

Petty sighed."Well I hate to say this but Mary said a lot of truths there.This is definitely not your year girl.I really don't

wanna be in your shoes. So what are you going to do with

Treet?" He asked.

I shrugged. "Break his heart and mine too. I will have to tell

him sooner its not like I have a choice. I feel like my own

life doesn't belong to me. I have no right over everything

that I own. Cheers to that cheers." I grinned now. I was really

getting drunk and Mary's words were sinking in. Petty and I

continued taking shots while Mary just kept us company.

Well one of us had to be sober so that they could drive

back home.I might have went on the bottle a little bit too

hard because the last thing I remember was knocking out

in my car as Mary drove us home.How I ended up in bed I

have no idea.The following morning my head was

banging.I had the mother of all hangovers.Yep I went too

hard on the bottle.Petty was sleeping on the carpet.I

yawned and went downstairs to make myself a concoction

luckily I found Mary in the kitchen already making the

concoction.

"Here drink this don't even think about what is inside."She
said giving me a glass with a slimy green liquid.

I drank it in one go and frowned, raw eggs were definitely
in that concoction my gosh.

She laughed." Next time you will not drink like a mad
person."I just nodded and sighed.The yesterday's

outbursts was making things very awkward for the both of
us.

"I'm sorry about yesterday. I know you're in a tight position

I should have at least found a better way to tell you than coming off as judgemental."

"I'm sorry too you're not really judgemental all the time

Mary.Sometimes you speak the truth and you know the

truth is something people don't always want to hear.I'm

sorry."We hugged.

"So tell me how was Paris?I need to hear everything that

happened including that chocolate thingy you were with at

the Paris tower."

I decided to play dumb. "What chocolate thingy?"

She laughed. "Is that a smile you're trying to suppress

there. He was really good neh. He knew his D-game right."

I scrunched my face. "Hell no we didn't.. Ohh my God. We

didn't have sex Mary."

She arched her eyebrow and scoffed. "Excuse me

what!! You Majesty Brown, you didn't have sex with that guy

pshhh bitch please."

I sighed. "I'm telling you the truth. I didn't sleep with him let

alone kiss him. Nothing happened between us. The close
we got to each other was when we hugged."

She clapped. "Wow that's something new to me. You didn't
even make a move to get him to bed. So that episode at
the Paris tower?"

"It was just a moment. Like I said I'm afraid of heights so
he was trying to reassure me that I will be fine. He cupped
my face. He has some scars on his face so I just found
myself touching those that's when the kid took the

picture."

"That's something from a romantic movie that I'm listening to right now." Mary shook her head. "So how did you meet him?"

"He saved me from some goons the first day I arrived. I had gone for a walk. I was almost raped but he became my knight. Coincidentally he lived next to the house I was staying in. His family is amazing. They are amazing people and I couldn't get enough of his son. I will show you some

pictures I have in my phone. For now let me go and take a

shower. Lindani once said I look scary when I wake up. Do I

look that ugly when I wake up." I smiled.

"Hmmm look at who is smiling."

"Leave me alone. We are probably never going to meet

again. His sisters promised to keep in touch but I know it

was just them talking to pass time."

"And it makes you sad because you wanna see him again."

Mary wiggled her eyebrows.

I threw a cushion at her."Come on.No its not like that.I'm
sad because I may never have a chance to meet his son
again.He is a lovely boy you know and we clicked with that
boy.There was this unexplainable connection between us."

"Don't worry if its fated you will meet the son again...and
the father too."She wiggled her eyebrows again in a
mischievous manner

"Stop being crazy.Anyway let me go and take a shower. I
will have to meet Treet today and sort this mess out."

She sighed."Good luck with that."

"I definitely need it." I went upstairs and woke Petty

up.After taking a shower they left.I took a shower too and

wore a red babydoll dress.I didn't have the energy to make

breakfast or even eat it.I just drove straight to Treet's

house.The security didn't give me a hard time in fact he

didn't even ask me any questions.I rang the bell and

started playing with my fingers.I had prepared a speech in

my head but I knew it was going to go south once I'm

facing Treet. A woman in a nurse's uniform opened the door. I raised my eyebrow.

"Ohh hello ma'am I'm Zoë Weaver Mr Jackson's nurse please come in." She smiled.

"Hi I'm Majesty." I walked in.

"I heard a lot about you not a day passes without Mr Jackson mentioning your name."

Now I was hella nervous. "Where is he?"

"He is in the main bedroom downstairs. I was actually

leaving so you can go ahead and see him.Thank God I

didn't sedate him." She said.I nodded and walked to the

bedroom.

"Treet."

"Jesty you're back."

"Ohh don't get off the bed you will hurt yourself." I removed

my shoes and went on the bed then hugged him.

"I missed you my love.I'm sorry for acting the way I did

before you left.I'm sorry my love but now I'm glad you're

back so we can talk." He said brushing my back with the hand which didn't have a plaster on.

"I love you." I said plastering my lips on him. He deepened the kiss and I felt the length of his arousal pressing on my thighs. "Oh Treet."

"I missed you." His lips curved into a smile before drifting to my neck. I moved over him careful not to hurt him. My fingers entwined in the spill of his hair as we continued to devour each other's mouths. I cried out a strange sound as

I grinded on his arousal.I wanted him so bad.I was ready to
feel the muscle beneath the sweatpants he was wearing.I
moved them down exposing his erect veined thick cock.He
pushed my thong to the side.I cried out at the glorious
intimacy of his cock fitting perfectly into my pussy.His
"good" hand guided my movements as I thrust in and out
of him.His tongue dipped into my mouth,teasing me.I
revelled into the changing rhythm,moaning and feeling the
fireworks. His hand clamped around my waist,drawing me

even closer. I felt so full of him that the only way to release myself from the exquisite tension was to let go. I cried out calling his name.

"Fuck! I love you." He said with a lazy smile as I wiped us.

If only he knew I was about to break his heart. Afterwards I

lay my head on his chest as I listened to the thundering of

his heart. That was possibly the last time I would listen to

that beautiful piece of music and that was possibly the

last time I would be wrapped in his arms.

"What's wrong Majesty?" He asked and I ended up wailing.

"Babe what's wrong?Talk to me."

"I'm sorry Treet.I'm so sorry.I never wanted any of this I swear to God." I cried.

"You're marrying him ain't you?" He said and I kept quiet.

"Look at me Majesty.Look at me and tell me that I'm dreaming and this is a fucking nightmare that I'm going to wake up from.Tell me that the beautiful moment we just had here is not a fucking goodbye.."I kept quiet and kept

on crying.

"I didn't have a choice. I know I sound somehow but I love you Treet. You should always know that I do love you very much but I cannot be with you. I just have to marry Ethan in as much as I don't want to but I just have to do it. I'm so sorry if I didn't fight for us like how I was supposed to but my hands are tied."

"What are you going to lose if you choose me huh? What do they have on you? Look at me and answer me. What are

you trading my love with?"

"I will lose my company."

He chuckled bitterly."Wow Majesty wow.Fine you go ahead

and marry your friend.Leave."

"Treet listen I..."

"Please leave Majesty.This is too much for me ok.It hurts

listening to the woman that I love with all my heart telling

me that she chooses her companies over me.It hurts to

know that I come last on your priority list.My love never

mattered to you Majesty it never did and now I know

where I stand in your life.I don't deserve to be hurt like this

Majesty and you're the last person I thought you would do

this to me.You were my happy place woman and with you I

thought I had finally found what I have been searching for

all this while.With you I thought I could finally build a future,

build a family and grow old with you but I guess when I

was making plans God was laughing.I don't deserve this

Majesty so please just go before I say anything else that I

will regret. I need to digest this so please leave." He roughly wiped off his tears and softly pushed me off his chest. He was broken and I was responsible for that. How could I say I love him and still be the same person who hurt him the most. Like he said he didn't deserve this especially from me but what could I do. I decided to just leave without saying anything else. The bomb I dropped on him was enough to last him a lifetime. I didn't want to add on his pain and what else could I say after this anyway. I looked at

the man that I loved with all my heart one more

time.Maybe this was going to be the last time I see him as

my lover and this last image of him crying was something

that was going to be stuck in my memory forever. I slowly

walked to the door and turned the doorknob.

"Majesty I love you.I love you so much please don't do this

to us.Please don't end our love story like this before it even

started." His voice was breaking.I cried and leaned on the

door with my forehead.

"I love you tooTreet."I looked at him one more time and
walked out leaving my heart with him.

When I was in the lounge the door opened his mother and
Tyrone walked in.

"Hey Maj I didn't know you came back." Tyrone asked with
a smile on his face but when he looked at me his smile
turned to a frown.

I was about to reply when his mother beat me to it.

"What are you doing in my son's house you whore".She

dragged me by my hair when I least expected it, pushed me to the yard outside and slammed the door. I stood up, dusted myself and limped my way to the car then drove off. Maybe I deserved it especially after breaking her son's heart. I wanted to drive to the nearest bar and drink my worries away but I then remembered that alcohol was never going to be the solution to my problems. Instead I drove to the nearest pharmacy and bought some after pills and drove straight home afterwards. I was going to deal

with whatever that was coming my way head on. When I arrived I saw a car parked in the yard. I already knew who it was. When I walked in she ran to me with her arms wide open.

"Mommy, mommy, you're back mommy you're back." Girly shouted with a big grin on her face. She was always that light I needed in my dark life.

"Hey baby." I lifted her up and swung her around while she giggled non stop.

"You missed me." She nodded her head vigorously.

"And I missed you too my baby." I kissed her all over her face.

"Hey." Ethan came out from the kitchen with a sandwich.

I sighed."Hey."

"Girly here is your sandwich now go and play with aunt

Maka over there ok.Don't run or else you will fall."He gave

her the sandwich and instead of walking she ran over to

Maka who had just waved her hand at me.

"She never listens." I shook my head.

"Are you ok. Your face is swollen?" We sat down at the

kitchen chairs

"I'm fine Ethan you don't have to worry about my swollen

face." He nodded and we kept quiet for a while

"I did not know about it Majesty."

I looked at him. "About what?"

"About the arrangement. The marriage. Yes I love you very

much but I never talked dad into planning a marriage

between the two of us. It came off as a surprise to me as much as it was to you. He said it was always what he wanted and given that I had someone else I was in a relationship with I was still going to have to marry you. I know it's not fair especially for you. You have always looked at me as your best friend and never wanted anything more from me. While me on the other hand I was always in love with you and I still am. So only this once am I allowed to be selfish Majesty? I really want us to try at

least being lovers then we can get married.Can I be selfish

only this once Majesty and ask you to at least try things

out with me and see what I can offer.I know there is

someone else in your heart right now. I'm very much aware

of that but I can give you time Majesty.Maybe at the end of

the day we were fated to be with each other but we will

never know unless we try.I know I'm asking for a lot but

please let's just try it out."

"Even if we try and it doesn't change the way I feel about

you I will still have to marry you anyway." He kept quiet and looked down.

"How is your father?" I changed the topic because this was draining me honestly.

"He is better today. He promised to pull till he sees me on the altar."

I just nodded my head. "So how is your mother taking this whole thing about us getting married?"

He cleared his throat. "Ahem..."

"You don't have to lie to me. I know she hates me and the way I used to be. I don't blame her. No mother could take a chill pill knowing that her son is getting married to a bitch. Well even though I'm no longer one and I'm trying to mend my ways in her eyes I'm still a bitch."

He sighed and held my hands. "It doesn't matter what she thinks. What matters is I know who you are Majesty. Yes you dealt with your pain in a very bad way but you're a good person. You're a good woman. You're everything I

could ever ask for."

I sighed."Sometimes I wish I had made better decisions in

the past and dealt with my pain in the right way.Maybe

none of this could have been happening. I definitely cannot

change my past Eth.I can only look back and regret but I'm

trying to change my future here and I just hope one day

she will stop judging me so harshly."

"I will try to talk to her.Anyway I need to go and be with

dad.Do you want Girly to sleep over here.Are you going to

work tomorrow?"

"Yes I'm going to work but its ok I will call Bianca and tell

her to sleep over here today." I said.

"Okay then let me bounce its almost close to the visiting

hours." He stood up and I walked him to the door.

"Don't strain yourself too much you're not yet fully healed

remember and please don't drive."

He smiled."I called an uber don't worry and I'm leaving my

car.You ask Maka where she put my car keys she was the

one driving."

"Ohhh okay bye then.Say hi to dad."

He smiled and kissed my forehead then walked out.

I went back inside and found Maka and Girly in the kitchen.

"He sure worships the ground you walk on.Even after

seeing the Eiffel tower post he still ain't fazed.I guess

congratulations are in order." Maka said with a lot of

attitude and I didn't have the energy to deal with her

nonsense.

"Well hello to you too Makaanaka." I rolled my eyes and took Girly then went to the lounge. She followed and threw herself on the couch.

"So who was that guy at the Eiffel tower. Was he the reason why you went there? Or you met him there and slept with him the same day. I mean that's your style right. I'm sure a blowjob is more like a friendly handshake to you. And after sleeping with him you came back here and start the wedding plans with Ethan. Your bread is always

battered on both sides."Ok I didn't get where her bitterness was coming from but she was having some issues this one.

"How about you just shut the fuck up before I make you.I'm already dealing with too much right now I don't need your nonsense and bitchiness to add to it.I will fuck you up Maka don't push me.Now get your ass out of my sight you're making me nauseous."

She sucked her teeth and walked out.If I had the energy I

could have whipped her rude ass. I was left with Girly and she had the energy for days so after running around with her we both finally passed out on the couch. When Bianca arrived she took her upstairs and I went to my room and slept. I woke up and showered. Dinner was ready. I hadn't ate anything the whole day so my stomach was growling.

As hungry as I was I only managed to stomach three spoons of what Bianca had prepared. I went back upstairs to my room with Girly in my arms. Bianca made a mistake

of giving her some chocolate so she was so energetic and putting her to sleep was going to be a struggle. I went into my room and placed her down. She started playing with her doll house while I started unpacking my suitcases. While I was at it I stumbled upon Lindani's black hoodie. No wonder most of my clothes smelled like a Versace cologne. Ohhh I forgot to return it to him. I inhaled it and his scent was still hung up on it. That scary and intimidating man. Well maybe our paths were never going to cross

again anyway so it was my keepsake. I removed my

clothes and was left in my undies. I wore the hood. It

looked like a dress. I continued unpacking and then my

phone rang I didn't recognize the number. I hesitated to

answer so I ignored it. It rang again and then a text came in.

"Will you just pick up the phone woman Siphos wants to

talk to you."

"Ohhh my God!!" I screamed in happiness and ended up

calling back. He didn't answer. I called again and he did the

same. I knew he was doing it to get back at me.

"Lindani Zulu will you just answer the...."

"Hello." His deep voice echoed from the other side.

"Can I talk to Sipho." I said.

"Hello Lindani how are you doing? That's how it's done. You

were even ignoring the call. If I didn't tell you about Sipho

were you not going to answer?"

"I was taking a shower Lindani. I wasn't ignoring your calls I

promise you. I just saw the missed calls right now when I

came back from the shower."

He chuckled"Stop lying.Anyway here talk to Siphо."

"Hey hey Mj." He shouted excitedly."

"Hey Siphо."

"Wait let me switch to video call I want to see your face."

24

MAJESTY

Here comes the bride.

"I have missed you so much. We tried calling you yesterday

but your phone was on voicemail. You got me so worried.

And why is your face so swollen?" We had switched to a

video call and Sipho looked really worried when he saw

how swollen my face was from all the crying.

"I'm sorry for getting you worried. There was a lot

happening dear so I forgot to switch on my phone. As for

my swollen face well I ate something I'm allergic to but it will go down. I took some medication. When are you leaving for SA?" I asked

"We are leaving tomorrow. Dad said he has some matters to sort out so I have to live with grandma for a while. Its great because Mark will also be living there so I have someone to play with. On top of that granny makes amazing cookies. You should taste them one day." I was glad that at least he was going to stay away from

Delia. Surely Lindani had to sort things out with Siphos
absent because it would affect him more seeing him fight
with Delia about the abuse. It wasn't going to do Siphos
good if Lindani had taken him back to the house he was
abused in. He needed time away. He needed a breather.

"Uuh good for you dude and I will surely taste those
cookies one day." I smiled back at him and we started
chatting. With Siphos cracking up his silly jokes. I even
forgot about all of my problems.

"Can I have my phone back please I want to use it." I heard

Lindani saying.

Sipho sulked but Lindani was having none of it he ended

up taking the phone. I rolled my eyes.

"You're such a kill joy. Sipho and I were having a great

conversation here."

Before he replied Girly started crying because she broke

one of her Barbie dolls neck

"Mommy Barbie died."

"Give me a moment." I placed the phone on the stand and went to attend Girly. I fixed the doll and she started smiling again.

"Barbie was sick now she is ok."

She yawned. "I will play with Barbie tomorrow." She opened her arms for me and I took her. I went back to the call. Lindani looked zoned out while watching us on the call.

"Can you put Sipho back on the call just for a minute I want him to meet this little angel here." I said and he just

nodded.

Sipho's face filled my whole screen within a minute."Who

is that cutie little thing there.Is she your daughter?"

"This is Girly she is my best friend's daughter but she calls

me mom.Girly say hi to Sipho"

"Hi." She yawned again.She was really sleepy.I placed the

phone back on the stand again and started rocking her.

"Ohhh my she is very cute.When I come there I really

wanna play with those cheeks.Is she Chinese?" He asked

I nodded."Yea half Chinese and half black."

Lindani took the phone again.

"You have issues really." I shook my head while rocking

Girly back and forth.

"If he wants to talk to you he should use his phone.This is

my phone. Is that your daughter?" He asked.

I shook my head."No.. Yes ..I mean she is my best friend's

child but according to her I'm her mother.Give me a minute

let me put her to bed."I carefully tucked Girly under the

covers and went back on the call.

"You really make a good mother." He said.

I sighed."Thank you."

"So why were you crying?Your face is swollen.What's going on?" He asked pulling his serious face again.

"No I wasn't crying its just some allergy." I lied.

He raised his eyebrow."Your face looked like that when you cried the other day."

I sighed."You have to believe me really its just an allergy."

"Ohh really so did you take medication for it?" He asked.

I scratched my forehead. "Yes I did."

"Hmm ok do you mind showing me the medicine please."

"Lindani I'm telling the truth. I took the medication at a

friend's house so I don't have it here with me."

"I just hope you sort whatever that is happening to you. And

Maj you're a bad liar. I know you just lied to me because if

you're really allergic to something your medicine will not

be hard to find that's why I insisted that you show me and

you made up a silly excuse."

I bit my lower lip thinking of what to say because with

Lindani you have to think twice before saying anything. Its

also unbelievable how he could send his intimidation vibes

even over the phone. When I looked back at him he had a

silly grin on his face.

I arched my eyebrow. "What is it?"

He chuckled and shook his head. "One day I'm coming

there to take back what's mine."

I gave him a confused look."I have nothing that belongs to you."

He furrowed his forehead."Are you sure."

I shrugged."Yes I don't have anything that belongs to you."

He laughed for a little bit nodding his head."Ohh really

ok.By the way that hoodie looks so good on you."

That's when it hit me I was wearing his jacket.Oohh damn

me!

I closed my eyes and laughed."Ohhh gosh you mean the

jacket."

He chuckled."What else do you think I was talking about."

I laughed."Ohhh I was actually confused as to what you were talking about.Look I forgot to give it back to you and I just packed it with my clothes in a hurry."

"Hmm. I'm coming there one day and take it back myself."

"Are you saying you're going to fly from South Africa to America just to take back a hoodie."

He nodded his head."Of course its mine and its one of my

favourites so you better take care of it because I'm coming for it."

I chuckled. "You're unbelievable. So I'm not supposed to wear it now?"

"I didn't say that but wear it with something inside. That thing is too short." He said.

"Excuse me were you checking me out Mr Zulu?"

He bit his lower lip and chuckled. "Was I? Of course no I

wasn't." I raised my eyebrow. "I wasn't really checking you

out.You put your phone on the stand and you were walking around was I supposed to close my eyes."

"Ohhh okay."

He pulled a serious face again.Can somebody tell me how he did that.How did he switch quickly like that?

"On a serious note though don't wear that around with nothing inside its too short.I mean there are perverts around and I'm sure you know that very well."

"Lindani I hear you."

"Cool then I gotta go. Be extra careful and don't forget to lock your doors."

"Ok goodnight dad." I said.

He chuckled. "Sleep well Majesty." He smiled and dropped the call.

I threw myself on the bed and sighed. After staring on the ceiling for a while with nothing on my mind but a silly grin on my face, I resumed unpacking my clothes. After I was done I didn't have the energy to take a shower again so I

just threw myself on the bed and fell asleep. The following morning I woke up from my beauty slumber thanks to my irritating ringing tone. I answered without checking the caller ID.

"How could you do that to my brother?! All he ever did was to love you Majesty was that his crime. Please don't punish my brother like this I'm begging you Majesty. He won't survive it this time. Don't do him like this I'm begging you. He has been through a lot please. Don't do this to

him."Well that was Tyrone obviously. Him calling me like that only made me to relieve my pain and sorrows again.

I got off the bed and rubbed my face as I felt tears

threatening to come out."You think that was an easy

decision for me to make?God Tyrone it wasn't and I'm

hurting too but my hands are tied.I didn't have much of a

choice."

"You had a choice Majesty.If you love someone truly you

will do whatever it takes to be with them.If my brother was

in your place he could have moved mountains if need be.I

can't believe you of all the people you hurt him like that

when you know very well what he has been through." With

that said he dropped the call.

I wiped off my tears that were now streaming down my

cheeks.I don't get why no one was taking my side on this

one.According to everyone I didn't fight harder and to them

it appeared as if I was completely ok after the "breakup"

with Treet.Girly was still asleep so I carefully covered her

and went to take a shower. I wore a white knit long sleeved top, laddered color block skirt, a rita corset belt and black ankle boots.

"Morning Bianca. Go check on Girly I left her on the bed she might fall."

"Ok I'm on it ma'am." She went upstairs.

I just grabbed a apple for breakfast and drove off to work. I

made a good decision by leaving Mary in charge while I

was away. She really did a good job so there was nothing

exhausting to work on apart from two meetings that I had to attend. One with the clients and the other one with my tech team. Everything was sorted out and so things were flowing very smoothly but I just had to be there since I had been absent for a few days. I was sitting in my office feeling bored then I decided to call Sipho. Crap I forgot to ask his number from Lindani so that meant I had to call Lindani. Then I remembered they were probably on their way back to SA. I spent the rest of the day bored out of my

mind. The following day everything was just boring. I sent

Lindani a text. They had probably arrived.

Good morning Mr Zulu. Can I please have Siphos number. I

texted and waited for his reply.

Good morning to you too Ms Brown. I hate texting you

could have just called you know. He replied.

I thought you were still asleep or resting because of the

jetlag so I didn't wanna disturb.

Fair enough. I'm pretty exhausted. I'm sending his number

now.

He replied and sent Sipho's number.

Thank you Mr Zulu. Have a good day.

You too Ms Browns next time you want to ask for

something just call.

I will keep that in mind.

I saved Sipho's number and video called him immediately.

I just wanted to hear his silly jokes to start my day.He took

too long to answer but when he did and it wasn't actually

him on the screen but an elderly lady who looked like Lisa
and Lindy.

"Ohh greetings aunt." I said nervously.

She smiled. More like laughed. "I always tell my children
that I'm still young and beautiful but they laugh at
me. You're calling me aunt which means I'm beautiful and
young right. Anyway how are you my dear. I'm Sipho's
grandmother."

I laughed shyly. "Ohh I'm so sorry granny. I actually thought

you're the aunt."

She smiled."No you can call me aunt dear I'm fine with it

and you must be the famous Majesty that everyone is

talking about here.A lot has been said about you."

"Yes I'm Majesty and I hope you heard good things about

me."

She smiled showing her white teeth."Of course dear but

there is one thing that they didn't say right."

"And that could be?"

"Your beauty dear.They said you're pretty but they didn't
tell me you're this beautiful.You're very beautiful I must
say."

I smiled."Thank you very much."

"You're welcome my dear.Let me call Siphoh he is outside. I
saw how happy he was yesterday to get a call from you.I'm
sure he is going to be very ecstatic." She started calling
Siphoh.

"Siphoh!!!.....Majesty is on the phone."

She looked back at me. "You should see the smile on his face right now. You make him very happy."

I smiled. "He makes me very happy too." She smiled and gave Siphon the phone.

"Good morning MJ." He said excitedly

"Good morning Siphon. How was your night?" I asked.

"It was amazing I slept like a baby. I had a jetlag but I'm good now."

We started chatting again and I was enjoying the

conversation until I had to drop the call since Ethan had
came to my office. Seeing him just reminded me of Treet
and how I had to break things off with the man that I love
so that I will be with him. I just hoped that I would not
resent him for that because even though Ethan loved me
this idea of marriage was not his plan but his father's.

"I saw these flowers on the way and thought of you. I also
hope that you will like the chocolates." He placed the white
roses in the flower vase. Well he knew I hated red roses. He

gave me the chocolates and I smiled looking at them.

Chocolate thingy!

"You like it" He smiled.

I smiled back."Yes I do.Let me just eat it right away."

Ethan kept me company for the rest of the day.Since he

was not completely healed yet he was not going to work

hence he didn't have anything to do.When the working

hours were over I drove the both of us to my house.Upon

arrival I saw Mrs Jaji's car and I knew she had come to bite

my head off for agreeing to marry his son. Ethan and I

walked inside the house and we found her with Maka

chatting and laughing like they were old friends but when

she saw me her mood changed.

She stood up and held her waist. "Finally you came

because I was actually waiting for you."

"Hello Mrs Jaji how are you doing?" I sat down and Ethan

sat besides me. I waited for her to start shouting which she

eventually did.

"Majesty how dare you agree to marry my son.I

understand my husband asked for your hand but you

should know when people are on the verge of dying they

say a lot of things that they don't even mean.How could

you agree to marry my son with everything we know about

you?You slept around right in front of us and you expect

me to accept you as my daughter in law?I'm about to

loose my husband I can't afford to loose my son too.What

exactly do you want from us Majesty?We took care of

you. We made you who you're and you have everything now. What else do you want? What's in it for you in this marriage."

Ethan sighed. "Mom..mom!!! please just stop please. This ain't Majesty's fault. She didn't do anything ..she--"

She raised her hand. "She shouldn't have agreed period. And don't even try to stop me to call a spade a spade. Why are you so obsessed with her? She sleeps around and God knows she might not stop even after

getting married to you. For heaven's sake she is barren

what are you going to benefit from getting married to a

useless woman. She--"

"Mom enough!! That is enough. Stop please!! What is wrong

with you mom? I understand Majesty did a lot of bad things

in her past but I'm not a saint either. Why is it very easy for

you to judge her for her mistakes but difficult for you to be

fair to her. I honestly don't know who you are anymore

mother. I can't say you're the woman that I admire the

woman that I respect. I can't say it anymore because I don't know who this woman is. This mean and bitter woman that you're right now is not the woman that raised me. I don't know who you're anymore mom and I'm very disappointed.

But let me tell you this. No matter what you think about Majesty, no matter how much you hate her I'm still going to marry her because I love her with all my heart and we are going to be happy together much to your dismay mother."

I appreciated Ethan standing up for me like that but how

was I going to enjoy the marriage when she loathed me that much. Also for how long was Ethan going to stand up for me like that? The truth is she was his mother and in as much as he hated what she said at the moment at one point her words were going to sink in. My fear was maybe one day he was also going to use my past against me.

"She is not good enough for you Ethan.." She shouted.

"And I'm not good enough for her either but what matters is that we will complete each other mom. You better start

learning to accept her and love her as the woman that I

love because I promise you she is in my life to stay. So it's

either you continue being bitter or you start

adjusting. Majesty let's go." He held my hand and we

walked out.

"Thank you Ethan for standing up for me but..."

"I know what you're about to say Majesty, that she is my

mother and I'm supposed to respect her. That had to be

said she has to stop being so unfair to you."

I sighed."She is not being unfair Ethan but no mother would want their son to.."

He shut me up with a kiss.This was our first time kissing like that and I honestly didn't know how to react because he caught me off guard.However he was going to be my husband anyway so I responded.

"I'm sorry I just didn't know how else to shut you up."

I sighed."Its ok."

Three weeks later.

Ethan and I were trying to be a couple and I would be lying if I say it was working for me. I constantly thought about Treet all the time and it wasn't easy but he was patient with me. He promised to be still patient even when we are married because he knew it wasn't easy for me. His father was out of the hospital but he was now using a wheelchair because he was losing his strength. There was no life left in him it was so clear. The only thing that kept him alive was the wedding that was to happen in a week's time. The

wedding preparations were underway. Petty was taking care of my gown, Ethan's suit and the bride team's outfits. We decided to make the wedding just a small and intimate celebration. That pleased Mrs Jaji because she didn't want the whole world to know that her son was marrying a whore. Her words not mine. She even went as far as standing her ground and refused to allow Ethan to pay lobola for me. "She is not even bringing anything to the table apart from her useless womb." She said when Ethan

had suggested that we fly back to Zim and pay lobola for me. It became a heated argument between her and Ethan. I ended up convincing Ethan to just agree with her because arguing with her was just straining everyone. So Ethan didn't pay lobola for me instead we were just going to sign the marriage certificate that's it. The wedding was going to be held at Ethan's house at his backyard garden. It was big enough to accommodate forty people. That was the maximum number of the guest we had invited with more

of them being Ethan's relatives. I had also invited the

Zulu's. Three days before the wedding

Lindy, Lisa, Martha, Leon and Sipho boarded a flight and I

was eagerly waiting for their arrival. Lindy and Lisa were

part of the bridesmaids. So it was Mary, Maka

Lindy and

Lisa for the bridesmaids while it was Petty, Leon and other

two of Ethan's friends that I didn't know. Mary was my

maid of honour since Maka refused to be one and Girly

was going to be the flower girl.

"I don't think you should marry him.Its clear you don't want

this Maj,just don't do this,don't force yourself to do this.I

understand you guys are best friends but I don't think you

love him to be your husband.Stop all this before its too

late.Also I will not be able to forgive myself knowing that

I'm the one who walked you down the aisle to marry

someone you do not love." Prince said.

"Its ok Prince you don't have to worry.I will learn to love

him. I will do this. Now can you please accompany me to

the airport I need to pick up some of my guest from SA" I

wiped off my tears.

He just shook his head and drove me to the airport. He has

been trying to talk me out of marrying Ethan but I couldn't

just pull out. It was a done deal. I was paying for everything

that Mr Jaji did for us.

"Hey Mjaaaaay!!!!" Siphon ran to me when they arrived. He

was so ecstatic and I was equally happy seeing him

again.I hugged him and he literally squeezed the life out of me.I also exchanged hugs with Martha,Leon,Lisa and Lindy who were very happy to see me again.For some reason I was disappointed that Lindani didn't come but I guess he had a very good reason not to.They had informed me that he wasn't going to come but I had hopes that he would change his mind.

"Ohhh I see you were expecting Scar too.Well I'm sorry he is busy with work and he said he will call you and

apologize. He also sent a wedding gift." Lindy said

brushing my back.

I sulked. "Ohhh its okay then."

"We also have another wedding gift for you from granny."

Well for the past days whenever I used to call Siphon I

would talk to his grandmother first. I must say she was an

amazing woman.

"You promised to marry only me MaZulu what's this now."

Leon pouted.

"I'm sorry Leon you were a little bit late but how about I make you my side nigger." Everyone laughed.

"Ohhh guys where are my manners this is my brother Prince. Prince these are my friends Lindiwe, Lisa, Martha, Siphon and Leon."

They exchanged greetings and I saw my brother checking Lisa out. Well I pretended like I didn't see anything but for sure I was going to warn him not to mess with Blackwidow I did not want to lose him at such a young age. He drove

us back home but we had to hire a taxi for their luggage. When we arrived Ethan's mom was in the building and she didn't look pleased with my guests. She couldn't even pretend when I introduced them to her she just nodded her head and left.

"She is just stressed about the wedding preparations and all." It was even clear that I was lying but hey what else could I say to ease the awkwardness. Prince and Leon clicked pretty well they even left immediately and decided

to paint the city red. Leon was going to stay with Prince. My

place was big enough to accommodate the rest.

"Your place is really nice and cosy." Lindy commented and

I gave them a tour and they were impressed. We went back

downstairs where I started dishing out dinner for

them. While I was at it Ethan arrived with Girly.

"Ohh guys this is Ethan my future husband. Eth these are

my friends Lindy, Lisa, Martha and Siphon. Leon left with

Prince."

He smiled."Ohhh nice to meet you guys.So I will not gatecrash your dinner.I will call Prince and join the guys."

"Okay cool." He kissed my lips and said his goodbyes.Sipho was already playing with Girly.He couldn't get enough of her cuteness.

"So he is the future husband." Lindy raised her eyebrow.I nodded my head trying to fight back my tears.

"Are you ok Mj?" Martha asked.

I couldn't stop the tears.I ended up crying.Martha hugged

me."Its going to be ok."

"Mj dad wants to speak to you." Sipho said giving me my phone.I have no idea when he even took it and video called Lindani.

I wiped my face and took the phone."Hey Zulu."I said forcing a smile.

"Sipho just called saying you're breaking down.Everything ok?What's wrong?" He asked looking all worried.I walked out of the kitchen and left the girls dishing out for

themselves.

"Ohh he is just a kid he doesn't understand stuff.I was just having cold feet you know so I ended up crying."

"Hmm ok congratulations on the wedding and I'm sorry I couldn't attend." He said.

"Thank you even though I'm kind of not happy that you didn't come but I was told you sent a wedding gift to make up for it."

He nodded."Yea I did.I'm sorry once again but I hope you

will like the gift."We kept quiet for a while just sharing an eye contact through that video call.

"Does he makes you happy Majesty?" He asked.

I nodded.

"I want to hear you say it.Does he make you happy?"

"Y-yes he does."

"That's what all that matters ok.You don't have to think

twice about the man who makes you happy.You don't have

to think twice while walking down the aisle right.So no

cold feet Ms Browns."

I smiled."Thank you Mr Zulu."

I hung up and went to join the others in the dining. I felt

much better.Maka came in and God knows where she was

coming from.She didn't even greet anyone she just went

straight to the fridge and took some ice cream.

"Where were you Maka?" I asked.

"I'm not a child I don't have to report to you 24/7" She said

with no care in the world.

Lisa stood up and went in front of her."Hey wena sisi that is not how you speak to your sister do you hear me and that is not definitely how you behave when there are guests in the house.Where I come from I have the right to discipline and I can discipline you too.Trust me girly I'm really good at it.Now you behave like a good little girl that you're and start by apologizing to your sister and then greet all of us here.Nice to meet you too and I'm Lisa Zulu."She was really intimidated by Lisa and with a tail

between her legs she apologized to everyone and greeted them then disappeared upstairs.

"I'm sorry Mj but it had to be done. How dare she speaks to you like that?" Lisa said sitting down.

"Thank you Lisa."

That night we didn't sleep we were chatting while Sipho and Girly were playing in Girly's room. They ended up falling asleep and I tucked them both in bed. The girls and I continued with our talk with Martha giving some marriage

advice's and some bedroom tips.If only she knew.The following day they wanted to go see Majesty Innovations and I took them there Sipho was ecstatic while the girls admired my hardwork.After that we went to try our outfits my gown fitted perfectly.It wasn't anything extravagant but just a simple mermaid tail wedding gown.I just wanted it simple. The next day we went to Ethan's house for the rehearsals. They went quiet well but the whole episode was getting me emotional and Mrs Jaji's nasty remarks

were not making things easier for me.

"I gotta be honest with you girl I don't like your mother in

law and if it was up to me that bitch was going to be six

feet under within a blink." Lisa said and I just laughed it off

after making a silly excuse about her behavior. Mary gaspe

looking at Lisa. She joined us and insisted to sleep at my

house. Well the more the merrier and the fact that she

quickly got along very well with the rest of the girls was a

cherry on the top. Petty was with the guys. He had to lay

down his gay cards for a while.They tried to convince me to hit the club for my bachelorette's party but I refused so we just decided to chill and drink at home.Lisa,Mary and Lindy were drinking while Martha and I drank our juice.

"Jesty." I choked on my juice when his voice echoed in the room.Everyone stopped what they were doing and looked at him.

"The door was open so I just invited myself in." Treet said while balancing on the crutches.The plaster on his hand

was removed but he still had one on his leg.

"Treet what are you doing here?" I stood up and went over to him.

"Can we talk outside please." He said and I walked with him outside to his car. We went inside and he made me sit on his laps even though I was worried about his leg. I spotted Tyrone standing a little bit faraway on the driveway.

"Please don't marry him Majesty. I'm begging you please."

He said cupping my face. Before I replied he kissed me and

I kissed him back. I moaned in his mouth as his fingers

found their way to my "girl". He flicked my folds and

started thrusting deeper and faster. I snaked my hands

around his waist as he increased the pace. My body tensed

and vibrated as I reached my climax. I felt his bulge as he

slowly rubbed it on me.

"Just one last time." He whispered sending shivers all over

my body.

"Uh uh uh Treet we can't do this. We can't. Yes this is probably the last time we will ever get the chance to but no. I love you so much but I respect Ethan too. I'm marrying him tomorrow and while walking down that aisle I want nothing on my conscience. And this will only hurt us both even more. I love you Treet you should always know that."

"He can't have you. He can't have what's mine." He took out his length and slowly slid in. I bit my lower lip as he moved in and out of me. Tears clouded my vision. This was going

to be the last time with the man that I love. It was

bittersweet. We both groaned as we reached our peak.

"I have to go." I said trying to wipe this cum which sliding
down my legs.

"Please don't marry him." He pleaded.

"I love you Treet." I kissed him one last time and walked
away. Before going back inside I fixed my dress and my
hair then walked in.

"I hope you didn't do anything stupid with Treet." Mary

was already on my neck.

"No I didn't." I shook my head and ran off to my room to

take a shower.

"Wakey wakey we have a wedding to attend to." Lisa

walked in hitting the pan with a metal spoon making a lot

of noise. I honestly don't know where she got the energy

she had from. Wasn't she supposed to be like suffering

from a hangover? Everyone woke up and were busy

running around preparing for the day. Martha was dressing

the kids. Petty had arrived and was helping me with
gown. The makeup artist came but ended up being paid for
nothing when Lisa and Lindy took it upon themselves to
do the makeup for me.

"Hey drink this." Mary gave me the morning after pill. I

looked down shamefully. "I'm not gonna judge you. I know

you were never going to be able to resist him. But the last

thing you need is to invite trouble for yourself by falling

pregnant with Treet's child. Have this." I drank the pill

quietly. I didn't bother telling her that I couldn't conceive.

"You're beautiful." Lindy took a picture after I was fully

dressed. My bride maids were wearing their navy blue

dresses since the theme was navy blue and gold. Our

limousine came and we were chauffeured to Ethan's

house.

"It's about time." Prince said giving me his elbow. I

swallowed a big lump that was on my throat and tried to

fight back the tears but they ended up falling luckily I had

the veil to cover my misery. Here comes the bride started playing and I felt my knees wobbly that I almost fell halfway on the aisle. Ethan stood at the altar with a smile on his face and after what felt like ages I finally reached there and he held my hand. Everyone sat down quietly. The pastor started speaking. "Dearly beloved. We are gathered here today to witness the joining in holy matrimony of Majesty Brown and Ethan Jaji. If there is anyone with a valid reason why this two cannot lawfully be joined together in the holy matrimony. Speak now or forever hold your peace."

Everyone went dead quiet and then someone walked in...

25

MAJESTY

Congratulations to the new Mr and Mrs Jaji.

Dr Spencer bowed a little and murmured a sorry. She was

late for the wedding. I had invited her also. She had helped

me quiet a lot. Her sessions changed the way I saw things

so I started considering her my elderly friend hence I had

invited her to the wedding. Ethan sighed in relief as no one

came ahead to stop the wedding. I tried so much not to

think about the circumstances to which I was getting

married under. The pastor went on and droned about fidelity and love which was just too much for me under the circumstances. Ethan looked my way and I realised I was squeezing his hand too tightly. I loosened my grip. He was first to recite his vows. He promised in a loud and confident voice to always be there for me through it all and till death do us apart. In each word he was precise and made me believe that he meant everything that he said. He vowed! When it was my turn to speak I kept quiet for a

while and looked at Mr Jaji. He gave me a faint smile and

nodded his head. I looked at Ethan and he was nervous. I

recited my own vows in low, curt tone and slid the ring into

his finger.

"By the power invested in me by God and men, I now

pronounce you husband and wife. You may kiss the bride."

Everyone applauded and made joyful noise while I felt

trapped like ever before. I held my breathe as he unveiled

me and cupped my face. I'm sure he could see the trail of

tears on my cheeks. I braced myself, then opened my eyes and looked at him. He smiled lazily. We kissed and there was applause again, then music and the murmuring of our scandalized guests. I guess there were talking about my scandal with the Jackson brothers. Ethan held me by the arm as people congratulated us. Instead of feeling like a bride I was feeling like a prisoner. The reception was being held at the same place. The wedding itself was boring. I went to one of the rooms to change my gown and I wore a

back cut white dress.I looked at the ring on my finger.It felt heavy and uncomfortable.

"Are you ok Mj?" I was too lost in my thoughts to feel

Martha's presence in the room.I didn't even hear her

coming.The tears that were blurring my sight finally

coursed down my cheeks and I let out a sob.She hugged

me and continuously rubbed my back as I let it all out.

"You will be ok neh.You will be just fine.Now let's fix your

makeup and go back there before people start suspecting

that something is wrong." She fixed my makeup and I

plastered a smile on my face as we walked back to the

garden.

"Mrs Jaji." Ethan said smiling and taking my arm into his.

I smiled and kept quiet. People kept on congratulating

us. We had our dance and the day proceeded just fine at

least for everyone else but me. For the honeymoon Ethan

wanted us to go to Italy but I refused since his father was

not well so we settled for a beach house at Miami instead.

"Don't forget to wear that red number I packed for you."

Lisa winked and Lindy laughed. Martha just looked at me

with worry written all over her face.

"And you Lisa I saw you checking my brother out." I

changed the topic because I didn't even want to think

about the honeymoon and what was going to happen

there.

"Well he checked me out first. He is gorgeous I couldn't

keep my eyes off him. Don't you want me as your sister in

law." She laughed.

"I don't even wanna think about that." We all laughed.

Ethan came to where I was. It was time to go, we were

boarding an evening flight.

"Have a nasty, dirty, kinky and lovely honeymoon." Lindy

said winking at us.

Ethan laughed and shook his head. "I don't know about

kinky but I will keep the rest in mind. Shall we Mrs Jaji." He

looked at me.

"Umm I have to see Siphon and Girly first." I removed my arm from his and went to where Siphon and Girly were after hugging them and kissing them both I went back to Ethan. We said our goodbyes to everyone else and we were chauffeured to the airport. The Zulus promised to stay until I get back from the one week honeymoon. In the meantime they would be living in my house and painting Rodeo red. I was happy knowing that when I get back I would stay with Siphon for a few days. We took a two hours

flight to Miami so when we arrived I was jet lagged so I

just took a shower and we slept. For the first two days

everything was just so uncomfortable and awkward at

least for me. Ethan understood and gave me time to

prepare myself for the consummation of our marriage. Yes

I might have slept with many guys before but having to

open my legs for Ethan was just proving to be so difficult.

Sex needs mental preparedness and I wasn't yet

prepared. I had not yet registered in my mind that he was

now my husband and he had all the right to my body. We would make out and I would try to survive it until the real action but whenever we reached the peak I would just pull out and Ethan understood in as much as it was hard for him. The day before the honeymoon was over I just had to give it to him. I had to force myself to understand the situation and to accept that Ethan was now my husband and death was going to do us apart. After all that's what the pastor dwelt on during the wedding. Death was going

to do us apart so I had to adjust and start learning to see him as my husband. I had to let him enjoy himself on me and he did been but I would be lying if I say the feeling was mutual. I wasn't mentally prepared and it was hard for me to reach an orgasm that I even had to fake it to make him feel like a man. My coping mechanism was to picture Treet throughout but my mind wasn't strong enough to convince my body hence the weak orgasm.

"Thank you I had the best time of my life." He got off me

and kissed my forehead.

"Me too goodnight." I said looking the other way and he

cuddled me from the back.

"I love you Majesty."

"I know." With that said I kept quiet and within a moment

he was asleep. I could tell from his heavy breathing. It took

me hours to finally drift off to lalaland. The following

morning we had to pack and leave. Being at Miami wasn't

bad. I'm saying in terms of generally enjoying the scenery

and everything else there. Ethan made it more worthwhile when he convinced me to do some things we used to do back in the days. Everything else was ok except when we would go back into our bedroom and I had to remember that he was my husband now not only my best friend. After the honeymoon we had to go back home. Bianca and Jennifer had done me a big favour by packing all my clothes and taking them to Ethan's house. I wanted to rent out my place but I remembered I had insisted that Maka

stays off residence so I could keep an eye on her. As a result she was going to stay there and things would be easier for me. It was a fifteen minutes drive from Ethan's place to my place so I could easily check on her all the time. Upon arrival we first went to see Ethan's father. He was back in the hospital again. The doctors insisted that he stays for a week so that they could monitor his condition. I could see how this whole thing was taking a toll on Ethan and I was by his side through it all. Isn't that

what i married him for. When we went to see him he was sedated so I didn't have to stay for a long time.

"I will go check on my guest back at my place. They might have to leave tomorrow so I have to say my goodbyes." I told Ethan.

He nodded. "Its ok you can go check on them I will be with dad so long." He kissed my forehead and I walked out. I met Mrs Jaji on my way out.

"Hello maa." I said looking down.

She scoffed. "I'm not your maa and I will never be. You think you have won by marrying my son don't you. But let me tell you this you whore. I'm not going to rest until you're out of my son's life. I will be damned to watch my son being trapped by you. You're not going to enjoy this shame of a marriage. That I promise you." The irony of it

I was the

one trapped here not her son. It's not like I wanted this

either but did I have a choice. She could have done me a

biggest favour had she talked her husband out of

arranging a marriage between Eth and I. I was going to be

very grateful but now wasn't it too late for the threats. I

was already damn married to her son. She should have

done something but now it was too late.

"I'm sorry Mrs Jaji." What else could I say apart from

apologizing for marrying her son.

She roughly held my chin. "Look at me you whore. I know

my son is just clouded thinking he loves you but its only a

matter of time till he sees that its nothing but lust that he
has for you. Read my lips. I'm going to make sure that you
regret ever wearing that ring understand. I will make sure
you suffer for trapping my son like this and eventually I will
throw you myself out of Ethan's life for good. You will go
back to the trash that you always belonged to or else my
name wouldn't be Mrs Jaji." She roughly pushed me, then
clicked her tongue and walked away. I knew by signing that
marriage certificate I had signed my own imprisonment

sentence and having Mrs Jaji to clearly tell me that she was going to make my marriage life unbearable was the final nail to the coffin. My only wish was for Ethan to always support me through it all. Otherwise without his support I was going to suffer. His mother was going to make sure of it. I sighed and drove off to Rodeo to see the Zulus. They were happy to see me just as much as I was.

"So how was it? The whole honeymoon and shit." Lindy said sitting down attentively.

I smiled."Miami was amazing.Its full of life there.I wouldn't
mind relocating there."

Lisa laughed."Duh girl we have been to Miami. Obviously
we didn't sit here for you to tell us how Miami is like. We
want to know all the dirty and nasty stuff that went down
between you and your husband."

I chuckled."Unfortunately I don't kiss and tell but rest
assured that red number you packed for me did wonders."I
lied.They were ecstatic about it but Martha kept on giving

me a stern look.

"Anyway let's unpack your wedding gifts from MaZulu and

Scar.I'm just so curious as to what Scar got for you." Lisa

said bringing the gifts with her.I was curious too and

wondered what that could be that Lindani brought for me

as my wedding gift.It was a small wrapped gift box and I

immediately opened it.

"Wow." They all murmured.It was a wrist watch with black

crystals or should I say diamonds all around it.It wasn't

your typical Rolex watch but was far much better. At the

back it was engraved Majesty.

There was a note in the box.

"To everything there is a season and a time to every

purpose under heaven." Ecclesiastes 3:1.

Congratulations on your wedding Majesty.

Lisa's eyes popped out. "He quoted a bible! Scar knows

that there is something called Ecclesiastes in the

bible. Wonders shall never end shame."

Lindy shook her head."And the verse?What is he trying to say.I wonder what his hidden message is."

I smiled."I don't think there is a hidden message.His verse is about time and he bought me a watch."I shrugged.

"Everything my brother says has a meaning especially now that he went biblical." Lindy said.

"I don't think that's the case.Anyway let me open the gift from granny."

I excitedly opened and it was a bible.It smelled so new.

"Ohhh my God.Its beautiful."

There was a letter.

"But grow in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and

Saviour Jesus Christ.(II Peter 3:18) Majesty.He who

ceases to pray ceases to prosper.Marriage is not a child's

play.Some days it will be sweet and some days its going to

be very sour.Remember to put God first in everything. Pray

and seek for wisdom from him so that he will guide you in

every decision you make in your marriage.Pray for

strength, marriage needs strength because one day it's going to get very tough. A powerful woman is a praying woman. Let this bible be your weapon against every bad thing that you're going to encounter because it will get bad at some point but remember this bible will be your best friend, your counselor and your advisor. Congratulations on your wedding dear, I wish you all the very best. Love MaZulu."

I swallowed deep as her words sunk in. I was a grown

woman now but I still needed advise on everything. After reading the letter that Lindani's mother sent me I felt that she was that woman that I would ask for advise pertaining these issues because apparently I didn't have anyone I could as for advise on marriage. Asking Mrs Jaji was a non starter she would obviously insult me and tell me where to get off. So after reading the letter I decided to take her words to heart and I was definitely going to ask her anything about marriage because sure she was more

than willing to help me out. Yes I was married to Ethan as a compromise but this was a sealed deal already. I had signed the marriage certificate and one way or the other I had to abide by the vows I said with God and people as the witnesses. I had to start learning and acting like a wife that I was now and I could make use of a good advice from someone who has been married for so long.

"I'm not surprised that Mma quoted the Bible because she is very spiritual but as for Scar I'm still surprised. It

definitely means that the verse has a deeper meaning to

it."Martha clapped her hands.

"My point exactly." Lindy added.

I decided not to dwell much on Lindani's verse and the

claimed "deeper meaning".To me he had just quoted a

bible verse which went along with the fact that he had

bought me a watch as a gift.Nonetheless I loved both my

gifts.I tried calling Lindani to thank him but his phone

wasn't going through.Lindy gave me their mothers number

and I video called her.

She answered on the first ring." I was waiting for your

call."She said smiling like always.

"Ohh sorry for not calling you on the day of the wedding

and the last few days." I said.

She chuckled."Haa its ok dear I understood the pressure

you were under and I'm sure you didn't want any

disturbances at your honeymoon. I saw your wedding

pictures by the way you looked so beautiful.That man who

is your husband is very lucky to have you."

I smiled."Ohhh thank you very much and thank you for the

wedding gift.How have you been by the way?"

"You're welcome dear and make very serious use of it.By

the way I have been ok.What about you are you're enjoying

your paradise."She wiggled her eyebrows mischievously

I laughed." Yes I am."

"Mom who are you talking to?"That was Lindani's voice.

"Umm can I please talk to him.I have been trying to talk to

him but his phone wasn't going through."

"Ok." There was some shuffling and then Lindani's face

popped on the screen.He didn't look as lively as the last

time I had seen him.Instead he looked exhausted and like

he didn't get some sleep for days.

"Hy Mrs Jaji."He pronounced Jaji as Judge.

I smiled." Its Jaji not judge and by the way you can call me

Browns I have no intentions of changing my surname.

How have you been by the way?You look exhausted."

He rubbed his forehead. "Yea I had a lot of work to do

hey. How is marriage treating you?" He asked

I smiled. "I have been married for like what? Two minutes

and you're already asking me that. By the way thank you so

much for the gift I really loved it"

Ye smiled lazily. "Really? You loved it?"

I showed him my left wrist. "Yes I did. I'm even wearing it

right now look."

"That's a relief then. I'm glad you loved it. Congratulations

once again."

"Thank you." I said.

"Cool then look umm I gotta go.I have some things to deal with."

"No problem" He gave his mother the phone and we chatted for a few minutes before hanging up.I spent the rest of the day with the Zulus and even slept over there obviously after talking to Ethan about it.Prince and I drove them to the airport the following morning.Once again it

was just sad to part ways with them even Girly cried her

lungs out when I took her from Sipho.They had gotten so

close for the last few days.

"I will come back and visit you MJ and little Missy here."He

said playing with Girly's cheeks who giggled forgetting that

she was crying not so long ago.

"And since I'm going to be your makoti I will obviously

visit." Lisa said winking at Prince who in response just

laughed shaking his head.

"Let's not even go there."

"MaZulu I will see you again." Leon said hugging me.

"You crazyhead I'm not MaZulu. Remember I'm wearing a band right here."

He chuckled. "Its just a wedding band its not going to stop me from calling you MaZulu." He joked around until it was time for them to board the plane.

"Have a safe journey guys." I hugged them one more time and we parted ways.

"Just a warning bro don't mess with Lisa."

He chuckled."I won't sis relax.We are just having some

fun.We are adults we know what we want."

"Hmm okay."I drove off to my new home.

Six months later.

Ethan was the best husband that any woman could ever

ask for but for me it was just so difficult to adjust to the

whole marriage mentality.My heart wasn't with him and

whenever I remember that I would spend the rest of my

life with him I would have a headache. He was very patient and very understanding but the whole situation wasn't easy for me and I wondered for how long he was going to be patient. At times it was so difficult for me to sleep with him in the same bed without being angry at him for trapping me. Sometimes I would end up sleeping with Girly and he never complained. All he would ever say was " I know its not easy for you Maj but I'm a very patient man. I have waited to be with you for years we are married now

and I just have to wait a little bit longer for you to feel for me the same way I feel about you."I really appreciated his efforts and patience but I just couldn't forget about Treet and love him the way he deserved to be loved.It couldn't happen overnight.My guilt conscience wasn't helping either.I had slept with Treet a day before I too my vows with Ethan.Gosh it was a mess.Anyway I took a leave from work to focus on my new family now.Mary was in charge of Majesty Innovations in the meantime and I could relax

because I knew I had left my company in good hands. I was heads on being a stay at home mum and spending quality time with Girly. Jennifer was helping me out on the chores but in the kitchen I would do everything on my own also including Ethan's laundry. The life of being a housewife was hard but I was trying. For the last six months I didn't see much of Mrs Jaji I guess she was laying low for a while and planning a bomb for me. We would only bump into each other at the hospital and she

would throw daggers at me.

"My favourite two ladies in the kitchen." Ethan walked in

holding his briefcase. He looked exhausted and I felt pity

for him. After work he would go visit his father and

because Mr Jaji's health was deteriorating very quickly it

was taking a huge toll on him.

"Daddy is back, daddy is back...!" Girly exclaimed and ran to

him. I took his briefcase.

He kissed my forehead and lifted Girly up.

"Hey how was your day.I prepared a bath for you upstairs in the meanwhile I will dish out dinner for us.You must be pretty exhausted." I said.

"I'm very exhausted indeed.Let me go take a quick bath like you said.I will be back in a jiffy." He placed Girly on her chair and went upstairs.I dished his favourite pap,beef and green salad.While waiting for him I fed Girly first who was complaining now.She was a food-killy-me.After he was done showering he came back downstairs and we ate in

comfortable silence. After we were done eating he went
and tucked Girly into bed and joined me in washing the
dishes.

"I tried emailing you earlier and there was no Majesty Jaji."

He said.

"Yes because I'm still using Majesty Browns." I wiped my
hands with a dishtowel.

"So you're not changing your name to Majesty Jaji?" He
asked

I sighed. I knew this topic was going to come up one day. "I

need my own identity Ethan. I'm wearing this ring which is

enough proof that I'm married and to you. Already some

people call me Mrs Jaji but I need my identity too. I need to

still that I own my life. I'm keeping my surname because it

will always remind me of who I really am."

He sighed. "So basically you're saying if you change your

surname to Jaji I would be owning you?"

"Already you own me Ethan. I just need one thing which

reminds me of who I really am and that is my surname. Yes

I'm your wife now but before that I'm Majesty. I'm my own

person."

He cupped my face. "Fine. I understand. If it matters that

much to you then you will keep your surname."

"Thank you for understanding."

He smiled. "Anything for you." He looked at my lips and I

knew where it was going to end. I was saved by the bell. My

phone rang before he could get the chance to kiss me. His

touch was familiar to my body now but it was a difficult task for my mind to get used to his touch. It was difficult whenever we had sex. I had to force my mind to be there, to present during the act. The irony if it, I used to sleep around with different guys and it wasn't difficult to get into the act mentally and physically but with my husband it was a different story. I was trying very hard though and getting better at adjusting with each passing day hoping that one day I would also be in trance like he would be whenever

I'm giving it to him. I picked my phone hoping it would be Siphos because for the last days I wasn't talking to Siphos on a daily basis as he was going back to school. As for Lindani he had limited his communication on the basis that it wasn't politically correct for us to always video call each other. In fact calling and texting each other constantly.

"We don't usually say it but we do not like it when our women are constantly on the phone chatting with some other guy." He replied when I had asked him one day why

he was just going MIA on me all the time.Hence from that day we had limited the calls.We would barely call each other and when we did our conversations would not last for more than five minutes.He would just ask how I'm doing and I would ask about Sipho and that's it.But the Zulu girls created our WhatsApp group called 4sassyqueens and we kept in touch very much often.They kept me company.Sometimes it would feel like they were with me in person.

"Aren't you going to answer it?" Ethan's voice dragged me
back to reality.

Prince was the one who was calling. I answered."Hey bro."I
said

"Hey sis are you with Ethan right now?" He asked.

"Yes why?"

"I want you to sit down with him and please try to be as
calm as you can.We lost Mr Jaji.His father died just a few
minutes ago.I got a call from Doctor Mina." He dropped

the bomb.

I gasped and covered my mouth."Ohh my God."

"Please sis tell him in a way that he will not make him

panic.You know he has a heart problem." He dropped the

call.

Ethan looked at me with worry."Babe what is it?"

"Umm dear let's have some hot chocolate first I'm craving

for it."Hot chocolate calmed him so it was going to do the

magic here because I needed him calm not alarmed like he

was at the moment.

"Ohh okay hot chocolate it is." He said.

26

MAJESTY

Rest In Peace Mr Jaji Snr.

He prepared hot chocolate for us and we went to sit at the patio. I just didn't know how to break it down to him that his father had died. I just didn't know the right words to use and I was afraid of how he was going to react when he finally gets to know that the man he looked up to in everything had just passed on. We sat there in silence and with the way he was looking at me he was surely feeling

that something wasn't right. I was also struggling to keep it together.

He held my hands. "What is it Maj? I can clearly see that something is wrong and please don't you dare tell me that its nothing."

I sighed and sat on his laps. "Look Eth I just got a call from Prince. He talked to Dr Mina earlier and we lost your father Ethan. We lost him. I'm sorry Ethan. I'm so sorry."

He looked at me for a while without saying

anything."Please tell me you're joking or I'm having a
nightmare."

I didn't know what else to say to him.He was the one who
used to comfort me in everything and he knew exactly
what to say to me but I didn't know what to say to him as
he broke down.I hugged him as he continuously sobbed.

"I ...know...he...w-was...going ..t-to ...die but ...its
...too..soon ..Maj...he left me too soon."We cried

together.It was 8pm and I decided to drive to the hospital

because Ethan was in no state to drive. We found Mrs Jaji there with Prince trying to comfort her because she was a crying mess. For that moment she placed her hatred for me aside and cried in my arms. She was hurt and I felt pity for her. Ethan signed all the papers that needed to be signed and we all went home. Prince went and fetched Maka from the house as well as Girly. He took it upon himself to make sure that he would do all the procedures that needed to be done so that Mr Jaji's body would be

taken to Zimbabwe the following day. It wasn't an easy procedure but it had to be done. Ethan was in no state to do all that hence Prince took over. The plan was to fly to Zimbabwe the following day but we couldn't because there was a lot of formalities to be followed for the body to be taken to Zim and already people there had started mourning him. We finally managed to get all the procedures done and on the third day we all flew back to Zimbabwe. When we arrived there were a lot of people

gathered mourning Mr Jaji's death at his homestead. He surely was a popular man judging by the number of people that were gathered at his house. Being in Zimbabwe just brought back a lot of unwanted memories but I made a mental note to deal with everything after Mr Jaji's funeral. I was jet lagged upon arrival and I just needed to rest for a little bit but some of the aunties there were having none of it. Apparently they were the ones who didn't attend the wedding because they couldn't afford to fly to America. We

had to be introduced to each other the day we arrived. It

was the two of them Mai Tawananyasha and Mai

Moyo. They were two sisters who were estranged cousins

to the late Mr Jaji.

"What did you say your name was again. Come and help us

with preparing meals outside for the arriving guests." Mai

Tawa said.

I didn't want to come off as disrespectful by disobeying

them so I agreed to help them in as much as I was

exhausted from the trip. This was a matter of proving myself as well since they already had an attitude towards me. I took a quick shower, wore a long dress, tied my head wrap and joined them outside in the shade where they were cooking. I started running errands and doing the rest of the work since they were tired from making breakfast for the people who were at the funeral. So now that it was time for lunch a lot had to be prepared including cooking for everyone who were at the funeral. A catering team

could have been hired but that would look somehow and just extravagant in their eyes. It was the women's duty to prepare these meals.

"Maj she is crying for you." Maka came with Girly who was crying her lungs out. She woke up to a place she wasn't familiar with and around people she didn't know. I strapped her on my back and continued helping the other ladies. After helping in preparing lunch I was super drained all I wanted was to rest but that couldn't happen because

as Mrs Jaji's daughter in law I had to sit with her at the
reed mate and mourn with her. Girly was finally asleep so I
took her to Ethan.

"Make sure you don't leave her alone otherwise she will
wail her lungs out when she wakes up. She is not yet
familiar with the place." I said tucking her in bed.

"Its ok I won't. You look exhausted I hope Mai Tawa and
Mai Moyo are not giving you a hard time. You should rest
you're jet lagged." He said.

I sighed."No its ok I can handle it.I can't sleep while your mother is crying there.As her daughter in law I need to be with her and help around in some things.A lot needs to be done.You can see for yourself that there are a lot of people here.Your father was indeed popular."

He nodded his head sadly."I already miss him.I feel like a huge part was taken away from me."

I sat on the bed."I know exactly how that feels but I'm here for you ok.I'm not good with comforting words like you but

all you have to know is that I'm here if you need anything

but meanwhile let me get back to work. The ladies outside

are already making preparations for supper. See you later

neh." I squeezed his hand in reassurance and walked out.

"You can help those other two girls by washing the dishes

I'm sure with your weak hands and fake nails you won't be

able to stir the pots. So just stick to doing the dishes." Mai

Tawa gave me the dishwashing liquid. I went and joined

the two girls in doing the dishes. After I was done I was

told to cut the vegetables which I did. Dinner was prepared and I helped in serving the guest with Girly strapped on my back again. She really wasn't coping with her surroundings and she only wanted to be with me so I had no choice. After dinner I was too exhausted to even eat. I was sharing a room with Maka and other three girls of her age and because I was the eldest I got the honor of sleeping on the bed with Girly. When my head hit the pillow I immediately drifted off to lalaland.

"Wake up woman,wake up...Hey this is not America girl

wake up!!!" My amazing dream on the beach was cut short

thanks to Mai Moyo who was shaking me vigorously.

"Ohh what time is it?" I said with my sleepy voice.

"Its time for you to wake up.We have to prepare breakfast

before the rest of the people wake up too.Haaaiii you're so

lazy shame.I wonder how my nephew is coping. Make it

quick, chop,chop we need you outside. Stop lazing

around."I went to the bathroom and took a quick shower

then wore another pair of a long dress with a head wrap.

"You can start by making the fire and make soft porridge

for all the kids here." Mai Tawa commanded.

"How many are they?" I asked.

"Well children aren't allowed at funerals so its only a few of

them who couldn't be left at home.I think they are around

15.Make sure the porridge is soft and has a lot of peanut

butter my child loves it like that."

"Ok but I'm sure among the kids there are some who

doesn't like it with peanut butter. Why don't I make two

different pots. The one with peanut butter and the one

without. It's just my suggestion." I said

"Hey wena they will just have to deal with it. This is a

funeral not a hotel where one can get to choose what they

want. They will have to eat what is given to them. I don't

need your useless suggestion here. If you make two pots

of soft porridge that's a waste of mealy meal, just cook

one pot of soft porridge with peanut butter like I said and

stop trying to act so smart. Just because you live in

America it doesn't make you any better than anyone else

around here. Miss Know it all." She clicked her tongue and

walked away. I was surprised by her outburst. I had just

given a suggestion which I thought was right. I didn't want

to come off like I was trying to be Miss Know it all. Anyway

I made the fire which was a little bit of a struggle. I last had

prepared soft porridge years ago and I was praying that I

don't mess it up but I guess my prayers weren't heard. The

porridge I had prepared had lumps.

"Hedeeee!!! people come and see this." Mai Tawa laughed

clapping her hands.

"What's wrong?" Mai Moyo asked. The way Mai Tawa was

laughing it was drawing unnecessary attention as a result

all the women who were cooking surrounded us

Advertisement

wanting

to know what was going on.

"Look at this porridge that our dear daughter in law here

has prepared. So watery and the lumps look like stones. My daughter doing grade 5 can prepare better porridge than this nonsense but here a woman like her all high and mighty can't even prepare it." Some other ladies laughed it off and went back to do their duties but I could see them gossiping about me.

"I made a mistake Mai Tawa I'm sorry but I can prepare it again. Its not that I don't know how to prepare it but its been long since I have made soft porridge but I promise

you I will get it right this time.I'm sorry this came out as a mess."

"Eh eh eh we don't want to hear your sorries.You need to understand that is not America wena.This is a funeral and you as the daughter in law you're expected to do these things properly.First you woke up late and when you did all the chores were done.The same chores which were supposed to be done by you.Yesterday you were not doing things properly feigning exhaustion.We are all exhausted

around here. We have been here for four days. We all want to rest but the food will not cook itself and the chores will not do themselves. At your age you can't make soft porridge properly. You should be ashamed of yourself wena woman. I should have a serious talk with Ethan about this. You're a shame of a woman. I wonder what he saw in you. You're not a wife material at all." Mai Moyo said holding her waist.

"I'm really sorry but let me make it again."

"Hai hai hai let it be this ain't a cooking class.Its already

7:30 our kids will be up in no time.We don't want to feed

them your watery porridge or they will die with stomach

ache.I will cook the porridge myself.You can help by

boiling the water for tea.I'm sure you can do that much."

Mai Tawa dismissed me and I went in the kitchen inside

with tears streaming down my cheeks.It seemed with the

women in the Jaji family I just didn't do anything right.They

had just known me for a day and they were already saying

I'm lazy and all. Was I really lazy and a shame of wife or it was just my bad luck that they didn't like me. I wiped my tears off quickly and took the ingredients to make tea. Around 9am people were done having breakfast and the service resumed. The body viewing was conducted and I couldn't view Mr Ethan's body. I just couldn't. Prince was the one who was with Ethan as he saw his father for the last time. When it was time to go to the graveyard I left Girly with Maka. I joined Ethan and his mother.

There in the rock-hard, red earth we had arrived at
graveyard. Memories of when we last went there to bury
my mother weighed down on my conscience and I cried in
pain. Another service was done it was brief one since a lot
had been said and done back at home. People gave their
farewell speeches. I held Ethan's hand as he threw some
soil in this father's rest place.

"Excuse me Eth I will just have to go see my mother for a
while." I said and he gave me a confused look. I sighed.

"Remember my mother and probably my father were buried here too."

"Ohh sorry that skipped my mind.You can go.I will be under that tree." He said.

I slowly walked to my mother's grave.It didn't surprise me to see that my father's gave was next to hers.Both graves looked unkept and that didn't sit well with me.I also made a mental note to hold a ceremony of the unveiling of tombstones for them once everything has settled.I sat

down on my mother's grave.

"Hy mom.I miss you hey.I'm sure you think I forgot about you completely.That is not the case.A lot has happening in my life and I'm ashamed to say that I didn't find time to see you guys.." I sighed and wiped my tears off which continuously coursed down my cheeks."Mom I wish you were still alive so that you could show me the right way and lead me to the right path.I'm lost and I don't know what to do with my life.I'm married now to

Ethan. Remember you used to say that you would be very happy if Ethan and I get married. I guess wherever you're you are very happy but I'm not mom. I want to be happy and invest in this marriage but it's not easy for me which is why I need you to look after me and even though you're absent now physically show me signs mom. Show me how to do things. Show me how it's done. Mom just look after me and my siblings that's all I'm asking. I may have not raised Maka or Prince the way you wanted but I tried my

best and I hope you're proud of me. As for you dad, I have been resenting you for years because you took away my mother when I needed her the most. You robbed her away from me and my siblings. I hated you for that. My hatred, resentment and not only for you but for other men too made me live my way immorally and I'm still suffering from the consequences of my past and some choices that I made. Dr Spencer who is my therapist said it all started from you. Sometimes I wish I could erase all the memories

I have when you used to beat up mom and abuse her but I

can't. All I can do now is forgive you for everything

including killing her. It wasn't an easy decision to make but

I'm doing this for me. My anger and resentment for you and

men only destroyed me but I have learnt my lesson and

after this I'm going to turnaround my life and make you

both proud." I stood up and dusted my back.

"I thought I was the only one who wanted to talk to them

especially him." Prince said pointing at our father's grave.

I gave him a pat on the shoulder."Just forgive him.I feel like a heavy burden has been lifted off my shoulders.Resenting him and hating him for killing our mother will only affect us.He is no longer here to live up to the consequences of his actions.Forgive and forget.You will be setting yourself free.I did just that and I feel at ease."

He nodded his head."I hear you.Before we go back I will bring Maka too."

"That's a good idea. Anyway I will leave you to it." I joined

Ethan and his mother in the car. Later after some time we

drove back home.

After the burial relatives who had come from faraway

places spent one more day but eventually left. I finally

breathed when Mai Moyo and Mai Tawa left because they

made my stay very miserable and insulted me every

chance they got no matter how much I tried to prove

myself and impress them. I just wasn't lucky with the inlaws. The day before we flew back to America Prince took

Maka to our parents' graves and I drove to what I used to call "home". Despite everything that our uncles did I had forgiven them and I just wanted us to mend our relationship but I was disappointed when I arrived at the place I used to call home. It looked like a haunted house with broken windows, broken doors and absolutely nothing inside. They were just walls and the yard was covered in unkept grass.

"They sold everything years ago and moved back to the

rural areas."One of the neighbors that I had asked about
the whereabouts of the family told me.

"Thank you very much ma'am." I thanked her and drove
off.Well at least I had made an effort.

"You look disappointed. Where were you?" Ethan asked.

"I have been driving around just seeing the neighborhood.

Nothing has changed believe me.Its just like how we left it
years back. Only that the river we almost drowned in has
dried up."

"That was our peaceful place."

"Yea it was but not anymore." I sighed.

He made me sit on his laps and brushed my back."You

went to your house didn't you?"

I nodded my head."Yes I did.I went there in the hopes that I

would meet one of my uncle and his family but the place is

looking like a haunted house from a horror movie.They

sold everything and went back to Rusape."

"I'm sorry to hear that."

I shrugged and shook my head."I just want us to bury the hatchet you know.They did me and my siblings wrong but its been twelve years now.Its time to move on.I can't keep on holding onto the past.I just want to forgive,forget and set myself free.I have to tell them looking them in the eye that I have forgiven them.After all I think its way overdue.These differences were supposed to be resolved a long time ago.I also need them in the future because I have planned to hold the unveiling of the tombstones

ceremony for my parents. I wasn't pleased with the way their graves were looking like."

"That's a good idea and I'm so proud of you. So when do you want the ceremony to be held. Do you want to go to Rusape now and visit your uncles?"

"No not now. Maybe a few months later after your father's memorial service."

"Ok I will support you in everything. I will be behind you in every step of the way." He said.

I smiled and cupped his face. "Thank you for being such a supportive husband." I perked him and ended up sucking his lips which caught him by surprise because ever since we got married I never made a move on him or initiated sex. I guess it was high time I made some efforts too. As we were kissing someone cleared their throat. It was his mother. I quickly got off his laps.

"I hope you're not at it because we are still mourning your father Ethan." She said with her eyebrow arched.

"We were just kissing mom and please next time just don't walk in on us there is something called knocking." He said.

"You heard of something called locking the door too right. Anyway I'm not here to lecture you on how to lock the doors when things get heated up. Majesty I need to talk to you." I was so shocked with her behavior. I mean thee Mrs Jaji was joking around when she walked in on me kissing her son. She didn't even give me death stares or anything.

" Umm ok." I said.

"I need to talk to you in private please." She looked at Ethan who just got the message and walked out. She sat on the bed and motioned me to sit besides her which I did after a lot of hesitation.

"When we were burying my husband I realised that life is too short and precious. Who would have ever thought that he would die without reaching the age of 65. I realised that life is too short to hold on grudges. I would be lying if I say I'm happy that you married my son. I'm not because I know

all your history and drama. I was a first hand witness to it
and can you blame me for being so bitter. However you
stood by me through the funeral and gave me a shoulder
to cry on. So I realised that maybe the Majesty I knew is
still in there. I'm still not ok with the fact that you and Ethan
are married but what I can do is give you a chance to prove
to me that you're worth being a wife to my son." She said.

"Umm I don't know what to say but thank you." I said.

"Don't thank me yet. You need to prove yourself worthy of

being called a wife."She walked out. Her giving me chance
felt like it was too good to be true.I mean the woman
hated me with passion and all of a sudden she wanted to
give me a chance after all the threatening and insults.Or
maybe her husband's death really moved her and taught
her something. Nonetheless I was happy that at least we
were going somehow even though I could hear my
conscience warning me from afar but I decided to ignore
it.Anyway the following morning we left for USA.

A week passed after we had buried Mr Jaji. Things weren't easy for Ethan but he was trying his best to cope.

"Majesty I need to talk to you." He said one morning before leaving for work.

"Ok let me finish dishing breakfast for you." He nodded and I served him breakfast. After I was done I sat down and looked at him attentively.

"Mom asked to stay with us. She is all alone at the house and very lonely. I also think it's a good idea that she moves

in with us so that Girly and you can keep her company but I have to hear your take on it first before I make a decision.If you're not ok with it then fine I will see what I can do."

"Its ok she can come live with us otherwise she will loose her mind staying alone in that big house.I will be going back to work very soon so she will only have Girly to keep her company."

"On that note don't you think we should also let Maka live

with us. The house is big enough to accommodate them. I

mean since she is on her vacation she will keep mom

company while you're at work. Also her staying alone at

your place is just not right I think." He said.

I nodded my head. "Yahh you have a good point there."

So later that day I made arrangements Maka and Mrs Jaji

moved in with us. Two weeks passed with me walking

around eggshells whenever Mrs Jaji was in the room. I

treated her like a ticking bomb but she proved me

otherwise. She never insulted me or threaten me in fact she complimented everything I did and appreciated the way I was handling things and taking care of the family.

Maka on the other hand was on her best behavior and there was no bitchy attitude at all.I guess that was the impact of Mr Jaji's deat.I was playing my part too, working hard on playing my part in my marriage.Intimacy with Ethan has started to become enjoyable a bit by bit.As for matters of the heart yes Treet owned most of the space in

my heart but it was big enough to accommodate Ethan too.

"Maa breakfast is ready." I went to her room and called

her. I went and called Maka then went to Girly's room. It

was a struggle getting to wake her up but when I

mentioned that I have made her favourite omelette she

was the one who ended up dragging me downstairs. We

sat down on the table and then said our grace. I first fed

Girly and then ate. After we were done I started doing the

dishes. Suddenly Girly started crying. She had red spots all

over and was struggling to breathe. I panicked but I had to keep it together and drive her to the hospital. They immediately took her to the emergency room when we arrived.

"I will call Ethan and inform him. Maka stay with your sister." Mrs Jaji excused herself and went to call

Ethan. Within some time Ethan rushed in. I could see he was in full panic mode and I was a crying mess.

"What happened to her? What did the doctor say?" He

asked.

Before we replied him the doctor came. "I'm sure you're aware your daughter is allergic to olive oil but we found it in her system. We flushed it and hopefully next time you will be extra careful. You can take her back him after." He excused himself.

"I'm the one who prepared breakfast but I didn't use olive oil. I'm careful when it comes to that." I said.

Mrs Jaji. "No one touched the pots. You're the one who

cooked and we ate together."

"But I didn't use olive oil I'm certain."

Ethan sighed in frustration. "Majesty how can you be so careless? You know very well that my child is allergic to olive oil and that's what you use to prepare her meals. How can you be so ignorant?"

"Ohh so now she is your child not ours. Ethan I'm telling you I didn't use olive oil. I have been taking care of Girly since she was an infant and I have never made that

mistake why would I start now. And you're calling it

ignorance and carelessness. Wow Ethan wow." I shook my

head.

"Fine it wasn't ignorance right? How about you admit that

you made a mistake Majesty and own up to your mistake."

"I'm hundred percent sure I didn't use it. How can I own up

to a mistake I didn't commit. It hurts that you don't believe

me and you're looking at me like I'm a serial killer who had

intentions of killing Girly." I half shouted.

He sighed again in frustration. "Geez Majesty shoot me for being afraid for my child's life. Shoot me for being scared that I would lose her. Not so long ago I have been in and out of here and I lost my father. Now it's my daughter who is on that bed. I'm allowed to be scared too. You on the other hand you're just refusing to admit you made a mistake. It's not like if you own up to it you're going to jail. On top of that you're hurt that I don't believe you when you were the one who made food for her. Excuse me

Majesty if I'm not nursing your feelings right now but if you were my shoes you were going to react the same or

worse. This is my child we are talking about." He walked to

Girly's room.

27

TREET

I'm going to find a way to make it without you.

I closed my PC and sighed laying back on my chair. I have been working from home since the accident. A lot has happened and I was going through hell so the last thing I wanted was to deal with the crowds. So I decided to work from home until further notice.

"So when are you coming back Mr Jackson." Monica

asked. She was a reliable PA and I knew everything was in

order because she handled her job really well. So my

absence at the company was not going to be that much of

a problem.

"Just give me a month or two. I have some personal issues

to sort out after that I will come back. I don't want to come

to work and be mentally absent. So I need to sort my mess

first."

"Okay fine. Have a good day Mr Jackson." She gathered her

files.

"You too Monica." She walked out of my office.

After she was gone I went downstairs. I had hopes that I

would have an appetite to at least stomach a fruit salad

but instead I ended up feeling nauseous just by looking at

it. I left the kitchen immediately and went to sit in the living

room. There was nothing interesting to watch on the tv.

I threw the remote control away in frustration. "My life is a

joke. Why was I born without my consent to begin with?" I

barked and kicked my leg in the air.

"Easy there Mr Jackson." Zoe walked in with a fruit

hamper. My God I had no energy to deal with her.

"Hey Zoe I didn't hear you coming in."

"The front door was open." She sat down and placed the

fruit hamper on the table.

"So how have you been Mr Jackson."

At this point in my life I didn't want to be asked that

question. Of course I was a total mess. Who wouldn't be

after being dumped by the love of their life? Majesty was

my world and to think that she was now married to
someone else made my chest tighten. I thought I was
having a long nightmare that I would wake up from but
when pictures of her wedding started trending, reality hit
me hard. It was real. She was a married woman now. After
that day it wasn't the same for me anymore. My life was
just a joke. Everything went downhill. I was dealing with a
broken heart. My parents were fighting like a cat and
dog. My mother on was refusing to reveal my biological

father's identity. My life was a mess. I was a

mess, everything was a mess.

I sighed. "I have been okay Zoe as you can see." You

couldn't miss the sarcasm in my tone. Just by taking one

glance at me you would tell I was not ok and I was pissed

that she asked me such a stupid question. My unshaved

beard, black circles and unkept hair was enough proof to

show that I was a total mess. I could even feature in a

horror movie and win an Oscar award because of my scary

appearance only.

"I'm sorry. Forgive me that was a stupid question." She

admitted. We kept quiet for a while.

"If you need anything I'm here for you Mr Jackson. Anything

at all. Just say the word." She said seductively.

I sighed. "You don't have to offer me sex Zoe. I'm good"

She looked down her face looking red like a tomato. "That's

not what I meant Mr Jackson I..."

I cut her off. "Zoe I'm not a child. I know what this is all

about. You checking up on me every now and then. Calling me every chance you got. The fruit hampers, making meals for me. Zoe I'm getting all the signs here and I'm not a child not to notice what your intentions are. Look I love Majesty and I'm not ready for a rebound romance or better yet to fuck someone. I appreciate your efforts and your care but it has always been Majesty. I'm finding it very hard to cope. It will rub off on you. The last thing I want is to start something with you. Lead you on while my heart yearns for

her. I don't want to make you a bitter person and trust me

you will be bitter if I lead you on into a fruitless

relationship. You're beautiful woman and there is definitely

some guy out there meant for you. It's just not me."

She sighed. "I can help you to forget her."

"You're not amnesia Zoe. Like I said I appreciate everything

you're doing for me but I can't give you what you want

either it's a relationship that you want or fun. I wouldn't

mind having you only as my close friend."

She wiped her tears off."I'm sure I look so desperate right now."

"You look like a woman who is in love with a man who is in love with another woman."I said and she just laughed wiping her tears off.

"Friendship can work for me." She said.

"Thank you Zoe.Just don't go around throwing yourself at people.You will definitely look desperate."

"I hear you..Anyway let me leave I have to go back to work

now before they see that I sneaked out."

I walked her out and she waved me goodbye before she

drove off. I went back inside and within a few minutes

Tyrone walked in. Jesus Christ I didn't even have the

stamina for this one either.

"Hey half." He said going to my mini bar and pouring

himself my favourite scotch.

"Hey quarter." I said lazily changing channels.

"Hahaha so funny." He shook his head and threw himself

on my couch.

"So I saw Zoe driving out."

"Great then your eyesight is still very good you don't need spectacles." I said.

He chuckled." Stop being sarcastic.Why don't you give the girl a chance?She cares about you and it's crystal clear she has strong feelings for you.She has some serious thing going on.You need to forget about Majesty now and find yourself some love.You need some love especially

with the mess you're going through."

I sighed and looked at him going on and on about love as

he was some love guru."So is this the part where I ask you

where your girlfriend is?I mean I also want the best for you

bro. I don't want you to die all sad and lonely."

"This isn't about me Treet this is about you.Yea I

understand your situation because I have been there.When

Majesty chose you I had to deal with it so you do it too

because this is not the end of the world.I know the

Majesty aftereffects and I know its hard to get over.Damn

that girl just creeps into your heart and its difficult to get

over her but it has to be done."

I scrunched my face."Are you over Majesty bro.

He looked everywhere but me."Do you think that girl used

love potion on us?"

"So you are not over her either.You are still in love with

her.Wonders shall never end."I laughed in disbelief

"Look Treet I'm not over her and you're not over her but we

gotta move on because she is married now. At the back of my mind I always knew she would never feel the same about me but at least I'm handling my heartbreak well. I can't say the same about you. You look like something which escaped from the zoo. The least you can do is shave and get a haircut or you will scare the children away." He joked.

I sighed. "Whatever man. It's just so difficult she was my everything. My happiness and my world was centred

around her. Now everything crushed down. It's so hard

picking up the pieces and start acting like nothing

happened. I still love that woman. Anyway did you try

talking to mom about our biological father?" I asked.

"Like always she is sticking to her story." He shrugged.

"I was drunk and it was a one nightstand?" I asked

rhetorically. He nodded and sighed in frustration. Ever

since it got out that that we weren't really the Jacksons by

blood Tyrone interrogated mom in the hopes that she

would tell us who our father was but the old hag didn't

"remember."

"Maybe its high time I talk to her too.Good thing I invited

everyone for lunch."Tyrone stayed with me for the rest of

the day.Even though he was annoying at some point he

kept me company.I was going to loose my mind alone in

the big house but his annoying behind made things better

for me.Before we knew it.It was evening already and my

family was on their way for dinner.Tyrone literally dragged

me to the shower because I was planning to have a "dry bath" and wear something nice but he was having none of it. I ended up showering and went all the way out by wearing a suit and a tie. When we went back downstairs my family was already seated in the dining room with my chef serving them food. I greeted everyone and took my seat. It was completely quiet while we were eating. You could hear a needle dropping. The tension was thick enough to cut with a knife. I didn't eat much because I

didn't have any appetite so I waited for everyone to finish eating before I dropped my bomb.

After everyone was done eating I broke the ice."Mom I'm cutting you off until you decide to come clean about who my father is,where he is and all other information Tyrone and I need to know about him.Please don't you dare say he was a one nightstand and you don't remember who he was because I know very well that you're lying. So its either you choose to tell Tyrone and I the truth or you walk out of my

life right now. I'm sick and tired of your lies and secrets." I

said firmly and everyone gasped.

"And I mean it when I say I'm going to cut you off. If it

means I will have to go to court and cut you off legally I

will do it. At the end of the day I have valid reasons. So the

truth now or you walk out of my house right now and drive

your jeep out of my life."

She started crying. "How can you say that to your own

mother. I know I made a mistake and I will live the rest of

my life apologizing for it but.."

"Mom save your sorry speech for the one who gives a

damn.The truth now or you're out." Tyrone was loosing his

patience.

She sniffed."You too Tyrone.You're doing this to me."

Dad,Danileigh and Tyson were quiet watching the drama

unfold.The hurt on my dad's face was clear.Its unfortunate

I couldn't nurse his feelings at the moment because I

needed the truth.He was still my father and I appreciated

everything he did for me and my twin but I had to know
who was responsible for my existence.

"Mom talk now or walk out right now." I commanded.

"His name was Jason Khumalo."

"Was?" Tyrone and I asked in unison.

"He was involved in a car accident years ago with his
daughter. They died on the spot so I heard."

"You mean Mr Khumalo who was my business
acquaintance?" Dad asked. Mom nodded.

"Wow I can't believe my own wife did that to me. Khumalo and I have been friends for a very long time and you slept with him. It's a good thing he is dead or I was going to kill him myself. And you know what I'm done with you. I'm divorcing you." Dad stormed out and Tyson followed him. Mom started weeping.

"Because of your lies and your secrets we will never get the chance to know our father. You're evil mom very evil."

Tyrone broke down.

"Where did he live?" I asked.

"The last time we talked he told me he lived in South Africa

but I don't know if they had moved.I'm so sorry my

children.I didn't think it would turn out this way."

"Save it mom.Save your sorry speech for the one who

cares.Please do me the biggest favour and walk out right

now.I can't stand your sight.You heard our father was dead

but you didn't have it in you to come clean then.You didn't

even feel guilty about keeping such a secret from us.How

do you sleep at night?"

Tyrone was agitated."Of course she sleeps like a dead

person with no worries at all."He shouted.

"I'm sorry Tyrone.I'm so sorry my children." She cried.

"Leave mom please.You have already done enough

damage.You deserve everything that's coming for you."I

said and Danileigh walked out with her.

"I can't believe she did this to us.How can a mother be so

evil to her own children.Now she ruined our family.She

ruined everything because of her secrets and lies. We will

never get the chance to see our father again. I hate her

Treet. I hate her right now." He was a mess and I could feel

his pain. A lot has happened and now having to know that

my biological father was dead was just too much to take

in. The pain was too much but I didn't have tears left to cry

anymore.

"We should find the family. We deserve to know our roots

and they deserve to know about our existence too." I said.

"You think they will accept us. We are a product of an affair." Tyrone said.

I sighed. "If they are going to accept us or not it's up to them but we have to find them."

He nodded his head. "Ok fine let's do this."

LINDANI

The version of me that you're going to create in your mind is not my responsibility.

"I'm still being very nice here Jake but I ain't playing with

you.I want my money and I want it now.I gave you two weeks to get your shit together. We both know you're going broke but you promised to make a plan and get me back all the money you owe me.If you don't have the money then give me your territories."

He spat some blood on the ground. "You know I can't give you my territories.I said I will give you back your goddamn money Scar stop being so hot headed.We came a long way.Come on." He shouted and my men laughed.

I scoffed and gave him a jaw breaking punch."Ok you begged me to give you a loan and I did.I want my money back you can't give it to me?On top of that you have been stealing from me.Now that I want your territories as compensation you tell me shit and grow some balls.Who do you think you're messing with huh?Your grandma?Nigger I ain't your grandma that you borrow shit from and not pay back.Steal cookies from and get away with it.Now here is the thing I'm taking your territories.My

people are going to work there from today onwards. Tell
your dogs to leave my territory and if you dare disrespect
me again by stealing from me. I'm sending a bullet right
through your baby mama's head and the baby she is
carrying is not even yours. She is leaving your sorry broke
ass for another rich nigger. I don't blame her though the
diamonds on your neck are not even real. I'm only sparing
you today for old times sake but you go tell your dogs right
away to get off my territory before I come there myself." I

barked.

"But Scar come on please. That was my only territory

left. That was my only means of survival" He begged.

"You're a man you will always have a backup plan. Now

leave." I cocked my gun and pointed at him. He ran out

immediately.

Lwandile laughed his lungs out. "You're cunning Scar. So

you gave him some money knowing he was broke and he

wouldn't be able to pay you back so that you can get his

territories. A fox has nothing on you."

I shrugged. "A man gotta do what a man gotta do."

Lisa walked into the cabin in a Blackwidow mode. She was

really angry. "I'm gonna teach those petty gangsters a

lesson. Who do they think they are undermining us like

that? They are killing our dealers Scar we gotta do

something. They got five of our best guys. I'm telling you

the only language those animals understand is an eye for

an eye." She roared.

"We are not starting a war Blackwidow. Let them be. I will teach them a lesson myself. They are petty gangsters they have no idea who they are messing with. I will pay the leader a visit. Besides we can't waste our resources on them. We might possibly have the DEA (Drugs Enforcement Administration) on our ass if the men on the street decide to talk. We have to be ready so the last thing I want is a war with petty thugs. Let's discuss the missions of the day and state of our activities. So what do you think guys? Our

merchandise goes to Botswana and Namibia tomorrow

and another one flies to Mexico the following week?"Every

men in the room nodded.It was twenty of them.I liked to

keep things moving not to let our merchandise sit for too

long.We had gotten our huge merchandise in Columbia

from our supplier and I wanted it to get out very

quickly.Despite the fortune we paid to the police and some

government officials I knew better than to let the

merchandise stay in the warehouse longer than it had to.It

was too risky.

Leon studied the plan that was laid out on the table. "I don't see why we can't send both merchandise at once. Why wait till the following week for Mexico? "

"You know how difficult it is to fly in the powder. We are using Carlo's resources here. His jet and shit. That is costly so we need to plan carefully so that we won't be doublecrossed. So next week it is. Now let's talk about the locals." Lisa said. As we discussed the details and

mechanics of our plan. Four of my men walked into the cabin awaiting for instructions. After I had assigned them two others came and I gave them their task. I continued dispatching them to their operations until they were all gone.

"Now that is done and dusted. Let's call it a day. Remember we have to meet the Khumalos later tomorrow don't be late."

Lwandile sighed in total frustration. "I don't have the

energy for those people but what can we do. This Delia

mess needs to be sorted."

"Yea right. So long gentleman." I walked out of the

cabin, went into my car and drove home.

Sometimes we have to do terrible things to survive. I was

13 when my father was shot on the head right in front of

me. Believe you me a neurologist doesn't know all the parts

of the brain like I do. His brain scattered on the tarred road

just after he was shot, its not a good sight. He was a police

man, a shady one. You know those kind of policemen who steal the docket for the bad guys and make them disappear for money. Yep that was my father. His shadiness brought extra money for the family though. However one day he messed with the wrong guys and that got him into trouble. We had gone for a walk when suddenly a car halted in front of us, two guys with balaclavas came out and they shot him. They were merciful enough to spare me but that was their biggest

mistake because I came after them years later. With my father dead things became very difficult. My mother had a mental breakdown. She couldn't cope. After our father died our relatives took all the money from the life insurance that father had left us. We had to move away from where we lived because we couldn't afford the rent and it was no longer safe but living in shacks under the bridges of Johannesburg was worse. Lwandile was just 7 by then. Lisa and Lindy were 3. My mother was having mental

problems so she was behaving like a 5 year old kid that

meant I had four children to father at the age of 13.I

started looking for piece jobs but who would want to

employ a child when child labour is against the law.I

couldn't find a job for months and we had to live under a

bridge in shacks

feeding on scraps.Until one day a boy my

age approached me.He was one of Gentleman's errands

boy.During that time Gentleman was the notorious drug

dealer in town. He took me to him. I remember vowing not to ever sell drugs for a living. My father was a cop and I looked up to him. I wanted to wear the blue uniform one day and catch the bad guys. The future is uncertain. When I was brought to Gentleman and realized what being an errand boy meant I was disgusted by it. When I was about to walk out the door Gentleman said "Sometimes you gotta do terrible things to survive. It's called hustling. A man gotta do what a man gotta do." While standing on the door

I then remembered that I had a family to take care of and mouths to feed. I had to place my morals aside and hustle for them, for us to survive. That's how it all started. I became an errand boy for Gentleman. I would go to clubs, Chisanyama's, schools and sell drugs like cocaine, heroine, ketamine and xanax. I wasn't proud of what I did and I'm still not proud of it but I had to do what I had to do for my family. I was really good with the selling that Gentleman promoted me to delivering to other bigger

clients since he was the supplier. I would be given bricks to sell for \$8500 dollars. Gentleman would take the \$8000 and share the remaining \$500 to us, his delivery boys. So the three of us had to share the \$500. This wasn't fair. We did the donkey work. We dodged bullets and ran away from the men in blue while he just sit there in his office with his big stomach, drinking some expensive whisky and collecting the money. I started stealing from him. I would take some of the drugs from the bricks he gave us and

make my own small bricks then I would sell them for \$350
to small clients. It went on for a long time till I managed to
make my first profit of \$5500. Then he found out I was
stealing from him. That was the worst day of my life. He
took me to his warehouse to teach me a lesson I would
never forget. He did a good job at that because whenever I
look at the mirror I always remember Gentleman piercing
his knife on my forehead and dragging it all the way to my
chin. He made two stripes on the right side my face. I was

lucky he didn't touch my eye.I wasn't going to survive it.He
skinned me like an animal and I had to live with the scars
for the rest of my life.They became a barge to show that
I'm a survivor.

I did not stop working for him however nor did I stop
stealing from him.I was stubborn like that.I worked for him
for two more years and managed to buy my family a
house,fed them and send my siblings to school.He found
out again that I was stealing from him and that day I found

him holding Lisa who was just five years old by that
time.He wanted to rape her to teach me a lesson but i
wasn't going to let him.I fought him until I managed to
shoot him using his gun.I don't blame Lisa for becoming a
killing machine.She witnessed it and its me to blame for
the way she turned out but all I was trying to do was to
protect her.They say the first kill is always the hardest but
I felt nothing at all.I didn't even have the post murder
tension. I slept like a baby that day.Strange I know.With

Gentleman dead I installed fear in his men and the scars
on my face worked in my favour. I was 15 when I took over
Gentleman's business and started running the streets. That
is how I earned my nickname Scar. I became a hustler, a
businessman in my own right. Gentleman had dealings
around the country and exported literally tones of cocaine
to neighboring countries. I found out about all of this when
I took over. And when I did I had to prove myself that I
would do better than him and I had to earn some respect. I

got my hands even more dirty. People in the business became afraid of me. The police thirsted for my blood. My operations were clean but I had been in and out of jail only because I wanted to be in there. Sometimes you have to go inside the box for business reasons. I infiltrated their system and planted my people in the police force. They are some really shady guys in there.

Growing up I never wanted to be a drug dealer and own one of the biggest cartels in the country. I had dreams too. I

wanted to be a degree holder one day and of course
become a Sargent or better yet a Captain but with the way
my life turned out I only managed to have the matrics
certificate with five distinctions. I couldn't proceed with
school. Once you're in that life there is no out. You only
leave in a body bag and that's how it works.

Our relatives after knowing about our development that's
when they came demanding that my mother marries our
uncle. Mom didn't have the energy to fight so she gave

in. That's how we ended up reuniting with my money
hungry relatives. Despite my life being a mess and less
enjoyable I met the love of my life. My late wife Ariana. She
was into the life too despite her family being filthy rich. She
just loved the thrill that comes with it. I was impressed and
attracted to her on the first hit. There is just something
badass woman that I loved. Also the fact that she knew
what I did for a living made things easier for me. We hit it
off pretty quick and we had our son Sipho. I had to do right

by her and son so I married her. Who said a drug dealer
can't have a family? I knew I could protect them so there
was nothing to be afraid of.

Years passed and my siblings graduated with fancy
degrees. Lwandile was business minded so I helped him
start his construction company. I gave him the capital and
invested. Like always he impressed and the company was
a success. I became one of the major shareholders too Not
that I needed the shares. The company was my font. Saying

that I was an entrepreneur wasn't cutting it

anymore. People were starting to raise their eyebrows. My

siblings however knew about my dealings and no matter

how much I warned them about how dangerous the life is

they joined in the dealings too.

"Hey you're back. I left your food in the microwave." Delia

said when I arrived at home. She was walking on eggshells

whenever I was around. I ignored her because one more

minute with her I would do the unthinkable and I didn't

want the blood of Ariana's sister on my hands and of my
child's. Yep Delia was Ariana's little sister. When Ariana died
with her father in an accident I was left in a bad
shape. Siphos was just four and I didn't know what to do or
how to take care of him in Ariana's absence. My mother to
help took care of Siphos for me till he was ten that's when
the Khumalos started demanding that I marry Delia so
that their grandson will be well taken care of. The fact that
I had also slept with Delia on one of my bad days didn't

work in my favour.The Khumalo's used that against me.I

respected Ariana even in her death and I knew what I have

done was wrong.I had to make it right even if it meant

marrying Delia.That is how Delia and I ended up being

engaged.Now that I had found out she was abusing my

son.No marriage was going to take place.

The following morning I woke up and got ready to meet

the Khumalo's.Delia had no idea that I had organized a

family meeting and I wanted to keep it that way.I wanted it

to be a surprise because she thought maybe I had forgiven her after all that she did to Sipho. The nerve of that bitch. She was even making wedding preparations. I ordered her to get in the car and she obliged. I drove to Lwandile's place and picked him up as well as my uncle that's when she started panicking. I drove to her place and now she was even sweating. When we arrived they started reciting the clan names which I found unnecessary since it was not a friendly visit. In the family meeting from her side

it was her two uncles,two aunts and her mother.

"Delia my dear.Let's go make tea for our guest." The aunts

took her away.After exchanging pleasantries it was time to

say why I have called the meeting.I kept quiet as my uncle

dropped the bomb on them.

"Hawu Zulu why do you want to stop the wedding. I

thought everything was going just well."

I held my hands in respect. "With all due respect the

Khumalos. When you brought the idea that I should marry

Delia it was because you were worried about your grandson and you wanted him to have a mother figure in his life after the death of my wife and his mother Ariana. I agreed to it because I also wanted a mother for my son and Delia seemed perfect for the role since Siphos is her sister's child. I also agreed because I had committed a crime by seeking comfort from Delia. Unfortunately not so long ago I found out that from the time Delia came into my life she has been abusing my son physically. I cannot

marry her because the main reason she was in my life to begin with was for Sipho to have a mother. She failed to be a mother to my son so I'm not marrying Delia. If I have to pay a fine for having her warm my bed after Ariana's death then I will but I'm not marrying her."

They all gasped in shock. They called Delia for interrogation and she admitted to her crimes.

She knelt in front of me. "But I said I'm sorry please. I will do better and I'm even carrying your child Lindani you can't do

this to us."

"Yes I know you're pregnant.You're showing Delia.I kept quiet for six months because I didn't want to stress you during your first trimester.I know you're carrying my child and I'm going to take full responsibility of it.Sadly if you thought you were going to trap me into marriage with a baby that is where you got it all wrong.I'm going to pay damages for my child and do all the things necessary but I'm not going to marry you.And please the Khumalo's don't

use the "child out of wedlock" card on me because its not going to work.I will do right by my child and take full responsibility.That will be all."

They couldn't disobey my wishes especially with the fact that Delia had abused Sipho so when the meeting was over I left Delia there and went with my uncle to his place.I had to take my son back home now that this mess was sorted.He was happy to see me and when I told him I was taking him back home and that it would be the two of us he was even more ecstatic.

"Dad I have to tell Mj this news.I have to tell her.She is going to be happy" He jumped up and down.All eyes were on me and I cleared my throat.Just mentioning her name made my heart pound so hard and fast.

Shit!!!

28

MAJESTY

Trouble in paradise.

"I'm sorry." He said. I kept quiet and continued packing his

clothes moving around the walk in closet. He followed me

like a lost puppy.

"I'm sorry I shouldn't have behaved the way I did. I

shouldn't have said what I said. I'm sorry babe please you

have been angry at me for two days now. Please forgive

this foolish guy. I can't stand this silent treatment

anymore."

After we came back from the hospital. I was too angry and

hurt to talk to him.I'm sure there was a foul play on the

"olive oil" saga because with Girly's food I double checked

the ingredients before cooking for her.She was a picky

eater so I had to be extra careful about what I prepared for

her..I didn't use olive oil.I was hundred percent sure.I

ignored him because I had no power to keep on telling him

that I didn't use olive oil when he didn't believe me.He

started apologizing from that day we came from the

hospital but I was having none of it.

"Majesty I'm sorry. Shout at me, scream at me but please

don't be quiet. I can't stand the silent treatment" He held

my hands and I yanked him off.

"You know what hurt the most is that you looked at me like

I was a serial killer who attempted to murder your

child. How many times did Girly sleep over at my place

before we got married? How many times did I cook for

her? I looked after that little girl since she was a baby. I know everything about that child and I love her like she is my own. I would never make that mistake. She is a picky eater and I double check everything I prepare for her. I did not use olive oil. I don't even remember the last time I used it in this house. Ethan I'm not angry because you said what you said. Anyone in your shoes could have said the same or even worse. I understand it was the matter of your child's life and you just lost your father. However for you

not believe me that's what hurts. You have known me for years Eth. You know very well that if I make a mistake I own up to it and apologize. And you said a lot of hurtful words Ethan but I understand. Now leave me alone I need to finish this up."

"I'm sorry Majesty. I'm so sorry my wife please forgive me. I was just scared and I'm sorry I said hurtful things to you in the moment. Please forgive me." He cupped my face and pouted.

I forced a smile. "It's okay"

"At least you smiled. Can we stop fighting already. I hate it when we fight."

"Now can I show mommy some love." He wiggled his eyebrows.

I sighed folding the clothes "I'm tired Ethan."

He licked his lower lip and held my waist. "Please mommy come on."

"Fine." I had to lay there and take it like a good wife. Sex

with Ethan was nothing but work, a duty that I had to fulfill

because of the vows I had made. I was stuck with him until

death do us apart. I missed passionate sex. Even the

mediocre sex I received from men I would never call

again. It just wasn't working for me that I was opening my

legs for Ethan. It was weird and disturbing as a result I

never got to enjoy it. My coping mechanism was picturing

Treet but it wasn't cutting it anymore. What Treet and I had

was slowly fading from my memory so it was hard to

convince my body even to reach a weak orgasm.I had to

fake it.I lay there feeling such emptiness and the sorrow

nearly swallowed me whole.I had made the wrong

decision and there was no one to blame but myself.I tried

to remind myself that it could be worse.At least I had Gily

to brighten my day and I still had my company.

When he was done with me his mood changed.Everything

was back to normal.The glow on his face was something

you couldn't miss.In his mind our marriage had find its

footing. Such a depressing thought.

"I see you guys talked things out." Mrs Jaji said busy

knitting a scarf for Girly.

Ethan smiled and winked at me."Yes we did and it was

amazing."

She laughed."When has talking ever been amazing. I see

you."She gave us both stern looks while laughing.Maka

walked in.God knows where she has gone.She just said a

low "hello" and went to her room.Well I guess she was on

her periods. Women tend to have those moods for no reason at that time of the month. That was the only explanation for her foul mood.

"Mommy I'm hungry." Girly walked into the room while rubbing her eyes. I lifted her and made her sit on my lips. Thank goodness the red spots were finally fading.

"Daddy and I are going to make food for you okay. Right daddy." I looked at Ethan who just smiled. We went to the kitchen. I carefully sat Girly on her high chair. I took all the

olive oil in the kitchen and poured it in the sink.

"And then?" Ethan asked.

I shrugged."No more olive oil in this house or anything with

olives including spices.The last thing I want is to be

accused of something."

"Babe I said I'm sorry.Are you still angry?" He looked

worried.

"I'm not angry.I'm just being extra careful.We don't want

that accident to happen again now do we."He

sighed, kissed my forehead and apologized again for his

behavior. I told him it was fine. I had forgiven him. We

cooked for lunch together singing along to some old

school songs we used to love back in the day. We dished

out for everybody. Mrs Jaji even complemented the food

but Maka just ate two spoons and said she wasn't that

hungry.

"So mom I will be going back to work starting from

Monday." I thought it was necessary for me to inform her. I

didn't want a situation whereby I would just wake up and leave without her knowing. She had to know some of these things since she was now staying with us.

"Why? I thought since you're married now you would focus more on taking care of your family than going to work. You guys are newly weds aren't you supposed to like spend more time together?" She asked.

"Mom Majesty will have to go back to work one day and I think it's high time she does. It's been six months. This was

a longest leave she had and as the owner she isn't supposed to take this long without going to work. Anyway I just had a message from Alfred one of my friends they invited me for a game. Is it ok babe if I go or I should just turn them down and spent the rest of the day with you." He winked.

I giggled. "Go watch your game you silly man."

"Ok love you guys. So I will be back at 5." He didn't even

change his clothes. He just took his car keys and left. Man

and soccer.

I cleared the table with Mrs Jaji helping me out. Girly was strapped on my back because the medication made her sleepy.

"I see you still have a lot to learn." She said sitting on the kitchen chairs while I loaded the plates into the dishwasher.

"What are you saying maa?" I stopped what I was doing and looked at her attentively.

"I'm talking about marriage. You still have a lot to learn about marriage. There are certain things that you have to compromise as a wife. Looking at me you think I was just a stay at home mom? Do you think I didn't have enough money to hire a nanny for Ethan? I had my own shop and I worked hard and I was close to being a businesswoman. I had dreams and I was working towards to achieve my dreams but when I married Ethan's father that changed. As women we are supposed to compromise in certain

situations even though we don't want to. I gave up that dream and Ethan's father took over my shops and things turned out very well. You and Ethan are very good business minded people and you're on the same level. You two are very ambitious. However the difference is that you're the wife and at some point you have to cower in your marriage and let him be the man. There can't be two bulls in one kraal. I'm not saying give up on your hardwork entirely but I'm saying you should give Ethan the authority. He is good

at business and he will look after yours too. After all you have done business together and you know how good he is. At the end you guys are one person. What's his is yours, what's yours is his." She said.

I went and tucked Girly under covers since she was already fast asleep. Then I went back to my mother in law to tell her my thoughts on the issue she had just raised.

"I beg to differ maa. You were right when you said what's his is mine what's mine is his. How about I go and take

over his company. Will that be okay? Of course not because I'm a woman right. Why is it that women are the ones who are always expected to compromise? Why can't men do the same? Isn't it unfair for you to expect me to compromise my business because I'm a woman and I'm a wife? What happened to gender equality again? If it is ok for a woman to give up her dreams for the sake of marriage why can't men do the same as well? I have sacrificed a lot and let's not forget this marriage was a compromise to

begin with. Its high time things change. We can't always talk about gender equality without practising it. Its time the theory is put into practise. I have married your son not because I wanted to but because I had to comprise. I had to save my business and now you want me to abandon it. That's not fair."

"Dear even the bible says the man is the head of the family.

Yes you might preach about gender equality as much as

you want but deep down as a woman you know your

role. You really can't expect your husband to wash and iron

your clothes right. It's very wrong and if that can't happen it

means no matter how much you preach about gender

equality it will never fully apply into our day to day lives. It's

ok for you to go all feminism while you're outside the

house but once you come back into the house you wear a

head wrap because you're a wife and you're a woman. A lot

of women out there are losing their husbands out there

because this idea of equality rubbed them off the wrong

way. I'm helping you out here because I have been married and I know how it is. I have experience. I'm not asking you to give all the company rights to Ethan but give him the authority. You being submissive will only make him feel more like a man and trust me when you give men the respect they want your marriage will be blissful."

I sighed. "I hear you maa but I'm sorry I can't give up my hard work. Me and you are different people. You gave up everything you worked hard for because you wanted to but

I have been an independent woman and you can't expect me to start relying on Ethan because I'm a woman. There are a lot of ways to respect him but giving him what I worked hard for is not one of the ways. After all he is ok with me going to work. He even knows how much I love what I do. I can't be a housewife and a stay at home mom or I will lose my mind."

"Just think about it hey. Imagine you coming back from work exhausted. Who is gonna take care of his needs? Let's

not even talk about the business trips. Where you have to go for days. Will Ethan be ok with you being away like that. I didn't wanna say this Majesty but you have a past which is not really good. Don't you think at one point Ethan will be worried thinking you have gone back to your old ways. Do what you feel is right but I was just helping out here." She went to her room.

Yes whatever she said made sense but it clashed with what I believed in. Yes men and women have their gender

roles but it doesn't mean because I'm a woman I have to sacrifice what I worked so hard for just to make a man happy and keep a marriage. After all Ethan was ok with me going to work. So I was going back to work finish and klaar.

On Monday I woke up early and prepared breakfast for Ethan and me. After that we showered together and left for work. Ethan actually drove me to work and promised to pick me up after. Same old, same old I had a lot to do it has been a long time since I have been to work. Yes Mary did a

good job but there was some things which needed me personally so there was a lot to do from signing contracts,doing interviews, meetings with clients and meeting with my tech guys.

Later in the day Ethan called and told me that he was very busy too.He wasn't going to be able to fetch me from work as planned because he was going to come back home late.He was going to send me a chauffeur.Well that's why I wanted to drive myself in the first place.The following

days we were both very busy and we would come back home very exhausted. I guess Mrs Jaji's words came to pass but I wasn't going to give up my hard work. The busy days were temporary anyway. Its not like we were going to be forever busy.

"You have a meeting with Mrs Alin she insisted that you guys have your meeting over lunch instead." Petty said.

I sighed in exhaustion. "My God I just want to sleep right now. This is exhausting. Fine I will meet up with her just tell

to text me the place she wants us to meet."

"Okay no problem."

A while later she texted me the place she wanted us to meet. Thankfully it wasn't far because I was so strained. We had our meeting and it turned better than I had anticipated.

Mrs Alin was an ambitious woman and we had a lot in

common so it was very easy for us to click. She had

another meeting to attend to so she quickly left after

apologizing for not being able to stay till the lunch was

over. I was left behind finishing my food.

I felt his presence and tensed up. Lord God please let it

not be him. I did a silent prayer but I guess God didn't

answer my prayer this time around. I stopped eating and

wiped my mouth. He sat opposite me and stared on my

ring for a while without saying a word. I wanted to leave

right away but it's like I was stuck on my seat. I looked at

him and he didn't look at all. I felt bad because I knew

this was because of me. His hair had grown now and it

was tied into a man-bun.He was unshaved and even though the beard looked good on him I knew he didn't have time to shave which meant he wasn't taking good care of himself.The eye bags and darkcircles were a confirmation that he wasn't getting some good sleep either.

"Hey Jesty

Advertisement

saw you around and decided to come and say hello.How have you been." Treet said and smiled sadly.

I bit my lower lip fighting back my tears that were

threatening to come out. "I have been ok Treet. How have

you been."

He sighed and kept quiet while going through the menu. He

ended up ordering sparkling water.

"It has been hell Majesty. How are you doing it

huh? Managing to keep it together and looking good like

nothing happened. You don't even look stressed and it

seems you sleep like a baby everyday. Did I mean nothing

to you that you easily forgot about me in a matter of a few months. Tell me how you're doing it because I'm struggling here."

"Treet please let's not go there.."

"No I need to know. How you can easily act like I never existed? Did you ever love me Majesty or the sex was just good that you thought you did when in reality you didn't."

He asked with his eyes glistening with tears.

"Treet can we not do this at least not here" I sighed.

He chuckled bitterly. "What? You want a private place."

"No I'm a married woman now. I can't go to a private place especially with you."

He chuckled again and shook his head. "You're mine

Majesty. I love you. You're supposed to be with me not him. I

love you woman. You are the center of my universe but you

were taken away from me. If that's the game I'm going to

take you away too from that best friend of yours." He stood

up and before I could stop him he perked my cheek and

walked out. I never expected to see him again so it took me time to gather my composure and when I did I walked out of the restaurant with my emotions all over the place. When I went back to work I was absent minded and I just decided to go back home because I was not doing anything right anymore. When I arrived at home I didn't chat with Mrs Jaji like we usually do. I just went straight to the kitchen and started preparing dinner to get my mind off things.

"You're just playing with your food what's wrong" Ethan

asked looking worried. Everyone looked at me.

"No I'm just a little bit exhausted that's all." I lied.

"I have also noticed that you have been absent minded

since you came back from work. I don't know how many

times I called you but you didn't even hear me. Is

everything okay. What's bothering you?" Mrs Jaji asked

looking concerned.

"I'm fine you have to believe me." I said and tried to eat but

I ended up feeling nauseous. I ran to the nearby bathroom and vomited my lungs out. Ethan came and started brushing my back while my stomach emptied the unwanted contents.

"Are you ok." He asked. I nodded and washed my mouth.

"I'm just gonna go and lie down for a little bit." I went upstairs and threw myself on the bed. Seeing Treet that day just messed me up emotionally and mentally. Ethan came later on and joined me.

"How was your day?" He asked brushing my back.

"It was ok but a but exhausting."

His phone rang indicating that a message came

through.He stopped brushing my back and checked his

phone.His breathing escalated and I knew something was

wrong.I turned and looked at him.He was angry.He got off

the bed and started pacing.

"Are you ok Ethan?" I asked getting off the bed.

"Majesty where were you today and who were you

with?"He asked.

"I was at work today and I had a meeting with a client at a restaurant why are you asking?"

He sat down in frustration and showed me his phone."Is this the client you're talking about.Did you fuck him?."

It was a picture of Treet when we was giving me a perk on the cheek.Who even took that picture?

"What?Its not what it looks like Ethan.I really did meet my client then he just showed up.I really didn't have any

intentions of meeting up with him."

He sighed and sat down."This man is the same person

who you left for me.This is the man that you loved and I

will not be surprised if you still have feelings for him.Now

there is this picture of him perking you and you allowed

him to.Did you fuck?Why did you meet up with me in the

first place?Tell me how to react to this.If you were in my

shoes what were you going to do huh?"

I sat down and buried my head in my hands.God why me

again.

"I didn't fuck the guy Ethan.Jesus we were in a

restaurant.Even if we weren't I wasn't going to because I'm

your wife now." I shouted.

LINDANI

Everything I wanted.

"I don't get why you don't want Sipho to talk to Majesty

anymore.The kid is upset Lindani and here you're acting all

hot headed." Lindy gawked at me.

"Majesty is married. I don't think it's appropriate for him to call her that too every now and then."

Well the truth is I just couldn't stand the fact that my body reacted just by hearing her voice and to think that she wasn't mine to have it hurts. The first time I laid my eyes on her something in me that was dead along with Ariana came back to life. I felt the anger burning in me when those French rascals were manhandling her. They were lucky I didn't put a bullet through their skulls because I didn't want

to scare her.

"Its just a call between Sipho and her.Its not like she is

talking to you." Lisa said drinking my whisky.We were

having a brunch at the family house.

"Who is this Majesty anyway. I'm sick and tired of hearing

that name over and over again.Majesty this Majesty

that....is she some goddess or something..." Thokozile

said and I gave her a death stare.

"I'm sorry it came out wrong." She said and kept quiet.

Lisa laughed. "Yep it sure did come out wrong and from today onwards I will be very careful about what I say if I were you especially when it concerns Majesty. That woman maybe your sister in law one day so start loving her already. You know what happens when you don't right."

"That woman is married Lisa she will never be your sister in law. She has her own life stop dreaming." Lindy said wiggling her eyebrows at me. I see she wanted to test me.

Lisa shrugged. "When has a wedding ring ever stopped

Scar from getting what he wants. You forgot his history with women after Ariana right? Married, single, in a serious relationship, black, white, stripped, Chinese, Nigerians this brother here had them all. He crossed every moral line. The ring meant nothing to him. I might have hated Delia but I think she did play a big role in stopping this nigger from whoring around. I will give her some credit for that."

"Majesty doesn't need his drama. Leave the poor girl alone." Martha said.

I sighed and gulped down my whisky. She was right no woman in their right senses would want to put up with my drama. I had a lot on my plate and a lot of baggage that followed me around. The last thing I wanted was endangering her life too. Only Ariana could dodge bullets but as for Majesty that was a different story. So I ditched the idea of paying her a visit.

"I'm here you know."

Mom walked in and gave me a stern look. "Why is Siphon

upset?"

"Not you too mom. I forbade him from talking to Majesty."

She folded her arms. "Why?"

"Because he is crazy in love with her. I didn't see this day coming. After Ariana he vowed not to ever fall in love but here we are."

"Who said I'm in love with her."

Mom chuckled. "You don't need to say it everyone can see it. Bad timing my boy."

"There is a season for everything." I murmured under my breathe.

"Talking about Majesty.I had a disturbing dream about her.She was in a middle of storm and she was all alone.I have a bad feeling about it.I'm going to give her a call and tell her to pray.I have this sick feeling in my stomach ever since I woke up." Mom said and that send me straight to panic mode.Her dreams always meant something.She was a dreamer if I may say.She picked up bad vibes and

her gut instinct was unfailing.

Martha looked worried too. "Talking about that. On the day

of her wedding she wasn't happy. I found her in the room

crying and they weren't tears of joy."

"Who wouldn't be happy on their wedding day?" Zara

walked into the room joining the conversation as

well. Between her and her sister she was the good one.

"She didn't give us the full details but the reason why she

was in Paris was to unwind. Apparently she had to choose

between her lover and the man she is married to now. So she chose the latter because had she chosen her lover she was going to lose her company something like that."

"And you're telling me that now. Who the hell is this guy she is married to? Did you check him out? Is he legit?" I shouted.

Lisa shook her head. "Calm your nuts big guy. This ain't one of your clients. The husband is her best friend since diapers. It was a marriage of convenience. She wasn't

happy yes but this is her best friend and yes the guy is

super clean. So no digging dirt on him. Even if you do find dirt on him what will you do huh? Get your big self in Majesty's house and demand she divorces him. It's clear you love her we all know that but it's bad timing. She is not yours. Besides Majesty needs a stable guy and I guess her husband is that for her. She can't put up with your drama. I mean no woman would. On top of that you have Delia as your baby mama. You should just stay single bro and stick to them hoes because that chick is going to make your life

miserable especially after she gives birth.I foresee some

baby mama drama shame."

Mom sighed."She is right.You were a little bit too late son.I

will talk to Majesty and ask her to pray."

"What if her life is in danger?" I asked.

"Then call her and ask her yourself." Lindy shrugged.

I sighed."I can't talk to her and you all know that."

"Exactly now stop being so worked up.I was actually

chatting with her on WhatsApp so don't worry.Besides its

a good thing she is married I don't want to be her makoti

by default.Prince and I have a serious thing

going."Everyone in the room laughed at Lisa because she

couldn't even stay for two weeks in a relationship. Who

would want to put up with a tomboy for a girlfriend?Her

longest relationship lasted for three weeks and we popped

the champagne for that.I couldn't stop being worried about

Majesty though.Now that mom mentioned her dream it

got worse.

"God I know I'm the last person you expect to hear from

but just keep her safe for me."

29

MAJESTY

Is that a bun in the oven.

"Ethan you have to believe me.I went to that restaurant to meet a client.You can ask Petty if you want to.Treet just showed up out of nowhere.And about the perk.He caught me off guard.I thought he was about to leave when he just kissed my cheek.Ethan you married me knowing about my past alright and you knew very well that at one point it would come knocking on our door.I married you didn't

I?Despite knowing everything about me you still promised
to always trust me.I need you to trust me and to not
always jump to conclusions without hearing the whole
story.Treet is in my past and you know it.That chapter of
my life is closed I'm with you now.I need you to trust me
because without trust we won't be going anywhere.The
way things are happening between us its like we are
moving two steps forward and then take five steps
backwards.Trust is what is important and without it we

won't go anyway. Can you do that much for me and learn to trust me because my loyalty lies in you now. This thing of going back and forth with you lacking trust in me every chance you got is starting to drain me. If you don't trust me then let me go. I hate running in circles."

He sighed and nodded his head. "I'm sorry. It's just that I can't stop thinking that one day you might just up and leave. I can't stop thinking that you might leave me for him. I don't want to lose you. It will drive me nuts. Honestly I

feel threatened by Treet. That man meant a lot to you and

seeing him with you again makes me loose my screws. I

have loved you for a long time and had always watched

you falling for other people while I was there by your side

but you never noticed me. I can't stop the feeling that even

now that I have you I might loose you. You were so absent

minded today and it was because you were thinking of him

right. What am I supposed to do huh? Just keep quiet and

ask no questions."

I sighed and sat down. "Treet should not be a threat. I chose you over him and that's what matters. Whoever sent you that picture tell him/her to go get a life and stop creating misunderstandings. It is not what it looks like period. Being insecure is not cute. I'm not cheating so there is no need for you to worry." I got into bed and dimmed my side lamp. He got under the covers too and we cuddled. Within a few moments I was off to lalaland that's how exhausted I was. The following morning I woke up and

ran to the bathroom and vomited.

"Are you okay?" Ethan asked brushing my back. I sat down

on the cold tiles because I was very tired from the

puking. He carried me back to the tub and bathed me

because I was that weak and exhausted.

"Maybe we should see the doctor. You shouldn't go to work

today."

"I will be fine. Maybe it's just that I didn't eat anything last

night. I have a lot to do at work. I cannot manage to be

absent.Its nothing serious I will handle it." I said.

"Are you sure.You're even heated up Majesty."

I protested."I said I'm going to work there is a lot to be

done.I will be fine.I just need something to eat. Stop

worrying your big head.I can handle it."

He threw his hands in the air."Don't bite my head off

babe.I'm just worried here but if you think you can manage

then fine you will go to work.I will be checking on you

every now and then though."

I couldn't protest to that so we both prepared for work. After having breakfast prepared by his mother he drove me to my work place.

"You look somehow." Mary commented.

"What are you trying to say?" I sat down and started going through the files that were on my table. It was a good thing that the clients were not demanding any new app. They were onto the ones we had already created or I was going to lose my mind thinking of ideas to impress them with.

"You're not well right and I don't know how to say this but you look like you have been hit by a train. " She sat down examining me.

"I'm fine Mary you don't have to worry about me."

"How is marriage treating you?"She asked.

"Its ok." I said.She tried making a conversation with me but realized I was not in the mood.As a matter a fact my head was aching with her voice constantly echoing in my head.I needed some peace and quietness.While she went on and

on about whatever the hell she was talking about I felt

nauseous and ran to the bathroom and my stomach

emptied the unwanted contents.

"A bun in the oven already?" She arched her eyebrow.

I sighed and sat down."Don't even go there Mary because

you will upset me.I'm not pregnant if that's what you're

thinking."

"You look pregnant." She said.

"How does a pregnant person looks like.You know

what? Leave me alone Mary. I could really appreciate some quietness right now." She looked at me sternly then left. I just didn't want to think about my failure to conceive but with Mary bringing it up like that I ended up stressing over it. I decided to bury myself in work to avoid overthinking.

"Hey you look busy." I lifted my head and Treet was leaning on the door with his hands in his pockets. Satan please not today.

I shook my head and stood up in frustration. "Please Treet

leave.I'm begging you.I don't want any problems in my life
okay.Your little episode yesterday costed me so please
don't make this worse by just showing up in my office like
you own the space.What are you doing here?What do you
want Treet?"

"I came to see you.I missed you." He made himself
comfortable and sat on the chair.He looked better than the
previous day.He was shaved and had a new haircut with
his curls tinted into copper brown which complimented his

skin tone.He looked good no lies.

I paced up and down."Jesus Treet!Will you just get this into your thick skull.I'm married now.Please don't make my life miserable.I have enough scandals to last me a lifetime please don't add to that by just coming here.We had our chance it didn't work out its time to move on."

He chuckled and shook his head."Is that true or you're trying to convince yourself that we are not meant to be because you're tied down to your best friend. You love me

and even a blind man can see that. Your marriage with that
douche is never going to work at least not on my watch. I'm
getting what's mine back understand. You're mine and no
one else's."

"Wake up from your dream boy. Majesty is no longer yours
to claim. She is with me and you're out of the picture."

Ethan walked in. I almost fainted. When did he even get
here?

He slowly walked towards me and kissed me then held my

waist.

Treet chuckled and shook his head."Marking my territory

huh.Message received but she is mine.Continue fooling

yourself thinking she will ever love you."He scoffed.

"She is no longer yours accept that and move on.And I

would really appreciate it if you stop popping into my

wife's life or we will be forced to take a restraining order

against you.It would save us a lot of paperwork and hustle

if you just cooperate.So please with your dignity still intact

leave." Ethan said.

Treet stood up and walked up to his face."You see Majesty

and I are fated.What do you think huh?After separating we

met again twelve years and it was just pure coincidence?If

I were you dear bestie I would wake up and smell the

coffee. This woman was made for me and if you think that

damn ring is going to stop me from getting her back you

have another thing coming. Her heart is with me and..."

"Ok stop Treet please.What the hell is wrong with..." Before

I could finish what I wanted to say I felt nauseous again

and ran to the bathroom. They both followed me.

I washed my mouth as they both kept hovering over

me."Treet leave please just go.Will you just leave me alone

please."I shouted.

He looked at me for a while without saying a word then

said "Are you pregnant?Is that my baby?"

What the fuck"Ok that's it I'm calling the security." I said

going to my landline.

"Fine I'm leaving. For now but I swear to God if you're carrying my child this douche over here is not going to get rid of me. Even if you're not pregnant a damn restraining order is going to stop me from getting back what belongs to me." He stormed out.

I sat down and buried my head into my hands. Ethan continuously brushed my back. "Should I take you to the hospital?" He asked.

"No I don't want to go to the hospital. And I know you want

to ask if I'm pregnant. I'm not pregnant. I think it's stress or I

ate something bad so don't stress yourself. Also I'm sorry

Treet ju--" I said.

"You don't have to explain I heard everything. He is a

psycho but did you sleep with him?"

"I didn't Ethan. If I was carrying his child I would have been

showing by now."

"Forgive me. Forget that I ever ask. Let's get going." He said

"I just need to finish a few things. I will leave after two

hours.You can come pick me up then." I said.He didn't

argue with me because he saw how foul my mood

was.After he just left I received a phone call from

Sipho.You should have seen the smile on my face.It has

been long since I talked to him and I realized how much I

had missed him.He was that sunshine on a cloudy day.I

answered and his face filled my screen.

"Hey baby." I smiled.

"You don't care about me anymore Majesty."He pouted.

"Of course I do care about you but a lot was happening lately. A lot was on my mind too. I forgot to check up on you. I'm sorry my dear." I said.

"Apology accepted. So I have good news. Finally Delia is not living with us Mj. It's only the two of us now and it's fun."

He smiled.

I smiled back. "That's amazing so this now means no one can lay a hand on you. Where is your dad by the way?" I asked.

"He is looking at me right now. Let me put him on the call."

He shifted and within a few seconds Lindani's face was all over the screen. There was a look on his face that I failed to explain.

"It's been long. How have you been? Are you ok? Did anything unusual happen? Heavens Majesty you don't even look ok? Talk to me what's going on?" I didn't understand why he was in panic mode all of a sudden. How did he tell I was not ok? Did I look that bad.

I sighed."I'm fine Lindani.Relax will you.And why are you asking me those questions anyway?"

He sighed."I was just worried okay.You should talk to my mom she had some strange dreams about you.So ever since she said so I haven't managed to calm down.I'm just worried about you.Are you sure everything is fine over there."Having him to worry about me like that just made me feel somehow.

"What dream Lindani.You're not making any sense."

He sighed and rubbed his forehead. "Majesty my mother's dreams often come true. Something bad might happen or is about to happen but you have to pray okay. She said you should pray because it's not good. Talk to her. Majesty please just tell me you're okay over there."

"I'm fine Lindani please don't worry. I will call your mom and talk to her. And I will definitely pray like she asked okay." I felt bad for not using the bible and praying like she asked me to. I have been too occupied with my own issues

and never thought about praying. As a matter of fact my relationship with God needed some serious mending because the last time I had a serious talk with that man up there was when Gift died. He scratched his head and looked at me for a while. He wanted to ask something but I could see he was hesitating.

"You can ask whatever you want to ask Lindani stop biting your lip like that you will hurt yourself."

He chuckled. "Okay fine umm Siphos wants to visit so is it

okay if I come with him. Next month. Don't worry about the accommodation. I will book a hotel for us and I will also bring with Lisa or Lindy." He said.

I thought for a while weighing the pros and cons of having Lindani to come over to see me with Siphos of course. I was in a bad shape already and a lot was happening as it is but this was Siphos and this big man we were talking about here. I had missed them.

"Fine you guys can come. Bring both the girls too I have

missed them."

He smiled."Cool then and thank you."

"Its okay you don't have to thank me.I have missed you

guys anyway.Now can I talk to Sipho."

He smiled and gave Sipho the phone.He was happy that he

was going to visit me and the feeling was mutual.I was

going talk to Ethan about it.He was my husband he had to

know right.We talked for a while before Mary decided to

intervene because apparently she had something

important she wanted to talk to me about.

"Call you later MJ." He said excitedly and dropped the call. I

had a smile on my face after the call.

"So who is making you smile like that after you have been
moody all day long."

"Its Sipho. Anyway why are you here?" I looked at her with
my eyebrow arched because I could see it on her face that
she was up to no good.

She placed a small box on my table. "I know you're about to

throw a fit and shout at me but this is important. This is a pregnant test as you can see and you are going to pee on it either you like it or you don't. I know you can preach to me about you not being able to conceive but miracles do happen you can ask Moses if you want. Also you look pregnant to me."

I shook my head. "Mary please can you stop pursuing on this matter will you. I'm not pregnant so stop please. I don't want to hurt myself so please Mary spare me on this one."

"Fine I'm leaving the pregnant test with you because you will need it at some point okay." She walked out.

Deep down I was starting to get worried about this.

Imagine if it would miraculously turn out that I was carrying Treet's baby. The drama that comes with it. I

convinced myself that I would never give birth so there was no possibility that I would be pregnant. I threw the pregnancy test into the bin.

TREET

The things we do for love.

"Are you even listening to me bro? I'm talking to you."

Tyrone snapped his fingers on my face. I was lost in my own world.

"Yes you were saying." I looked at him and he frowned.

"We are talking about something serious here. This is about finding our family and you're busy thinking about

Majesty. My God Treet can you please focus. Please this is important so I need your body and your mind in one place."

"Yea yea I know. What were you saying about hiring a PI?"

"That's the plan we are hiring a PI so that he could get us

enough information about the Khumalos because

apparently they moved from one place to another so its

going to be very difficult for us to find them in a snap. I

thought maybe because the father was a businessman

we would find something on the internet but I guess he

loved his privacy so there is nothing that can lead us to

them apart from his business and his achievements." He

said.

"They did mention his companies right. We may start from there. Just give the PI all the information we have found here. He will do the rest of his job after all. Find the best one in the field and I will pay him." I stood up and poured myself some scotch then gulped it in one go.

"Okay fine let's hope this will work and it will not lead us into running in circles. Now let's talk about the elephant in the room. What happened today? You just left. Where did

you go?Don't tell me you went to see Majesty."

I was now living with Tyrone.In fact he forced his behind into my house.I tried so much to convince him to give me my space but he said I was too broken so he had to be there with me through it all.He was afraid I would do something very stupid.Also since we were now looking for our paternal family he said it was important we do it together.They were just excuses so that he could live with me.We missed on so many years together because of

hatred so this was just an opportunity to mend our twinship. I didn't kick him out because deep down I knew I

needed company. The loneliness was starting to creep in.

I sighed." Yes I did went to see Majesty are you gonna

whip my ass because of that."

"Geez Treet give the girl a break. I understand whatever

that happened between you two was painful for you both. I

even loathed her at some point for breaking you but then

again maybe she didn't have a choice. But now Treet just

accept that she is no longer yours and move on. You know

that Majesty is not an object that you fight for. She is
married now and you being in her life and bothering her
like that will only torment her. Whatever that you're
planning think twice because it will also affect Majesty. I
understand that you love her like nobody's business but
sometimes even when someone is your soulmate it
doesn't always mean that you're meant to be
together. If she is really yours she will come back. If you're
meant to be it will be. If you're destined surely you will find

a way back to each other."Tyrone shook his head.

"Yes you're right if its meant to be it will be but also

remember that God helps those who help themselves.I

can't sit and do nothing waiting for God's plan.And maybe

this is a test for me to prove how much I love Majesty and

if I don't do anything I will fail.She didn't have a choice right

but I can do something right.I can help her that man has

nothing he can use on me like how he did on Jesty.She is

mine Tyrone that fool forced her to a corner so she didn't

have a choice but to marry his behind.Its clear she is not

happy with him.She is no longer the same Majesty I used

to know.Instead she looks drained

Advertisement

exhausted and

unhappy. I'm sure he is making her life miserable. I made a

mistake of letting her go the first time but this time around

I'm not letting her go.You should have seen how he

boasted over marrying her.Its like he felt he won a

competition.On top of that he talked about a restraining

order against me. Who the hell does he think he is trying to restrain me from seeing the love of my life?" I made a fatal mistake by letting Majesty go.

"The one who is taking everything as a competition now here is you. You want to compete with her husband because you think you have an upper hand since she loves you. Either she stays in that marriage or she doesn't it's up to her. You shouldn't interfere in that because right now you sound like a bitter person. And what is your plan

huh.Are you planning to make them fight and then

what?You walk in and save the day or you think Majesty

will run back to you.What is it that you're planning to do

huh?"

I threw myself on the couch."I don't have a plan yet but I

will have it soon.Look I have been in a loveless and toxic

marriage I know how it gets and I know it can affect

someone. Majesty is fragile and she will be even more hurt

if she stays in that marriage. She might think that she will

make it work with that douche but it won't happen when she still has strong feelings for me. I saw the way she looked at me. I studied her body language. I still have that effect on her. We are supposed to be together okay. And I also think she is pregnant."

"Geez Treet of course she still reacts to you because she is not yet over you and seeing you again made things worse but hey you should move on. You're not the first person this has happened to. So I guess if it happens that

she is actually pregnant you're hoping its your child." I

noded."So your stupid plan is you will force her out of the

marriage because she will be having your child."

"Well if she is pregnant and with my child I won't let

another man raise my blood.I already lost two children

with her.If she is actually pregnant and with my child she

will have to walk out of that damn marriage and be with

me because there is no damn way I will allow that man to

feed my child his damn sperms while I'm here.There is no

way I'm going to allow her to feed her cravings and attend checkups when she is carrying my seed.If it happens that she is pregnant and I'm hoping that's the case we will raise our kid together as a family."

"Man that's so psycho.What the hell is wrong with you?You know what?Right now I pray that it turns out she is not pregnant.That girl has too much drama to last her a lifetime and for you to plan to use your child as pawn is just so sick.Give that girl a break gosh."He was angry and I

was too because this was about a woman we both loved.

I clenched my jaws. "Ohh I see you. The fact is you're still in

love with her and you want her too. So if you can't have her

then I can't have her too that's your wish right. That is why

you're insisting that I stop fighting for what I love."

He shook his head in disbelief. "That is a low blow."

I sighed. "I'm sorry bro that was uncalled for."

"Hell yea it wasn't. You're slowly loosing it and the sad part

is you're not even realizing it. I'm not the enemy here

Treet. What do you think you think you're going to achieve

by doing what you're doing right now? You will lose

Majesty for good that is if you haven't already. In all this

mess that you're doing or planning to do it will only create

havoc in Majesty's life. Her husband saw you together

right? He is going to fight with Majesty and not you. Maj is

the one who is going to suffer for the consequences of

your stupid actions. Already there is a picture that is

circulating of you perking her and because you guys have

history people are starting to speculate that you're rekindling the flame. They are calling Maj names but on the picture its clearly you who was kissing Majesty. When you had your affair and it was revealed people called her names but they ignored the fact that you were a cheat in your marriage too. So every time you think of doing something which has Majesty involved first think about how its going to affect her because at the end of the day people will only point fingers at her. Treet if this marrige

between them doesn't work let it be not because of you.If

you get involved its going to be you at the receiving end.

Whatever the outcome it will affect you.If she divorces

him,she will only resent you for messing up the marriage

even though she doesn't love the guy.As it is their

marriage is not just a marriage because there is a lot to

consider here.You just sit back and let God's plan takes its

course.Get it together Treet or you will loose her forever

with this behavior of yours.If you really wanted to be

Jackie Chan and fight for what you love you should have done it the moment she told you about the marriage with Ethan but what did you do? Instead you drove out like a mad person and involved yourself into a damn accident. You had your chance that day to stop all this nonsense. Get your shit together man. Get your act together because I don't want to be the one to send you off to the mental asylum. We have a family to find here so get it together."

He walked out leaving me to think over what he said.

30

MAJESTY

A woman is like a teabag. You never know how strong she is until you put her in hot water.

"Its negative. I'm not pregnant. I told you so." I threw the pregnancy tests in the trashcan. After getting back from work Ethan insisted that I take a pregnant test. I was nervous about it but decided to just do it and it came out negative. Even though I knew I could never conceive having to relive that reality just pained me. Sometimes I

would wish for a miracle but the experts told me that my womb was scarred and I had a uterine abnormality. It was a miracle that I managed to carry Gift full term and gave birth naturally. Under these circumstances I was supposed to miscarry Gift during the first trimester. Well that explained why I miscarried the other twin. It was indeed a miracle that I gave birth to a normal baby once upon a time. Using Gift as evidence they said I had a slim chance to conceive but it was very slim which was close to no

chance at all. According to the experts I might have

developed the uterine abnormality after giving birth to Gift.

Also the scars caused by the miscarriages were not

working in my favour. Hence even with the 10,5% chance

that I had I was a barren woman. There was no difference.

"That was the only rational explanation for your foul mood

and continuous vomiting. If you're not pregnant then we

are going to the hospital to get you checked out because

there might be something wrong."

Arguing with him was a waste of time so I just let him take me to the hospital. The doctor didn't find anything wrong with me in fact I was as strong as an ox. The only rational explanation he gave was that maybe I was stressed or I had a stomach bug but he even checked everything and nothing was wrong.

"It doesn't make any sense. You're constantly exhausted and you vomit your lungs out and he says there is nothing wrong. I mean how can that make sense when just by

looking at you one can tell that you're not well."

"I'm fine just like the doctor said. You don't have to

worry. Maybe it was just a stomach bug and I'm constantly

tired because of work." We arrived home and dinner was

ready. I was famished because of the constant vomiting so

I ate quiet a lot.

"Thank you for the dinner maa it was amazing but I'm sorry

I'm not staying for some cookies and tea I really need to lie

down a little bit I'm just so exhausted."

She smiled."Its okay you can go rest my dear."

I just wanted to rest but Girly was having none of it so I

took her with me upstairs.I played the cartoon Home for

her while I rested.After a while she was asleep and Ethan

carried her to bed.

"How are you feeling now?" He asked brushing my back.

"I feel so exhausted. Ethan I think you should take my

position at work for a while.I don't think I can manage with

the way I'm feeling these days.You know everything,the

protocols and stuff. Just take my position for a while I'm not going to work tomorrow because now even lifting my finger is a struggle. I might have pushed myself too hard now its backfiring."

He sighed. "Can't Mary pitch in for you? I mean she is that good."

"I already tasked her for something else. She has some apps to create so she has a lot on her plate right now. You're my husband please do this for me. What's mine

is yours remember?"I yawned.

"Fine I will do it but you really have to get better.We are going to consult another doctor tomorrow to see if the first one missed something."

It didn't take long for me to fall asleep.The sleep wasn't as peaceful as I thought it would be because I started having a nightmare. I was in a pit and there was no way out.I cried for help but no one came.I woke up sweating and with tears on my cheeks.I was really crying.My heart was

pounding furiously and it felt so real. It even took me a while for my mind to register that I wasn't actually in a pit but in my bedroom. Ethan was still wide awake at that time too.

"What's wrong?" He asked getting off the bed.

"I just had a bad dream. Where are you going?" I asked as he wore his clothes without saying a word.

"I'm going for a smoke don't wait up." He said coldly. I was shocked because he gave up smoking when he came to

know that his father had lung cancer. He didn't really
smoke all the time but he gave up even smoking when he
is stressed. So for him to say that he was going for a
smoke came as a surprise to me. He walked out of the
door. I remembered he had a heart problem and smoking
was not good for him so I took my night gown and ran
after him.

"You cannot smoke Ethan it's not good for your health." I

blocked his way.

He clenched his jaws."Did you sleep with Treet?I can't stop wondering.Come to think of it.Why would he suspect that you're carrying his child if you guys didn't sleep together?Let's not test each other's intelligence here Majesty.Tell me the truth."

"I thought we talked about this.I didn't sleep with Treet."

"So why would he think that you're carrying his child?Do I look stupid to you Majesty!?" He shouted back.I kept quiet not knowing what to say.I couldn't exactly tell him that I

slept with Treet the day before our wedding day. He took his car keys.

"No you're not leaving this house. If there is something wrong we are going to deal with it together as a family. You're not leaving this house that too to smoke. Do you know what time is it. Its 12am. Ethan you can't go out there at this time." I tried reasoning with him but he was having none of it. We ended up arguing and it was so loud that it woke his mother and Maka up.

"I said I'm leaving Majesty get out of my way."He shouted
and I shouted back telling him he was not going
anyway.He shook his head,clicked his tongue,scratched
his head and then pushed me with all his power that I
landed on the floor.He opened the door and walked out
without even bothering to check on me.Mrs Jaji and Maka
came to my rescue.I had a small bruise on my arm which
Maka dressed.

"Thank God nothing worse happened. What's wrong with

you guys?" His mother asked with concern.

I wiped my tears off because the incident just scared me. I

have never seen Ethan like that. He was angry. "It's nothing

serious. It was just a petty argument." I hiccupped from all

the crying.

"Yea right it looks like nothing." Maka arched her

eyebrow. They kept on comforting me telling me that it

was going to be alright and that maybe Ethan was going

through something but he was going to come around.

After a lot of convincing I went upstairs to wait for Ethan whilst in bed. Within a few minutes my phone rang and it was MaZulu. I then remembered that I was supposed to call her however I was also surprised that she was calling me at this hour.

"Hello aunty. Is everything okay?" I called her that because that's what she wanted. According to her it made her feel young and beautiful.

"Majesty I want you to take the bible that I gave you and

hold it whilst I pray for you okay.Right now take that bible."

She was panting.

"What is wrong aunty?"

"Majesty!!!!Stop asking me questions and do as I say.Take

that bible.I want to pray.Do it right now." She shouted and I

immediately opened my drawer and took it out.

"I have it with me." Now I was super scared.

"Kneel down.You pray for yourself as well and I will pray

for you.You're spiritually weak." I did as I was told.I put her

on speaker and she started praying.

"Almighty and merciful father who show your love and mercy to all your creations.I come before you asking for a quick control over Majesty's life your beloved daughter.

Grant O Lord,through your intercession and mediation all the graces she needs.In times of trial,confusion

temptation, fear and sickness help her to remember that your door is always open for her.Jesus Christ the healer of souls,the son of the blessed virgin Mary who was lifted up

on the cross. I entrust her into your protection and
configure her to the light of your Pascal mystery...."

She continued praying and praying. I started sweating and
feeling a heated sensation in my stomach. I ran to the toilet
and vomited. My stomach emptied the unwanted contents
for like five minutes. After I was done I was very drained
whilst MaZulu on the other hand continued praying. She
was crying and I was crying too. After a long one hour she
stopped.

"Thank you mama.Thank you so much.I'm drained but I

feel much better.." I cried as I started to feel the heavy

burden on my shoulders being lifted off.

"I'm upset with you Majesty.I'm not happy because I told

you to pray.I told you. Its not good to remember that there

is God when it gets tough.Your relationship with God

needs to be mended.When last did you pray huh?" She

asked.

"I don't know.I honestly don't know.I'm a sinner I don't think

I'm worthy to even touch this bible." I cried.

"Guilt from the sins we commit can make us feel all mixed

up inside and cause us to lose our peace and joy but that

does not mean that we are not worthy in God's eyes.A

good start in the right direction is for you to confess your

sins.I would advise you to go to a pastor or priest and

confess your sins.You will find inner peace and a burden

will be lifted off your shoulders.Also you will be able to

mend your relationship with God with your conscience

clear and clean.Its not too late Majesty.God's door of
grace is always open for you.All animals that exist were in
Noah's ark.A snail is one of those animals and if God
could wait long enough for snails to enter it means he is
waiting for you to come to him.He is waiting for his
daughter.Go back to your father Majesty.You need him
because its going to get very ugly."

"Okay I will do as you say" I wiped my tears off.

"Very good and be careful." She dropped the call.I felt so

much better and managed to fall asleep. When I woke up

the following morning Ethan was back sleeping on the

couch. I sighed and covered him with a throw. He moved

and opened his eyes then frowned looking at me.

"I didn't sleep with Treet at least not after I made my

vows to you."

"So that meant you slept with him before the wedding. You

practically cheated on me right."

"Ethan please. You're being very selfish right now. Despite

knowing I loved that man you and your father still forced me to a corner. I didn't cheat on you. If anything I cheated Treet with you."

I stormed out and went to take a quick bath. After I was done I went to the nearby Roman Catholic church. The doors of that church were always open for twenty four hours. I hesitated for a while but gathered my composure and walked in. There was a sister who was cleaning the altar. I greeted her and sat down. She stopped what she

was doing and attended to me. I told her I had come for a confession but I had questions. I wanted to know why I had to confess to the priest and not just talk to God. She read some verses for me John 20:21-23, Matthew 9:6-8 and James 5:16. After reading and explaining I understood the essence of confession. So I was ready to go into that confession room and pour out all my sins. She also reassured me and told me that the Priest was bound by the law of the church to not ever say anyone's sins or they

were consequences. I sat down in the confession room and started confessing with the priest who was on the other side listening. It was a good thing that we couldn't see each other so it made things easier for me. After I was done he told me the verses to read and he also told me my sins were forgiven. When I left I felt the inner peace of heart and soul that comes with being in a good relationship with God. Later that day when Ethan came back from work I received a call from Treet. I answered in Ethan's

presence. We weren't really in talking terms.

"What is it that you want Treet?" I asked.

"I need to see you Majesty. You and your husband. I believe

I owe you both an apology. I also have a few things that I

need to say to you both. So is it okay if I meet you guys. We

can meet at a park or something. A place where there is

less attention to us."

I looked at Ethan for approval and he nodded his head.

"Fine. Let's just meet at the park in Calabasa. I will send you

the coordinates if you don't know the place." I said.

"I know the place.I will be there in 30 minutes.See you

then." He dropped the call.

I didn't know what he wanted to say but Ethan insisted that

we listen to whatever he wanted to say.We went to the

park and within a few minutes he too arrived looking

dashing as ever.He greeted us both and sat down.The

silence was awkward and uncomfortable.Treet kept on

staring at me and I was looking down playing with my

fingers.

"Why are we here?" Ethan broke the ice.

Treet sighed. "I'm sorry for the way I behaved for the past two days...Some--"

"Hell yea you should apologize." Ethan intervened.

Treet clenched his jaws. "I'm apologizing to Majesty here and not you. The reason you're here is because I didn't want you to have any suspicions that something is going on between me and her. Anyway like I said I'm sorry

Majesty for misbehaving. Someone made me see the light
and I realized I was wrong. Now that you Majesty you're
married I should respect that but I would be lying if I say
that I'm not secretly praying that you guys divorce because
hell yea I am. Either my wish comes true or not its up to
fate but whatever that happens I will always love you
Majesty. As for you Ethan just know that you have an
amazing woman here don't mess up because if you do
there will be a line of guys waiting to treat this woman

here like a goddess. I will be the first one on that line. On top of that if you ever, I mean if you ever mess up I will make your life miserable. Majesty I'm leaving to search for my family but I will be back. If you need anything I will be there because I still love you but I have to let you go well at least for now." He said.

"I'm glad you managed to see the light. I would really appreciate it if you disappear forever from our lives. It's a good thing that you're leaving. My wife and I no longer have

to worry about you anymore." Ethan said I help his hand to calm him down because his outburst was not necessary here.

"Thank you for the apology Treet and I hope you will find the family you're looking for.Good luck on that."

"Thank you very much.It means a lot coming from you." He stood up.Smiled at me one more time and left.Ethan and I went back home without saying anything to each other.Well that didn't turn out so well.I didn't want to meet

Treet but Ethan had insisted now I could see that maybe it was a bad idea.

"Are you guys okay?" Maka asked with her eyebrow raised.

"Yes. Why do you ask?" Ethan asked.

She shook her head. "I was just asking."

We finished dinner. Ethan and I called it an early night. The

tension in the bedroom was so intense you could cut it

with a knife. I removed my clothes and went to take a

shower. Ethan joined and tried to touch me but with

everything that was happening,sex was the last thing on
my mind.

"Are you not coming to bed?" I asked as he was wearing
his clothes and not pyjamas.

"I'm going out to unwind.With everything that is happening
between us I really need some air." He said.

"Ohh by unwinding you mean going out for a smoke huh." I
got off the bed.

"Does it matter?I just wanna unwind.After talking to your

boyfriend. Do you expect me to be ok. He was gloating

about his love for you and you didn't even stop him" He

shouted.

"I'm not doing this with you. I'm with you now yet you still

complain. I don't know what more do you want from

me. And you had to say my boyfriend. Really Ethan you

know very well that...." I didn't finish my statement as I felt

a burning sensation on my cheek. Before I could register

what was going on another slap landed on my cheek and I

felt dizzy at that moment.

"He is your fucking boyfriend and you have been sleeping

with him all the time.You think you can take me for a fool

huh.Is that what you think?I love you dammit and is that

what I get for loving you.Is that what I get huh...Look at

what you're making me do." Before I know it I was down

receiving a number of kicks and punches from Ethan.He

kept on shouting and accusing me saying that I was

cheating on him.I tried to talk to him and I cried thinking

my tears would stop him but he acted like a possessed

man and the more I cried the more I gave him pleasure.

After he was satisfied with himself he stormed again

leaving me on the floor.I refused to believe that Ethan

could do this to me.I thought it was a nightmare but this

was real.I thought of enough reasons that would have

driven Ethan to the edge and everything was my fault.At

least that's what I thought.I was the one who pushed him

to the limit.I dragged my wounded body and took a bath.It

stung because I was using bath salts.After I was done I

took the bible and knelt down.

"O God...how did I get here..." I didn't even know what to

say I ended up crying.I felt empty and burdened once

again.I ended up calling MaZulu.I didn't tell her exactly

what was going on but I just told her I was feeling

burdened. She prayed with me and told me to start some

fasting sessions with her.We decided to start our fastings

the following day.I also told her about the novena prayer

that I was given by Sister Esther and she told me to stick

to it too. The novena was to take nine days.

"Everything is going to be okay. You should know that when

you decide to mend your relationship with God that's when

the problems come knocking on your door one after the

other. Don't give up because it's the devil who is testing you

and prove him wrong." She said.

"I don't know.. I don't know... Everything was fine but now.."

I cried.

"Everything is going to be okay." She said. We talked for a while and then I dropped the call. I tried to wait for Ethan but he didn't come so I slept.

"I'm sorry I lost control yesterday. I don't know what came over me. I was just angry that you didn't tell Treet where to get off and.."

"No don't turn this around on me. You're unbelievable

Ethan." I couldn't believe that he wanted to make this all my fault. I limped out and went to the kitchen to make

breakfast but mother in law had beat me to it. She had prepared English breakfast. She went all out. We all sat down and everyone ate. I couldn't stomach anything so I left the table before everyone was done eating. I decided to lie down for a little bit but the odds were against me. Ethan stormed into the room looking like a beast on a mission.

"What was that behavior huh?" He barked.

"W-what behavior." I said getting off the bed and moving away from him. He locked the door and charged at me. I

screamed my lungs out hoping his mother and Maka

would come to my rescue but none of them came.He

continued hitting, punching and kicking.

"Please stop Ethan...please..." I pleaded but the more I

cried its like I was feeding his monster.

"Go fix yourself.I didn't wanna do this but you forced my

hand.You pushed me.It's all your fault." He barked and

walked out leaving me on the floor.I took a quick bath and

packed my bag.I was not going to stay a minute longer in

that house. I had to leave and fast. I carried my back

downstairs. I was locked inside of the house. I looked for

my phone and it was nowhere in sight.

I never thought I would be in this position ever. I never

dreamed of being one of the abuse victims but it was

happening and it was real. I have to take it like a

woman. What do you know about marriage? You just don't

up and leave because the going gets tough. You take it like

a woman. My mother's words continuously rang inside my

head.

The beatings got worse that day forth. He found out that I had packed my bags and I wanted to leave. He totally lost it and became a stranger I didn't know.

"You cheated on him. You deserve everything that's coming for you. I told you that you weren't worthy for my son. Now he is even seeing it for himself."

His mother said when I reached out to her and told her

about everything that has been going on. There and then I realized I was alone in this. It was bad that at times he would even lock me into our bedroom and take my phone. Maka never bothered to help because they didn't want to disrespect him. I couldn't even reach out for anyone to help me. I was all alone in this. Well scratch that it was me and God now. The more I prayed, the more it got worse but I never gave up. MaZulu and I couldn't talk anymore because he took my phone. I was isolated from

everything and everyone. The only thing that was starting to make sense in my life was praying and Girly who sometimes kept me company provided that I wasn't locked into my bedroom.

I walked downstairs and it was very quiet. I was all alone again. I guess they had left for the amusement park since it was a Saturday. Girly was talking about it during breakfast. I ran to the door and tried to open it but I was disappointed. It was locked.

"Not again God." I cried out.

31

MAJESTY

When the going gets tough.

Cooking was the only thing that helped me to get my mind

off things. It was my remedy. So I went downstairs to cook

up a storm for the family. I moved around the kitchen even

though I was in pain. After cooking I was tired and went to

rest for a while waiting for them to come back. They came

back home late.

"I prepared dinner for you guys." I said hoping that it would

ease the sudden tension that had filled the room.

"As for me I'm good. We ate some high class Chinese

restaurant so I'm full. God knows I was starting to have

stomach problems with the stiff pap that you cook." Maka

said and disappeared upstairs

Everyone else said they were not hungry too disappeared

upstairs. I couldn't eat either. My jaws were in pain and I

was fasting so I packed the food and gave it to the

security. I was afraid of going to our bedroom but hey its

not like I had a choice I had to go.

"What were you doing outside?" His voice boomed in the

room as soon as I walked in.

"I was giving the security the food.I couldn't throw it away."

I said moving away from him.

"Are you fucking them?Are you sleeping with the guards."

He charged at me and roughly pulled my hair.

"Ethan I'm not sleeping with anybody but you.I swear on

my children." I cried out.

He loosened his grip."Yea you better not.You will know me if you ever dare try to cheat on me again."He went to take a shower.I sighed in relief and quickly got under the covers.I pretended to be asleep unfortunately not everyone was born good in the acting department.

"Hey wake up,wake up.I know you're pretending to be asleep.Wake up woman!!!" He shouted whilst shaking me vigorously.I opened my eyes and he was standing there his length erect.He was turned on under these circumstances?

I cringed.

"Umm I'm fasting Ethan... So w-we c-can't have sex.This is..

is my last day though tomorrow you can have your way

with me.." I stammered because I was afraid of angering

him.

"So what do you want me to do with this?You want me to

do Jennie in the hand when I have a wife?When you

opened your legs for every Jim and Jack out there did you

ever thought about fasting?Open those damn legs.You're

my wife so I will have it whenever I want it. You can always
fast some other day. Open your legs." With that said he
roughly pulled me by my legs and ripped everything that
was on my body and started helping himself.

"Please stop you're hurting me Ethan please." I cried out as
he continued going on and on like he was a thirsty beast. I
cried as with every thrust I felt myself tearing and it was
painful. It didn't help that I was so dry. He pulled out and
went to take some lubricant.

"If your pussy doesn't get special treatment then your asshole won't either."

"No please no Ethan. Not that please." I begged.

"Well I'm going to fuck you however I want. From the look of it your asshole is a virgin not this hole that everyone thrust in." He said applying the lubricant on his member. He didn't even have mercy. He thrust roughly and mercilessly. I cried in pain as he went savage on my asshole just like he did my pussy. It took forever for him to be done with

me. When he was done there were some stains of blood on the sheets. It wasn't much but the blood was evidence of my pain. I limped and went to the bathroom to take a shower. I was so afraid to touch my pussy or even feel my asshole. I did not want to see how ripped or shredded I was. I continued sobbing while trying to wash off his scent and sweat on me. I continued scrubbing but it wasn't working his scent was clung on me. I limped back into the room and he was fast asleep with no care in the world.

How did he turn to this monster within a blink?I asked myself as I looked at him peacefully sleeping.Only when he was asleep that's when I managed to get a glimpse of my best friend not the monster he was now.Something was really going on because there was no way the Ethan I knew would ever lay a hand on me and let alone rape me after knowing what I went through.He wasn't the Ethan I knew anymore.He was now a stranger.I got under the covers but I couldn't sleep.I kept on tossing and turning

and the pain between my legs was not making anything

easier for me. I got off the bed and went downstairs.

Sitting in the lounge I started sobbing and begging God to

intervene because I couldn't take it anymore. I just

couldn't. The rape was the final nail on the coffin. I knelt

down and started praying.

"On my knees I come before the great multitude of

heavenly witnesses. I offer myself, soul and body to you

eternal spirit of God. I adore the brightness of your

purity, the unerring keenness of your justice and the mighty
of your love. Come blessed power of the holy fire and
penetrate in this house to reign in the unity of the ever
blessed trinity. Lord uphold my soul in times of
trouble, sustain my efforts after holiness, strengthen my
weakness, give me courage against all the assaults of my
enemies. I do not have the strength anymore and I'm
begging you to intervene. Give me the strength I need to
fight this because on my own I cannot anymore. Amen."

I wiped my tears off. Whenever I prayed I got so emotional that I would end up wailing my lungs out. I was glad I didn't wake anyone up I felt better after praying and went back upstairs. I looked at Ethan one more time then went to sleep. The following morning I woke up with him groaning on top of me. I shut my mind off to escape the physical pain that he was inflicting on me. He took forever again and after he was done he got off the bed and went to take a shower. It was a struggle to walk because this time he

had ripped me apart. I was even bleeding. He didn't even feel bad when he saw me struggling to walk. He wasn't even remorseful. If anything my pain made him feel more like a man. I went to the bathroom and used the ointments and salts I had. They didn't make me feel better if anything the pain intensified.

"Ethan can I please have my phone I want to call Mary and ask how things are going at work." I said.

He frowned. "If you want to call her you can use my

phone. In fact why bother? I'm taking care of your business and everything is under control so there is no need for you to worry."

"But Ethan I...." A slap echoed in the room as his palm united with my cheek. I kept quiet immediately.

"Are you questioning me now huh. Are you?" He said moving slowly towards me. I shook my head no repeatedly.

"So what was that? Do you want to call your boyfriends now? Who do you want to call huh?"

"No Ethan no I just wanted to call Mary I promise you." My back hit the door and I was lucky it wasn't locked. I opened it and tried to run out because I knew he was about to hit me but with the pain I had I couldn't even walk properly. He followed while I was on the staircase and he grabbed my hair and started pulling me back upstairs while I cried for Maka and his mother for help but none of them came to my rescue. He dragged me back upstairs and started hitting me while I cried for him to stop but the more I cried

the more he kicked and punched. At this time I just prayed for God to just let me die. The pain was too much. I couldn't take it anymore. I begged for God to forgive me. If this was my karma for sleeping around and partly ruining Angela's marriage it was now too much. I had learnt my lesson.

"Go fix yourself." He took his briefcase and left me on the floor in my own blood. After a lot of struggle I crawled to the bathroom and washed off the blood that was coming from my nose, mouth and my bruised knees as well as the

cuts I got from being dragged. After I was done I moped

my blood that was on the floor. I limped downstairs. I

wanted some medication for my head because it was

having no mercy on me. My ribs too hurt. I'm sure I even

broke some. I found Maka and mother in law laughing their

lungs out. Maka was feeding Girly.

"Good morning Maa. Hey Maka." I said and cringed in pain

while I sat down.

"Hello dear we heard some screaming is everything okay?"

Mother in law asked.

I wiped my tears off but they continuously coursed down

my cheeks."How can you ask me that maa?Of course

everything is not is okay as you can see.He hits me

everyday.I cry for help but none of you comes to my

rescue. You're a mother Mrs Jaji.Don't your motherly

instincts kick in when you hear me crying.Maka you're a

woman.You're going to be a mother too.Imagine if this

was happening to your own daughter were you going to

just sit there and act like everything is normal.I'm your

sister Maka yet you don't even help me."

"Marriage is not a bed of roses dear.I once told you that

your past is going to affect your future

didn't I?.Do you

honestly blame my son? He is doing what any man out

there could have done.He is disciplining the whore out of

you my dear." She shrugged.

"How can you say that.I have been nothing but faithful to

your son.I don't deserve this.I don't deserve to be his
punching bag.I don't deserve to be raped.I thought we
were actually going somewhere.I thought you had stopped
judging me so harshly but its true when its said that only
God can forgive you but people will never forgive you no
matter how much you try to rectify your mistakes.You
came to me and told me that you were going to give me a
chance to prove that I was worthy to be a wife to your
son.I have been doing nothing but just that.Now I realize

that you never forgave me. You still hate me with everything in you. You lied to me and made me believe that you were actually warming up to me but that was all an act right. You had a hidden agenda. Now its starting to make sense."

She scoffed. "Don't you think you opened your eyes a little bit too late. I did tell you that you were going to suffer. I told you that you were never going to enjoy this marriage. Now suck it up like a big girl that you're." She carried Girly and

walked out.I was left with Maka who had no care in the world and continued eating.

"And you Maka you're my sister but you watch everything happening under your nose.You choose not to help me but that monster instead. I'm your sister.Your own blood but you don't even bother to help.The funny thing is you're a woman Maka and one day you will get married too."

"Whoa this ain't about me sisi.Have you ever heard of a bitch called karma.I'm sorry this is happening to you but

honestly there is nothing I can do. Deal with your karma

head on."

I sniffed. "Can I please have your phone."

She stood up. "I'm sorry Ethan gave me strict orders not to

ever give you my phone or I will also be in trouble."

"You were right maybe this is my karma. The worst thing

about that bitch is she never forgets the address. She

never ever forgets. So one day your karma will also come

knocking on your door. You will need my help and you will

remember this day."

She rolled her eyes and walked out. I went back to the

bedroom and spent the rest of the day like any other. I

looked everywhere for my phone but it was nowhere in

sight.

Days blended into each other and become months. Three

more months with that man felt like three years. Our

marriage was nine months old and I was already suffering

like this.I could only make it out in a body bag.Death only
was definitely going to do us apart.The rape has also
became part of my daily meals.I tried to escape but when
we found out he taught me a serious lesson.I became his
punching bag and his sex toy.He experimented all his
sexual fantasies on me including that psychotic BDSM.He
crashed my self esteem,my confidence and above all he
made me a weakand fragile woman.I became a woman I
didn't know.I became a shell of a woman I used to be.I

didn't feel worthy or beautiful anymore. He crushed me. I was no longer the confident Majesty. Ethan knew if given a chance I was going to make sure he gets behind bars so he made sure that I had no contact to the outside world. He made me a prisoner and always locked me in our bedroom. No matter how many times I tried to escape he would find out and that would earn me a serious beating. He went as far as taking a leave and those days were a nightmare for me. I stopped praying and fasting.

There was no point. God wasn't coming through for

me. He had abandoned me.

"We are going to Zimbabwe for my father's memorial

service. Pack up because we are taking an evening flight."

He said one morning.

"Is Prince going?" Prince was my last hope in this mess.

"Unfortunately no. He said he has a lot of things on his

plate. If you think you will ever tell anyone about what

happens in this bedroom and they will believe you then you

have another thing coming. Make it quick" I sighed in

disappointment.

"Okay." I packed our clothes. I was also planning to visit my

father's family because I wanted to organize the unveiling

of the tombstones for my parents. I was going to visit the

family without Prince but during the ceremony he had to

come. The following day we flew to Zimbabwe but this

time it wasn't a big function like the funeral. There were a

few people, just relatives and close friends. Mai Tawa and

Mai Moyo made my life miserable but not for so long. At

least for a week I was free from Ethan's abuse. I also

recovered from some of my wounds.

The next day when I was packing our luggage I realized my

travelling documents were missing.

"Ethan have you seen my passport and visa?" I asked. He

shook his head no. I searched everywhere like a mad

person but everything had disappeared. I laughed in

disbelief and went to Mrs Jaji's room.

"I know you hate me but can I please have my travelling documents back. I promise you the first thing I'm going to do first when we get back is to leave your son. Now can you please give me back my documents." I was certain it was her. She was that evil.

She looked surprised. "I actually don't know what happened to your documents but I'm glad you will have to stay here for a while. We honestly need a break from you."

"So you are denying that you're the one who is behind

this. Do you really take me for a fool." I shouted.

"Hey I told you that I'm not the one who did it. If it was me I

was not going to deny it." She stormed out and that gave

me a chance to go through her things. I didn't find

anything. I went to Maka's room and went through her

things but I didn't find them either.

"Majesty!! Why the hell are you accusing my mom of

stealing your documents? You're the one who is careless

yet you're blaming my mother. You're worthless and

pathetic." Ethan barked coming to where I was. Now that everyone had left I knew he was going to beat the shit out of me. I was cornered I had nowhere to run off to. He attacked me with a jaw breaking punch and I landed on the floor. A number of kicks followed and I just curled on the floor like a dollar sign. I was used to this now.

"Tomorrow the rest of us are leaving. I will send you some money to apply for the new documents. I will also send some money for everything you might need. For now you're

going to stay here. Don't worry about your companies

because I'm taking good care of that."

I was worried about my business but this sounded like a

plan. In as much as I hated to stay alone in Zimbabwe and

being separated from Girly, I could use the time alone

away from Ethan. I needed a breather. I agreed to his plan

even though something was telling me that this was a

conspiracy. In fact it was indeed a conspiracy because my

documents cannot just magically disappear. One of them

did this or they worked together. Either way this was a fool proof plan. The next day they woke up early since they had to travel to Harare. Girly cried when they were leaving and I cried too but there was nothing I could do. I was going to lose my mind by staying away from her and alone for that matter.

"I will send the money once we arrive." Ethan said giving me a brief hug. I waved them goodbye as the taxi drove off. I went back inside and breathed in relief. Being alone

was exactly what I needed. I went back to bed and tried to sleep. I ended up having nightmares. Upon realising that I was alone I breathed in relief. Around 9 I woke up and made breakfast for myself. There was enough groceries in the cupboards that was left after the ceremony. It could last for three months so I was safe. The money I had at the moment was not enough for me to travel to Gweru to apply for my emergency travelling documents so I had to wait for Ethan send me money. After I had my breakfast I

took a quick shower.I applied makeup to cover my bruises and wore clothes which covered my wounds.I went to buy myself a new smart phone and a new simcard as well as some ointments for my bruises.I made a mental note to visit the doctor as I constantly had a piercing pain on my lower back.I had only memorized Prince's number so he was the first one I called.I explained everything that was happening from the abuse,the rape and the fact that I was now stuck in Zim.

"Why didn't you tell me this Majesty? You're only telling me this now. I talked to Maka the other day and she said you were on business seminars and trips that is why you were not available. Ethan also didn't tell me anything about the memorial service its a surprise to me. You know what I'm coming there. I'm booking a flight. I can't believe Ethan did something like this to you and Maka supported this. God I'm going to kill him." He said after crying so much from everything that I told him.

"Relax Prince. God is in control. And you don't have to worry about me now. I'm alone so I'm safe. I really need some time alone. I need to process my thoughts alone. I think this was a blessing in disguise. They actually thought they were fixing me but it worked in my favour. I really need to be alone and faraway from everything. I need to figure my life out again so please don't come to my rescue."

"But its not good for you to be alone especially after everything that happened. Depression is real Maj and you

can be depressed. After everything you went through you

need a shoulder to lean on. That man ruined your life

Majesty and you need your brother or a friend at the very

least. You cannot be alone." He protested.

"I have God Prince so don't worry about me. I really need to

clear my head and I should also think about how I'm going

to solve this mess called my life. Do not worry about me

okay. Do not confront Ethan remember Maka is living with

them so I don't want anything happening to her."

"After everything she did I don't even care if anything happens to her. She was working with them for crying out loud. Anyway I hear you. If you want to be alone for a while to unwind it's fine but I'm going to send you some money so you could apply for your travelling documents." I agreed to that to get him off my back.

Two months passed by with me being alone at the house. My marriage with Ethan was a year old now and I have been alone. It has been hell. Prince was right. The idea

of staying alone wasn't a good one. I needed company. Yes

he called everyday to keep me company but I was

alone. The loneliness was starting to creep in. Sometimes I

would have suicidal thoughts because I did not see any

reason for me to live anymore. I was broken beyond

repair. The nightmares haunted me every night I tried to

sleep. The memories weighed down on my conscience and

sometimes I felt like running away from my own

thoughts. Ethan never called or sent money like he had

promised. I wasn't surprised. I tried to pray but I was getting weaker spiritually. Having to remember that I was all alone didn't help matters. The suicidal thoughts on the other hand were coming down on me full force.

"Maybe I should just end this once and for all." I looked at the rat poison and pills that were on the table. There was no point in living like this. I was too tired and drained from the memories and the pain. I just wanted to escape it all.

LINDANI

The scarred knight in a shining armour.

"Guys something is definitely going on. Her phone has not been going through for months now. Something is definitely wrong. I can't just sit and relax I'm worried here. We were supposed to visit her but suddenly her phone is now sending me straight to voicemail."

Lisa paced up and down. She might have been someone who always lived on the edge and tended to over exaggerate situations but on this one I sided with her. I

was extremely worried about Majesty. Suddenly her phone just went off. I couldn't shake the feeling that something was extremely wrong. Lwandile told me not to act on impulse and advised me to be calm maybe Majesty wanted nothing to do with me anymore so this was her way of sending her message. She was a married woman after all. I tried to be calm but I just couldn't shake the feeling. I was so stressed that I couldn't even do anything properly anymore which affected my business. I trusted my

instinct. It never failed me.

"I agree with you. Something is wrong. Isn't it you're close

to her brother Prince? Why don't you call him and ask." I

stood up and poured some whiskey. I haven't seen her for

a year now and it felt like torture.

"Why didn't you remind me of that all along. Anyway I last

talked to Prince a long time ago I hope he didn't change

his number." She said pressing on her phone. We all kept

quiet as she dialed. She then smiled signalling that the call

was going through. I sighed in relief as she walked away

talking on the phone. After a while she came back looking

all worried.

"And then what did he say." I asked impatiently.

She sighed. "She is in Zimbabwe. He didn't say much but

from the sound of it it's not good at all. We need to find

Majesty because she is alone as we speak. I have a

sickening feeling in my stomach. Nothing feels right. We

really need to find Majesty. But he said we should wait for

him. He is at the airport as we speak booking an afternoon flight."

"It will take him days to arrive. I don't think I have that much time to wait. You said it yourself that you have a sickening feeling. I'm also panicking which means something is clearly wrong so I'm leaving as early as yesterday. Tell Prince to give you the address before he boards the flight. I don't have much time."

"Buy me a flight ticket too." Mom walked in with her bible

in her hands.

"Mom you're not going anywhere. Flying maybe dangerous

for your health. You will remain with Martha." I said taking

my jacket and gulping down the remaining whiskey.

"You will need me. So I'm going. Don't argue with me on this

one. Trust me. Majesty needs me too. I can feel it" I didn't

have time argue with her anymore so I agreed and went

out to buy the plane tickets for myself, Leon, Siphon, Lind and

mom. Lisa was to wait for Prince to arrive. After buying the

plane tickets for the afternoon flight I talked to my

contacts in Zimbabwe.They were going to take us to

Majesty's place once we arrive.

"I have packed everything we might need there.Let's

go."Lindy said holding Sipho's hand who looked worried

like everybody else.We boarded the flight and after two or

three hours we arrived in Zimbabwe.Tino who used the

name JahT was the one who drove us from Harare to

Kwekwe

"When are we going to arrive?Its taking forever." Lindy

complained.Everyone was too worried to answer her.I was

also feeling that way.It was taking forever and the

potholes were not making things easier either.

Sipho who was asleep woke up screaming her name.Mom

too just went into trance while Siph cried hysterically

complaining about a piercing pain in his chest.We had to

stop in the middle of nowhere as mom started to pray in

tongues.Sipho was screaming his lungs out.It was so

confusing and no one knew what to do anymore. Mom

started praying holding Siphon and he started vomiting

some disgusting yellow and green liquids. After his

stomach emptied the unwanted contents he calmed

down. Mom too stopped praying

"Mom what's going on? What's wrong? Did you see

something?" Lindy asked. Mom cried and that got me

extremely worried.

"Let's go before it's too late." She said. We all went back to

the car and I decided to take over on the wheels because JahT was driving like a snail. Everyone was screaming for their lives as I drove like a maniac to Kwekwe. The police road blocks and the toll gates were the only things that slowed me down. Everyone sighed in relief when we arrived in Kwekwe and thanked God for protecting them. JahT knew his way around so after fifteen minutes we arrived at the house that Prince had directed us to. I literally flew to the gate. I was pissed off when I saw the gate locked. JahT

asked the kids that were playing on the road if they had seen Majesty.

"They said they saw her coming from the nearby shops and then she locked the gate from the inside. Which means she is in there." I didn't think twice I smoothly leapt over the gate and went inside.

I literally flew to the door and started banging

it. "Majesty! Majesty! MJ its me Lindani open up. Open up

MJ please" I continued banging on the door but there was

no answer it was locked from the inside. The way my heart was pounding I could tell that something was wrong so I started kicking the door attracting the attention of the neighbors. I didn't have time for their curiosity so I continued kicking and banging until it opened. I ran inside and almost fainted.

"No no Majesty no please God no." I cried out.

32

LINDANI

It could have been worse.

My legs trembled as I took a step further inside. My heart squeezed painfully as I walked towards her with shaking legs.

"No no no." I rushed to her. Falling beside her I was even afraid to touch her body. She was so broken, so fragile. She was so skinny that some of her bones were practically showing. I reached forward and pushed back her tangled

hair from her face. It was covered in her foam that was coming from her mouth. Her lips had turned purplish.

"She is so cold. Oh my God." I removed my jacket and covered her fragile body bringing her close to my arching body. It hurt everywhere. Not physically. My heart arched. I checked her pulse and it was very weak. I immediately scooped her up and for a moment I was shocked with her weight. Siphon was heavier than that. I took the keys and ran with her outside. I gave Leon the keys who had already

jumped over too.He opened the gate and we all ran into
the car.When my mom and Lindy saw Majesty their faces
were masked with horror.

"She is not dead." I said.

"What have they done to her?Dear Lord." Lindy cried
burying her head into her hands.

"Go look for her documents." I ordered and she ran
inside.When she came back we immediately went to the
hospital.

"Drive faster JahT okay." Leon shouted.

I looked at Mj and my heart broke. She was no longer the woman I met in Paris. Her face was dark had a lot of bruises. It was wrinkled and her skin was ashy. Her lips were cracked and her cheeks had sunk in exposing her cheekbones. She looked older than her age. She was just a shell of a woman that she used to be. Her hair was unkempt and her clothes were oversized. She was a mess. I hugged her tightly and prayed for a miracle.

"Please don't die on me." Siphó was just silent looking at her. I guess he was too shocked with what he saw. Mom on the other hand had her eyes closed praying. When we arrived at the hospital she was immediately taken to the emergency room. We all sat in silence that's how worried we were. We couldn't inform Prince because he was flying to SA so Leon used JahT's phone and informed Lisa about the current situation.

"Dad is she going to die?" Siphó asked with tears coursing

down his cheeks.

I wiped them and played with his afro."No buddy.Mj is one

strong woman.She is not going to die okay champ.So don't

worry she is very strong."I also had to convince myself

because I was extremely worried with the condition she

was in.I don't know what I was going to do if she dies.Love

can make one do crazy things at times.If someone was to

tell me that I was going to fly from one country to another

for a woman I rarely knew I was going to laugh at their

face. After Ariana I had vowed not to ever love again because Arie was my world. I didn't want to carry the baggage that comes with loving someone. I didn't want to go through the pain of losing that one person who has your heart. Majesty changed all that and here I was again praying that I don't lose the woman that I had fallen in love with. The moment I laid my eyes on Majesty I knew I was whipped and it wasn't even funny. I never thought I would spend sleepless nights thinking of a woman who

was married but hey I was going crazy.

Mom squeezed my hand. I dragged myself back to reality.

"Don't worry she is going to survive this." That made me

feel better. I smiled faintly.

"Majesty Browns?" We all stood up and went to the

doctor. We started bombarding him with questions until he

told us to calm down.

"She is out of danger. We are glad you brought her sooner

or a minute later we could have been talking of a different

story. The poison didn't damage her organs

fortunately. When you brought her here her symptoms

showed that she had consumed a lot of poison but we

didn't find much in her system which is a surprise to

me. We found something disturbing on her though. The

scars on her body are very disturbing and they raise

eyebrows. She has broken ribs that were not attended and

a serious swelling on her lower back. Fortunately it doesn't

need an operation we have it under control. Also on her

private parts there were signs of a very rough

penetration. Do you have any idea how she got the scars or

what could have been happened. Because if you do we

might need to call the police as it looks like she was

abused sexually and physically."

I felt my blood pumping furiously into my veins that's how

angry I was. I was not going to spare that monster how

could he. We explained to the doctor that she was living

alone for the meantime and her husband was in USA. From

the look on his face he didn't believe us. He gave me a questioning eye and I knew in his mind he thought I'm the one who abused her. The fucking scars and tattoos. Urgh!

"You can go see her but do not disturb her she needs some rest." He said and walked away. Siphon didn't wait to be told twice he was the first one to run in followed by Lindy. I was left with mom and Leon. JahT was in his car.

"I don't understand what the doctor said about the poison though." Leon said.

"Its God's work my child.You remember when Siphon went into hysteria on our way here.I saw a vision of Majesty drinking the poison and with Siphon being in hysteria Majesty's pain was manifesting on him.There was a connection between those two. In fact there is some sort of connection between Majesty and Siphon.I just don't know what it is.So when I was praying for Siphon he was the one who vomited much of the poison that Majesty had taken.That is why they didn't find much in her system.I

know its very hard to believe but its true."

Yea I found it very hard to believe too but I was grateful it

happened. "You were right when you insisted on coming

too. Thank you mom."

"Its okay I would do anything for her.I'm upset I had to

meet her under these circumstances.They ruined her

beautiful face.She looks like someone else now." She

shook her head.

I clenched my jaws."And I'm not going to spare him. He

was the one who did this to her."

She sighed."Violence never solved anything my son.God is

watching everything.Leave it up to him."

I shook my head."No MaZulu I will first deal with him and

after I'm satisfied I will leave him to God."I walked

away.My mother was a prayer warrior but it was a pity she

had a son like me.A son who played very dirty to get things

done.All the time she tried to pray for me and convince me

to change the way I lived and what I did for survival but I

didn't.Sometimes you have to be a bad guy to get things done.In this matter I really had to unleash Scar to deal with the Ethan guy.I went to JahT because I wanted to make a call.

"Sure boss." He said giving me the phone and walked away smoking.

I called Lwandile.I explained the situation and he was also very hurt.

"So now I want you to get me everything on Ethan.I want

all his information, everything about him including his favorite food. Exhaust everything because I want to teach this good for nothing a lesson." He didn't try to talk me out of it because he knew at this point I was not going to change my mind. I went back inside and I was the only one left who didn't see Majesty. I walked inside and I closed my eyes for a moment hoping that this was a dream but it wasn't. The drips that were on her body were terrifying. I sat besides her and held her skinny hand.

I kissed it and sighed. "I asked you God to keep her safe for me. How come you didn't? Fine I will let that one slide because now she is out of danger but look at her man. How could you let this happen that too on your watch? At least keep her safe now at least make her recover. She has gone through enough already." I brushed her face.

"What did he do to you huh? I'm not going to spare him I promise you. But Majesty what were you thinking when you

drank that poison huh?Wasn't that very selfish of
you?Didn't you think about people like me and Siphon who
care about you.Is that good for nothing husband of yours
worth you taking your own life.Fine fine I'm not gonna get
angry because you tried to commit suicide I will let that
slide but now I just want you to wake up.I'm here

I can

help you to move on from this.Siphon is here too,my mother
too came.The whole pack is here.Your brother is on his

way too. Fight this please Majesty please." I kissed her forehead and walked out.

We went back to the house. We planned to stay at the house for the night. The cupboards were filled with groceries which meant that Majesty wasn't even eating. JahT and Leon left to buy some meat and other necessities that were needed. When they returned JahT drove me back to the hospital. I had to bribe for them to allow me to sleep in Majesty's room on my own bed. The

nurses kept on coming in the room and I wasn't taking any chances. I didn't trust anyone so I was careful enough to be aware whenever they examined her.

"You can rest sir.She is in good hands." One of them said.

"I'm not taking any chances." I said and gawked at her while she checked Majesty's drips.I couldn't sleep knowing that the woman besides me.The woman that I loved was in pain.I got off the bed and sat besides her and held her hand.

"He is going to pay." I continuously kissed her hand

thinking of ways to make that Ethan guy suffer.He wasn't

getting away with this and I was going to make sure of

that.Early in the morning I was slowly drifting off to sleep

but Majesty's screams scared the shit out of me.

"Don't hit me please... I will do what you say.Don't hit me."

She continuously screamed with her eyes closed.The

nurses and the doctor came in.They asked me to leave but

I was having none of it.They gave up and attended to

Majesty while I was in the room. They sedated her and she went back to sleep.

"She is still traumatized. She needs a psychologist. I know a few people I might refer you to." He said.

I scratched my head. "You don't have to worry about it. I'm just hoping that she gets better real quick so she we can leave this place. The rest will be done when we settle." He nodded his head and walked out. Around 10am my family came for the morning visit and that gave me an

opportunity to go back to that place and clean up. Later in the afternoon Prince and Lisa arrived. Prince cried seeing the state that his sister was in.

"I should have come immediately when she said she was all alone here. I shouldn't have listened to her when she said she needed some time alone."

"That doesn't matter anymore. What matters now is we found her in time and managed to save her. Now do you know what has been happening to Majesty lately? Did she

tell you anything?" Mom asked.

He sighed and sat down at one of the benches that were outside.

"Ethan has been abusing her. He started beating her for some time now. Majesty couldn't ask for help from anyone because he kept her locked in the house and he took all her gadgets. He started raping her too. Then they came here for his father's memorial service. I think he burnt her travelling documents that's why Majesty has been stuck

here.I got the police on the guy's head but he was bailed out because Majesty was here in Zim.There was no evidence to keep him in jail.His mother and my sister didn't made things easier for me as they spoke for him and made my allegations to be false.So he is very free as we speak.Enjoying his life while my sister is fighting for her life like this."

By this time I was pacing up and down.I was too angry I was breathing heavily. It was a good thing that bastard

was not in the country because I was going to kill him with my bare hands.

"Calm down Scar. Right now we need to focus on

Majesty. We will deal with that guy later." I assigned Lisa

and Prince to take care of Majesty's traveling documents

and they were on it. When we visited her in the evening she

was awake screaming her lungs out. They couldn't sedate

her again because it would end up affecting her. Siphon

courageously walked in when Majesty was screaming. I

followed to and when her eyes landed on me she went to the corner of the bed and hugged her knees. The nurses didn't know what to do with her.

"Don't hit me please. Don't hit me please. Don't hit me please don't hit me.." She kept on repeating rocking herself back and forth.

"Mj its me Siphho. Its Siphho." My boy said walking towards her. She stopped rocking herself and looked at him.

"G-gift." She stammered.

Sipho nodded."Yes I'm Gift.Sipho means Gift. I'm your

Gift."

She cupped his face and started kissing him all over."My

Gift.Ohhh my Gift.My baby you came back for mommy.My

Gift."She hugged him more like squeezed the life out of

him.

"Yes its me." Sipho brushed her back and she calmed

down.I walked towards her to touch her but she screamed

and held Sipho for dear life.

"Get him away from me. Get him away from him. He wants to hurt me." She screamed.

"Sir I think you should leave. She is screaming whenever she sees a man." One nurse said.

"I got this." I reassured them.

I walked towards her. She went back to the corner and hugged her knees again. "Majesty its me Lindani. I'm not going to hurt you. Its me Lindani. You remember me?"

She looked at me for a while then she brought her shaking

hands towards my face. I smiled and held it. She traced it

on my scars then she relaxed. "It's really me. It's Lindani."

She smiled faintly and stopped shaking. The doctor said

she was still traumatized that is why she was acting

somehow but within a few days she would be herself

again. Of course after some heavy psychological

evaluation.

"Who is Gift?" Siphos asked Prince.

Prince sighed sadly and played with his afro. "Gift was

Majesty's son.He died when he was just an infant.Why did
you ask?"

"She kept on calling me that." He shrugged.

"She is still in traumatized honey but she will be okay soon
okay.So don't mind whatever that she said." Lindy said.

I talked to Prince and Lisa they had already managed to
get Majesty's documents. I knew a lot of money was used
for that to happen.Money talks really.Talking about
money.I bribed the staff at the hospital again and they

allowed me to be with Majesty for the night again. She was asleep so I just went on the other bed and watched over her through the night. At times she would scream in her sleep and I would calm her down. The following morning she woke up and didn't scream when she saw me. I guess her mind was slowly getting over the shock of what happened to her but one thing was certain with her current condition she was never going to be the same again. She was broken and so damaged. It was going to be hard to get

her back to her normal self.

"Hey you're awake.Should I get you something to eat." I

asked and she just looked at me and kept quiet.

Tears started to slowly stream down her cheeks and I

wiped them.

"Why did you save me?Why didn't you let me die?Why did

you save me?" She cried and I hugged her fragile body as

she continuously sobbed.After she was done crying I

wiped her faced and kissed her forehead.

"I had to save you. Committing suicide is never a solution. I

will tell mom to get you something to eat because I know

hospital food is like shit." She nodded and didn't say

anything else.

Mom and the whole pack came for the morning visit with

her food. When Majesty's eyes landed on mom she

couldn't believe that it was Mom. MaZulu got all emotional

and they cried in each other's arms. She said a long prayer

afterwards and convinced Majesty to eat. She did eat but

vomited much of the food though.They kept her under observation for the rest of the day.Under normal circumstances she was supposed to stay for a week in the hospital but since we had to leave they agreed to discharge her.After buying her medicines I took her to the place where she was staying.We all agreed not to ask her anything lest it would send her into a spin.If she wanted to tell us anything she was going to open up on her own.From the look of things she needed a psychologist.

"Do you need something? Are you cold? Are you

comfortable?" I asked while fixing the pillows on the bed.

She smiled faintly. "I'm okay. Can you call Siphso for me. I

need some company."

"Okay." I called Siphso for her and asked him to use his

charms to convince Majesty to eat.

"Eat something Lindani." Lisa said and I shook my head no.

She sighed and sat down. "Did Majesty say anything? "

"That's the thing. It's too early for her to say anything. She is

not talking saying much. Everything that happened to her

got to her pretty bad and she is so afraid. This is bad

Lisa. That woman there is never going to be the same ever

again."

She brushed my shoulder. "She will be fine. I will make sure

of that. We will all make sure of that." Everyone kept

Majesty company hoping that she would open up but she

was just quiet and never said a word.

"Majesty has an apartment in Rodeo. It can accommodate

you guys.If her health deteriorates we will get her to the hospital but I think for now we should just call her Doctor and her psychologist.Lindani and Leon you will stay with me at my place."

When we arrived in the US Prince drove us to Majesty's place.Mom,Sipho and the girls were going to stay with her while Leon and me stayed with Prince like he had said.We left Majesty and the rest at her place.Her room was turned

into a hospital room and her doctor had already arrived checking her. Lwandile later on sent the information he had on Ethan. We met at some downtown restaurant to discuss the way forward now that we had everything we wanted on him.

"I can't believe he ruined Majesty's companies like this. The bad thing is that we don't know the extent of the damage so we might need to consult Majesty's PA. Good thing Lwandile sent me everything. So now that we know

everything about this guy. Should we kill him?" Lisa asked.

"I also want his blood but for now let's focus on

Majesty. Yes I want the guy to suffer but we can't do

anything without considering how it's going to affect

Majesty's. In as much as he abused her they shared some

memories. Like you said he was her best friend so his

sudden death might affect her and we don't want

that. There is a lot of things to consider here so we will

plan everything with Majesty in mind. If she just wants to

divorce the guy and move on then we have to think of ways to make him suffer. Yes I want to kill him. I want him six feet under but Majesty is involved in this mess so we have to tread carefully. What we can do now is organize a meeting with the PA and the one who was the acting CEO while Majesty was away. I need to know the extent of damage that this dude has done."

Getting in contact with Majesty's PA was not a struggle. To make things easier we also invited Prince for the meeting

and he informed Majesty about the situation also. Not that she was going to say anything anyway but she had all the rights to know. We scheduled a meeting the following morning with the PA and the other friend who was once in charge.

"We both got messages from Maj telling us that she was going to Australia to open another branch there. She also gave Ethan the power of attorney. It was sudden and unexpected but we believed the paper since it had Maj's

signature on it. It was clearly stated that she was handing over all her business to Ethan. So we had no right to question it because it seemed legit. Also as her husband we thought it was a normal thing to do that she was letting Ethan take over while she opened another practice in Australia." Maj's friend Mary said looking all surprised and hurt after Prince told him everything on what has been happening.

"He had this all planned out. Majesty was not the one who

sent you messages he did and there was some foul play on the signature and this handover takeover thing. He kept Majesty a prisoner all this while. Anyway you heard the story but that is not why we are here. Right now we need to know what's happening at Majesty's company ever since that bastard took over."

Petty the gay PA sighed. "The company is in bankruptcy now. All the clients are walking out the door ever since Ethan took over. The investors are pulling out as well. The

sales lowered and the expenditure is higher. We all don't understand where the money is going but we can't question it. Workers haven't received their salaries for two months now and people are quitting. It's really bad and the only way to gain something from what's left is by selling the company. Which is what Ethan has been planning to do."

I punched the table. "That bastard! Okay thank you for your time guys. We will solve this mess."

"Can we see Majesty please? I feel like a bad friend now for not checking up on her or let alone suspecting that something was off." Mary pleaded. We all agreed to let them see Majesty. It would do her good and at least maybe get her to talk since she was close friends with them. That was to no avail too she didn't say anything. She just greeted them and kept quiet. It didn't help that the girl was crying her lungs out.

Lisa called me outside. "So what do you suggest we do

with this boy."

"I know you're thirsting for blood Blackwidow but like I

said we have to tread carefully because Majesty is

involved. What we can do for now is to milk him dry.I will

get Lwandile to withdraw every cent that he has.I want to

leave him with nothing and I'm going to use that money for

Majesty's company that he ruined.I want to make sure that

his company too will be on the ground when I'm done with

him.Death is too easy he has to suffer and I will start with

that thing that makes him feel like a man. Money."

"Good so I will get Lwandile to do what you said. He

messed with one of our own he messed with us."

I chuckled and shook my head. "You're just so impatient

huh."

She folded her arms. "I'm not impatient. I'm just hurt. Have

you seen the state that Majesty is in? If it was entirely up to

me I was going to get that dude to a cabin, cut off his dick

and feed it to him. Then get him raped and shove drugs

down his throat."

I sighed "I wish I could take her pain.No woman deserves to go through that.I don't even wish it on my enemy."

"Haa bafo you're forgetting Delia.That she devil deserves it.And to think that you're stuck with her for life.I feel pity for you. Already everyone knows that she is carrying your daughter." She laughed and shook her head.

"Don't even go there please." I walked back inside the house to say my goodbyes to Majesty since the day was

over and I had to leave with Prince. When I was about to open the door to her room I overheard her talking to mom.

"I know it was wrong of me to ever think about suicide but

I'm tired.I'm tired I cannot go on like this anymoreI'm weak

and he proved it.I could have endured the physical abuse

but the rape that was the final straw.Ethan was always

there for me and he held my hand when I we buried my

mother who was killed by my father as a result of

abuse.Then he does the same to me.What also hurt the

most is that my sister watched. My own blood watched
everything but never helped me. How could she? That man
destroyed my life. He ruined me. I don't feel beautiful
anymore and now I'm afraid to look at myself down
there. I'm afraid to see a scary thing down there. I'm afraid
of myself. Every time he hit me I could see my own life
flashing right before me. When I was in Zimbabwe I
couldn't sleep because of the nightmares and the
memories were weighing down heavy on me. The only
sensible thing was to end my own life. It was wrong I know
but what could I do. I'm exhausted maa. I'm so exhausted."

Her sobs broke my heart.

33

MAJESTY

The betrayal.

"You can't have the highs if you avoid the lows.If you avoid

pain you will never experience true happiness.My child

God is watching he knows exactly what he is

doing.Everything happens for a reason.Maybe you went

through this ordeal and survived it so that you can be a

voice of hope to others who are going through what you

went through or worse.I have no right to tell you how you

should feel because I have never been through what you went through. I have no right to tell you how you should react or should have reacted to the situation you were in. However you were wrong by attempting to commit suicide and you're going to ask for forgiveness from God. Do you understand me? Life is precious. Life is a gift. So you're going to apologize to that father up there for undermining this special gift called life. I assure you he is going to forgive you and then we can take it from

there. You're a strong woman and you're going to overcome this. Trauma can be treated. Yes it might never be the same again for you but it will be over. You're going to get over this because you're a very strong woman. Do you understand what I'm saying?"

MaZulu said holding both my hands and I nodded my head repeatedly crying my lungs out. She hugged me and prayed for me then left so that I could rest. I don't know what came over me to even think of committing suicide but all I

know is I was tired and dying was my only way out. During that time the silence was very peaceful. Yes I was alone but in my head it was very noisy. I needed a break. However the Zulus came to my rescue again. The load was too heavy for me to carry alone. All the memories and the pain but with everyone around me I could feel now that I was not alone anymore. I had people who cared about me and I realized I was being very selfish when I tried to end my life. I dragged myself back to reality and quickly wiped off

my tears when Lindani walked into the room.

He sat down."Hey."

"Hey." I said and kept quiet afterwards.The silence was

comfortable though and I was grateful that no one was

forcing me to say anything about the matter because I

didn't wanna go deep into the details.I only explained to

MaZulu the fewer details because she had that aura

around her which was so soothing so I found myself

talking without her asking me to.I was also very grateful

that she and her family came through for me. Never in my wildest dreams did I thought that they would fly from one country to another just to rescue me.

"It looks good on you." He said.

"Huh?" I gave him a confused look.

"The hoodie looks good on you." He said and I smiled lazily.

"Thank you so must I give it back to you now?" I asked.

He smiled. "No you can keep it. It looks so good on you."

I played with my fingers without saying a thing for a

while."Thank you for everything that you have done for me
Lindani."

He sighed and tried to hold my hand but I moved back
quickly on reflex.My heart was already pounding very hard
against my chest.I was that scared.

He panicked too and quickly retreated."I'm so sorry.I
shouldn't have tried to touch you.I'm sorry but I'm not him
okay.I'm sorry."He kept on apologizing and I felt bad.

"Please don't apologize.Its just that I'm not over what

happened so I'm extra cautious and my impulse is really bad." I said and he continued apologizing but I told him it was fine. After a while of keeping me company he decided to leave because I was very sleepy.

"Goodnight." He said and I just slowly nodded my head drifting slowly into a deep slumber which was as a result of the heavy medication. Like any other night I woke up sweating and screaming because again Ethan was in my dreams forcing himself on me. I was afraid to go to sleep

again so I started reading the bible till morning.

The following days were the hardest but endurable

because I had company. I couldn't sleep peacefully at all

without Ethan haunting me in my dreams but every time I

woke up from a nightmare MaZulu would come and pray

for me. Physically the pain was getting lesser by the

day. They also said I was getting better and I was starting

to look better. I wouldn't know because I was avoiding the

mirror as much as I could. I didn't want to see the weak

woman I have become. I did not want to see the extent to which Ethan had damaged me. I covered my body as much as I could as well. I was sure the scars and bruises on my skin was a disgust. So baggy and oversized clothes became my new fashion signature. Dr Spencer tried to talk to me and help me out but she failed miserably. I was going to bury everything and try to move on with my life. I just didn't want to revisit what happened to me.

"I just need to know how bad it is. You don't have to hide

anything from me." I said flipping the pancakes. MaZulu was going to lose her mind if she was to wake up and see me cooking. She didn't even want me to lift a finger because I needed rest especially because I was having some back aches. I had to rest as much as I could. But I was going to lose my mind too by just sitting around and having people to do everything for me.

"Lindani is handling it. No need for you to worry about anything." Mary said. I just didn't understand her sudden

affection towards Lindani. She was all team Lindani now

and was acting like they were best friends forever.

"So you're not telling me your friend about my company

because what? You promised Lindani you wouldn't. I'm your

friend not him. Do you see him around here."

He went back to SA the previous day with Sipho, Leon and

Lisa. Sipho had to go back to school and Lindani had

urgent business he had to attend to. I was saddened by

Sipho's departure because he was my personal "remedy"

and my support system.I was going to move to SA though

but after facing my demons.I wanted a fresh start and

MaZulu convinced me to move to SA.I was sceptical about

it at first.I did not trust anyone with my life

anymore.Especially after my best friend for years had let

me down.MaZulu understood where I was coming from so

she gave me time to think about it.Which I did and realized

that I really needed a breathe of fresh air.SA seemed to be

where I needed to be.I agreed to test the waters and leave

for SA.If in any case it wasn't going to work out there I

would come back to USA and move to another City.

She sighed and sat down.Emotional blackmail always

worked in my favour."Okay the company is in a bad

shape.Ethan lied to me and Petty.All along we thought you

were in Australia opening a new branch because

apparently "you" had sent the message to us.Also you

gave him the power of attorney.When he took over

everything went downhill from there.The company is

bankrupt. We haven't been paid for two months or so

now. The sales are low but the expenditure is very

high. Clients and investors are walking out which is not

making anything better either. It is really that bad but

Lindani said he has everything under control and he will

bring Majesty Innovations back to its glory."

I was hurt. Deeply hurt that Ethan would go as far as

destroying what I worked so hard for. Or maybe it was my

karma. I had chose my company over the man that I

claimed to love. I broke his heart and now everything was going down the drain.

"I know what you're thinking. Don't beat yourself about it. Ethan was the one who ruined everything. This is not your karma." She said.

I wiped my tears off. "I can't believe he did that to me. He went too far."

"Exactly. He went too far which is why he needs to pay."

She said with a frown on her face. MaZulu walked in before

I responded and she was upset that I was overworking myself.

"I told you to rest my child. Why the hell are you overworking yourself? We talked about this and you don't listen. You're straining yourself Majesty and that would affect your healing process."

I smiled. "Maa I will lose my mind if I just sleep whole day and do nothing. Besides you should also taste my food."

"You don't listen do you." She smiled and sat down while I

dished out for her and Mary. Lindy was still asleep so I put her breakfast in the microwave.

"You made your pancakes exactly how I like them." She said.

"You see. Me cooking is not a bad idea."

"I see. You're trying to convince me to allow you to overwork yourself which is not happening. I will only let this one time slide because you make such delicious pancakes. Now why don't you sit down and let me clean

up. After I'm done I will make you a healthy lunch. So for now you're going to take your medication, take a soothing bath and take a nap."

She said taking me to my room. She prepared a bath for me with salts and foams. It was soothing.

"I was thinking maybe we can go to some spa for a full body massage one of these days. What do you think?"

Mary said sitting on the toilet seat. If it was a normal day and if Ethan hadn't ruined me. I could have been excited

about the massage but now I was no longer confident and

I felt ugly so the last thing I wanted was a stranger

touching my body and being disgusted by my scars.

I sighed."I will pass you can go with Lindy.Now if you

excuse me I need some privacy. "

She obliged and walked out.I wore a bathrobe and walked

out of the bathroom. I settled for yet another long sleeved

oversized T-shirt,baggy trackpants and white socks.I got

into bed and I was about to sleep when I heard some

commotion downstairs. When I was on the staircase I heard his voice and I almost peed in my pants. How did he know I was back? I walked further a little bit and stopped on my tracks. I wanted to run back upstairs when I saw him breathing fire in the lounge but my body froze on spot.

"Where the hell is she?" Ethan's voice filled the whole room.

I started to shiver reminiscing all that time he kicked and punched the living daylight out of me. Lindy remained chilled and MaZulu must have been in her room asleep. His

eyes landed on me and he charged towards me.

"Stop on your tracks or God help me. Your brains will

scatter on the floor." His deep voice echoed in the room

and Ethan stopped on his tracks. I got the strength I

needed and I immediately ran towards Lindani and Lisa

who were standing on the doorway. Lindani was looking

scary but calm with his hands in his pockets. I went and

held Lisa tightly for dear life.

Ethan bitterly chuckled and walked down the stairs

towards us."Who the hell are you huh?Who do you think you're to interfere between me and my wife.Is he your new boyfriend?Who are you to interfere between me and my wife?"

"The same woman that you abused and left to die." Lindy said cocking a gun and pointing it on him.I didn't know that Lindy could be that savage too.Lisa squeezed my hand in reassurance.Fear was written all over Ethan's face.

Lindani looked at me and brushed my cheek."How have

you been?Let's go get you some ice cream."He was calm

but I was shivering.He took me from Lisa,held my hand

and we went with me to the kitchen.He took a tub and led

me upstairs.

"Where did she get the gun from?" I asked

"Stay here and enjoy your ice cream.Ethan and I are going

to have a man to man talk.Don't worry he won't do

anything to you.I got you." He smiled and left.I wanted to

ask him when he got back but that didn't matter

anymore. He was here and I felt safe. Before he left the room he switched on the TV and maximised the volume then walked out. Ethan's stunt left me shaken but the chocolate flavoured ice cream managed to calm my nerves.

"Lindani said you needed company." MaZulu peeped then walked in smiling.

I got off the bed quickly and hugged her. "For a moment I was already seeing him dragging me down the stairs by

my hair. For a moment I thought he was going to finish me

off. If I was alone he was really going to finish me off." I

cried in her arms.

"He won't touch you ever again my child. He will never ever

lay his filthy hands on you ever again." She reassured.

I wiped my tears off. "Where the hell did Lindy get a gun

from?"

She smiled and tucked me under the covers. "It wasn't a

real gun dear. She just uses it to scare the goons

away."She kept me company for a while and left when

Lindani came.He was chilled and relaxed but I noticed his

knuckles bleeding.

"Are you alright?Your knuckles are bleeding."

He smiled. "You don't have to worry about it its nothing.Let

me take care of it." He went to the bathroom and washed

his hands and then came back.

"Mary told me about how Ethan ruined my business. She

also said you're going to take care of it.I appreciate what

you have done for me Lindani but I don't want to owe you anything. I'm in this mess because I was indebted to Ethan's father. I understand you want to help me out but when it comes to my business I think you should just let me handle it. The last thing I want is to be indebted to you. As it is you have already done enough and I'm very grateful for everything that you have done for me."

"I understand where you're coming from." He went on and explained how he was going to get Ethan to pay for all the

damages that he caused. So he was not going to use his money. Ethan was going to pay for everything. That meant he was going to suffer. I didn't want to revenge but business wise there was nothing else I could do to save my company.

"I know he has to pay but I don't want Girly to be affected she doesn't have to suffer because of her father's evil deeds." I said.

He nodded. "Prince told me how much you love her. I

opened a trust fund for her. She will be well taken care

of. Prince will also make sure of it but I can't say the same

for her father." He clenched his jaws.

"I need to get in contact with my lawyer. I want him to draw

a divorce for me." I said.

"Okay I will tell your PA."

"Thank you once again. When did you and Lisa get here by

the way."

"We arrived yesterday but we had a few things to take care

of that is why we didn't come by."We talked for a little bit
and the medication was starting to work so he left
because I was sleepy.

My divorce papers were ready to be signed in three days.I

signed my part what was only left was for Ethan to sign

his part.Even if we didn't sign a prenup I was going to keep

my property and he was going to keep his.My lawyer said

in case he was going to try and fight for my property he

was not going to win because they had a lot of dirt on him.

"Are you ready?" Lindy asked for the fifth time. We were parked outside what used to be my home. The whole pack accompanied me. Petty and Mary included.

"I got you." Lindani squeezed my hand. I finally gathered enough courage and decided to face my demons once and for all.

We waited for Prince and he arrived too then we all went to rang the bell. The door opened and my heart shattered into a million pieces looking at Maka who opened the door for

us glowing and looking good. My eyes landed on her tummy which she was continuously rubbing. I couldn't miss that baby bump. No one could because she was heavily pregnant and I knew what this meant. I tried to think of some other man being responsible for that pregnancy at the back of my head I knew who the father was. Everything was starting to make sense now. What I thought was the period mood swings wasn't it. It was actually jealousy plus the hormones.

She frowned looking at me."What the hell are you doing here?"She folded her arms.

"You have the nerve." Prince pushed her aside and we walked inside.

"Maka my dear come to the kitchen I need to feed my grandchild." That witch shouted and my tears streamed down my cheeks.I was hurt.I was betrayed.How could my own sister do me like this.My own blood.I tried so much to suppress my sobs but I ended up wailing.

"What on earth are you doing here?" Mrs Jaji's voice filled the room. Lisa attacked her when we all least expected it but her mother was quick to act she immediately pulled her away from Mrs Jaji.

"We didn't come here to fight and you're not going to go ghetto on someone who is older than you Lisa. Its disrespectful. I raised you better than that." MaZulu

reprimanded while Mrs Jaji was busy shouting and cursing.

"What going on Maa. What's with all the shouting?" I almost

laughed when I saw Ethan. He was using crutches and his whole face was blue and swollen. His left eye was even closed. He had a bandage on his left arm and a moon boot on his left leg. I looked at Lindani and remembered when he said he was going to have a man to man talk with Ethan and came back later with his knuckles bleeding. When Ethan looked at Lindani he trembled.

"You come into our house like you own the place you don't know me very well. You will know me today." Mrs Jaji

shouted.

"Or what are you going to do huh? Practice your witchcraft

on all of us here. You don't know me very well too." MaZulu

started with her prayers. While I just continued crying

looking at Maka who didn't seem bothered by

anything. She was even enjoying her sandwich looking

unfazed. We were all quiet as MaZulu continued praying in

tongues within a few minutes

. You're a disgrace to motherhood. You should be ashamed

of yourself. You have to repent from everything that you did
or the Holy fire is coming for you. As for you Ethan you
deserve everything that's coming for you. You're a disgrace
to men. You should be ashamed of yourself. Maka just
remember that God is watching. Instead of supporting
your sister through this ordeal you chose to turn your back
on her. Blood is thicker than water child. One day you're
going to need her. One day is one day. You know the funny
part about all of this is that you're a woman as well. You

might experience worse than what she went through. That day of reckoning will come and you will remember my words. You will remember your sister's cries and you will wish you had helped. Mark my words young lady. Mark my words." MaZulu said and sat down.

"You have no idea what you have done to your life little sis. You have no idea what you have done to your future. Did you hate me this much Maka?" I wept. What hurt most is that she worked with Mrs Jaji to bring me

down.How evil can one be?

She shrugged."I did what you failed to do.In fact what you will forever fail to do."She had no remorse at all and Lisa shook her head.I could see that she wanted to beat the crap out of her but she was trying so much to control her anger.

Prince was agitated that she slapped Maka."Your brother in law Maka.You had the nerve to open your damn legs for your sister's husband. You disgust me.And when this

backfires don't ever come to me for help. I don't ever want to see you again. You're dead to me. You're dead to us!" He shouted. Trying to talk some sense to her was a waste of time because she wasn't remorseful so I shifted my focus to Ethan who was looking down all the time.

I wasn't the type that enjoyed dishing out my dirty laundry out in the public. Under normal circumstances I could have asked to talk to Ethan in private but even though he was using crutches and he was beaten to a pulp I no longer

trusted him with my life anymore.

"I have a lot I want to say to you Ethan but I don't even

know where to start. You hurt me Ethan. What pains me the

most is you watched everything that I went through. You

were there for me through it all but you're the same person

who abused me. I don't want to go deeper into the details

because I'm the only one who will be hurt even more

here. Now all I want to know is why did you mess with my

business. After everything that happened

everything that
you did to me you owe me the truth.I deserve that much
from you." I cried.

"Start talking bra.Start talking." Lisa stood up and started
rolling her sleeves.Prince held her down and she rolled her
eyes.She really wanted war.Ethan kept on looking down
without saying a word.

"Like she said start talking." Lindy took out her gun again

Mrs Jaji and Maka,Ethan trembled in fear.I remained calm

since MaZulu told me that it wasn't a real gun.I didn't see

Lindy as the violent type but the look on her face made me

think twice.

"When we signed the marriage contract, among the papers

there was one which you signed.It was a document that

granted me power of attorney and everything else.So I

tricked you into signing everything that you own over to

me.I felt like it was supposed to be mine.My parents took

care of you and your siblings.They made you who you're

today. For you to be more successful than me hit me the wrong way. I felt like I deserved everything. If it wasn't for my family you wouldn't have owned anything. If it wasn't for my father you were going to be no one."

"You're Satan without horns. You're the devil, Lucifer in human flesh wena and you deserve to be in hell!!" Lisa shouted and tried to attack Ethan but Prince calmed her down.

I was too shocked and hurt to say a word. This was

betrayal at it's best.

"You did all of this simply because you were jealous.You

hurt me because of what I worked so hard for.Did you hate

me this much.We have been friends for years and you do

me like this?"

I tookout the divorce papers.I didn't want to lookat him

anymore.Now everything was starting to make sense.He

was cool about me working because he knew he owned

everything so he was going to enjoy the fruits of my labour.

"Just sign the divorce papers Ethan. Give me my freedom then you can be with Maka and enjoy the rest of your life. Let me go Ethan."

"You don't have to beg him Mj. Wena sign the damn papers." Lindy said.

"I'm sorry Maj I'm really sorry. I don't know what came over me. I'm sorry for hurting you and disappointing you. I was supposed to protect you. I was supposed to love you but I didn't. I regret it and I wish I could turn back the hands of

time and..."

"Just sign the damn papers Ethan. Just sign the papers

dammit. I don't want to hear your sob stories. You never

loved me. You never did. I was an easy mark for you. All you

ever wanted was to own me. Your goal was to control me

and keep me like a prized possession. You're not capable

of loving anyone but yourself Ethan. Just sign the papers I

can't stand being in the same room with you anymore. The

only reason you're not in prison is only because she is

pregnant. That is the only reason why I'm not laying any charges but don't think you will get away with it. Everything you did to me is going to come back and bite you."

Everyone was shocked with my outbursts. Lindani kept on brushing my arm in an attempt to calm me down but I was even shaking with anger. How could he say he was sorry when he raped me and treated me like trash. How could he?!

"You're wasting our time here man. You heard the lady. Sign

the damn papers." Lindani who hadn't spoken a word since we arrived said and Ethan took the pen with a trembling hand and signed everything.

"You played dirty. So just a little heads up I'm going to play even more dirtier. Its going to get very ugly for you and I will make sure of it." Lindani said and Ethan continued trembling especially when Lindani walked towards him.

"I'm going to pay you a visit before I leave. You and I are going to have a very long conversation before I leave. See

you man." Lindani patted him on the shoulder and Ethan

wincing in pain.

"I want to see Girly." I said. Mrs Jaji wanted to say

something but one look from MaZulu she kept quiet. I went

upstairs with Prince. She was peacefully sleeping in her

bed. I cried and kissed her forehead. Have I had adopted

her legally I was going to contest for a full custody but I

did not. So I had no right to fight for custody which hurt me

because Girly was my baby.

"Promise you will take care of her while I'm away.Promise me Prince.Promise you will take care of my baby."

He held my hands."I promise I will."It was painful having to leave my baby without saying goodbye but it had to be done.I looked at Maka,Mrs Jaji and Ethan one more time.

"Karma doesn't forget the address." I said and we walked out.

"I forgot my phone." Lindy said running back inside.

"Ohh shit she didn't forget her phone." Lindani said

following her. Before he opened the door a gunshot went off. Everyone panicked. Me included. We all ran inside and saw Ethan groaning on the floor. Maka had fainted and Mrs Jaji was screaming her lungs out. Ethan kept on groaning and crying. Lindy had shot him on the leg. But MaZulu said it was a fake gun!

"Lindy what did you do?" Lindani was agitated.

"I just taught this bastard a lesson. Don't worry its a flesh wound." Everyone sighed in relief. We all left and I didn't feel bad that he was shot. If anything he deserved a gunshot wound and many more.

34

MAJESTY

New start.

"I can't believe he did that to her and to think I vouched for that guy. I'm even ashamed. I now see that my judgement was biased. I never thought he would go that far."

After coming back from Ethan's house I went straight to my room and locked myself up. MaZulu said I needed my own time so no one disturbed me. After I cried my eyeballs out I went to the kitchen to get myself some water that's

when I overheard Mary and Petty talking.

"I feel pity for her.I really feel for her.I mean it's very hard

having to find out that you were betrayed by your own

blood.Betrayal comes from the people who you care about

the most and are close to you.It must be very difficult for

her.I feel so sorry for her." Petty said shaking his head.I

walked in because I just couldn't stand them feeling pity

for me like that.Sympathy was the last thing I wanted.They

both kept quiet when I walked in.

"Don't stop on my account. You can continue talking. I'm pretty sure the joke is on me right.No wonder everyone is feeling pity for me.Ethan still had the last laugh." I opened the fridge and drank the milk from the bottle.

"No its not like that friend.We are just sorry that everything happened the way it did.No one deserves what happened. I'm so sorry."Mary said brushing both my arms.

I was suddenly agitated.I yanked her hands off." I don't need pity Mary.You don't have to feel sorry for me."I

shouted and that attracted attention from everyone else

who was in the lounge.They all came in the kitchen

wondering what was up with me.

I laughed bitterly shaking my head and started pacing up

and down."This was my karma.You all don't have to feel

pity for me.This was my punishment for breaking people's

hearts.From all the men that I treated like trash after

getting what I wanted.All those guys who just wanted to

be loved.I ruined Angela's marriage.I broke Tyrone's heart

and I broke Treet's heart too.This is my punishment so

don't feel pity for me okay."I sat down on the floor and

started rocking myself back and forth.

"She did what I couldn't do.In fact she did what I won't be

able to do.My own sister betrayed me.My own blood." I

buried my head into my hands and continued rocking

myself whilst I laughed at my own misery.I felt his big

hands engulfing me and within a moment I was in the

air.He carried me back to my room without saying a

word.He carefully laid me on the bed and continuously

brushed my hair while I wailed my lungs out.

"I wish I could take the pain away.I wish I could do

something to numb your pain." He murmured.

I was tired of crying.I was just staring at the ceiling without

saying a thing.

"Can I come in." Lindy peeped through the door and

walked in.She had a glass of water.

"You need to drink some water.You cried your eyeballs out

for that devil without horns."

I smiled lazily and drank the water.

"I didn't know you were a kickass. And where the hell did you get the gun from?" I asked and she exchanged glances with Lindani.

She sat on the beanbag. "Well I took some defense and shooting classes back in the day. I carried the gun because I knew we were dealing with psychos like your ex husband. Don't worry the gun is licensed."

"There are really many sides to you huh.." I yawned.

Suddenly I was feeling sleepy."What did you put in my water?"

"You need to rest." Those were the last words I heard from

Lindani before I closed my eyes and drifted off to

lalaland.Sedating me might have looked like a better

solution but it wasn't.I was going to wake up and face my

miseries which were patiently waiting for me.The

sedatives really got into my system because I woke up the

following day. When I did I got off the bed and went to take a shower. After I was done I gathered enough courage and went to stand in front of the mirror. I didn't recognize the woman that was staring back at me. Her hair was unkept, she had eye bags, the bruises and scars that were on her body were ugly. She was very skinny. For heaven's sake she wasn't even shaved. Eew!

"Ohhh God you seriously look like shit but we are gonna solve that today." I was hurting and I couldn't run away

from the pain in as much as I wanted to but I had to move

on. It wasn't going to be easy but staring back at my own

reflection I wasn't pleased so I decided to sweep

everything under the carpet and move on with my pathetic

life. When it hurts the most like this I was going to put a

smile on my face. I went and took a second shower. I

scrubbed and shaved and scrubbed again till I was

satisfied with myself. I went through my closet to look for

something to wear but everything was oversized now so I

settled for an oversized T-shirt. After I was done I applied makeup and covered my bruises.

"It seems like I might need a haircut." I said looking at my afro hair which was tangled. I made a mental note to get a haircut and dye it copper brown. I walked down the stairs struggling to tie my hair. It was already breakfast judging by the fact that they were all seated but no one was eating.

"Good morning everybody." I said cheerfully and flashed them all my best smile. They were surprised with my

sudden change of behavior.

"Umm.Are you okay?" Lindy asked.

I smiled and shrugged."It's a new day.I'm still breathing.So

yes I'm fine.Okay I get it you thought I was going to be all

sad and looking like a mess.Well I can't let Ethan and

Maka run my life."I looked at the food."What do we have

here this looks mouthwatering."I started dishing up for

myself and I could feel the deep stares from MaZulu and

Lindani.I decided to ignore it and started eating.

"If I didn't know better I would say you have multiple personalities but then again this is not a movie and I think the story I read online yesterday called Love In A Hopeless Place is starting to get into my head.I'm never reading stories again." Lisa said looking at me with her eyebrow raised.I just continued eating without saying a word.After breakfast MaZulu came to me and asked me if I was ok.

"I'm perfectly okay.I just cannot wait to leave this place.Talking about that I want to sell my shares of

Majesty Innovations."

"What?Why?"Lindani asked walking in."Everything is working out now.You're the owner people are getting paid and the only thing left is for you to win back your clients which I'm sure you will manage.Why do you wanna sell your shares.Its your hard work?"

"I'm starting on a clean slate.I'm relocating to SA."He couldn't hide his smile no matter how hard he tried.

"But that doesn't mean you should sell your business. You

can still manage it from SA." He sat down.

"That is the thing.I said I'm starting on a clean slate which

means I have to sell my shares.I want nothing to do with

the company anymore.. From the word go it was

associated with bad luck.Ethan's father used that against

me.I chose it against the man I claimed to love.All that

Ethan did to me was all because of the company so I'm

just tired I want nothing to do with it.I want to start

something else.So later in the day I might need to go and

have a meeting with my other shareholders. I will announce that I'm selling and hopefully I will find a buyer as quick as possible because with the bad reputation it has been having lately it will be a difficult task. Unfortunately I will have to face Ethan and his mother. They have shares too."

"There is no need for that you're looking at the buyer right now." Lindani said.

"Wait. What?! You mean you want to buy my shares?" I asked.

"Yea I want to. I will also make sure Ethan and his mother sell theirs to me as well. They shouldn't have anything to with the company." He said.

"Ohh okay fine deal then we need to discuss this with our lawyers. Get all the paperwork done and all the formalities that are needed to be done." I said.

He nodded. "Cool then. I will also work on my side but that can happen while we are in SA right." I nodded.

"So what do you wanna do after this? What business do

you want to start?" He asked.

"I will think about that. Right now I'm just gonna go and pack. I take it we are leaving tomorrow in the evening." He smiled and nodded.

"I just hope everything will be fine once you're in SA. I'm just praying that everything falls back in place for you once again." He sighed.

"I pray so too but then again this is life. It's full of surprises and with the way my life is like I don't see anything falling

into place just like that. I'm like a magnet I attract trouble

you know. Instead of running away from it. I run to it." I

shrugged and stood up. "Let me go and pack."

"Need a hand?" He asked

"Maybe."

He helped me pack my belongings. The following day we

left for SA. I left my cars and apartment to Prince. He was

going to sell three of them and send me the money. Before

leaving I explained to Petty and Mary about my decision of

selling my shares.They were upset but I had made up my mind and no one was going to stop me.Mary was left in charge till everything else was settled.I honestly didn't know Lindani's intentions and why he was interested in buying my shares.The last time I remember it was said he was into construction. Whatever the reason was.I was glad that I was letting go of that line of business.I wanted to start something new with my own money so that in the future no one would hold anything against me.Mr Jaji's

stunt had taught me things the hard way. My experiences with that family taught me a lot about life. They broke me in a way I can ever explain but I was going to do better with myself. Deep down I was suffering a lot but like they say smile when it hurts the most and move on. I was taking that saying very religiously smiling when it hurts the most.

When we arrived at OR Tambo International airport I sighed thinking about my life in Hollywood. That chapter of my life was closed. I could feel it in me that I had opened

yet another part two of my dramatic life. I brushed my thoughts away because I didn't want to stress about what this new start chapter had installed for me. Martha ran up to us with her big stomach . My gosh she was very ugly. This pregnancy wasn't treating her well. Lindy told me that she miscarried the pregnancy she had back in Paris and now she was pregnant again. Good for her. She was with Lwandile, Leon, Siphon and their son Mark. She first went to her mom in law whilst Siphon ran to me. To say I

was happy is an understatement. I was over the moon that

I squeezed him in a tight embrace.

"How are you my baby." I played with his afro and he

smiled.

"I'm fine and glad you're here. I thought grandma was lying

when she said you were relocating here. Now we are going

to have so much fun." We did a signature handshake that

he taught me and everyone laughed. I hugged Leon and

Mark but when it came to Lwandile it was awkward for

some reason. He prolonged the hug that I had to literally pull myself out of his embrace. It looked like I was the only one who noticed that strange moment. I shrugged and brushed it off.

"How have you been. I'm glad you're okay now." He brushed my cheek and I just smiled.

"I'm getting there." I said.

"Let's all go home I prepared a late lunch for you guys!"

Martha exclaimed.

There were four jeeps with chauffeurs. Talk about being extravagant. Anyway within thirty minutes or so we had arrived in Rosebank and my jaws were still on the floor while I was staring at the mansion in front of me. I had seen beautiful mansions before but this was on some whole new level. It was designed in an Mediterranean castle style and the landscape was to die for.

"Uncle Scar!!" Voices dragged my thoughts back to reality because I was busy admiring the beauty of the mansion.

They should have just made it a hotel.

"Anita, Mary

Advertisement

Mitchell." Lindani smiled and lifted them like they were potato sacks.

"I can't wait to meet my hubby dear. Let me go check on

him. You feel at home." MaZulu ran upstairs. We all sat

down in the lounge as Martha introduced me to her sister

in laws Zara and Thokozile. The kids who had ran to

Lindani earlier belonged to them. Two girls Anita and

Mitchell. Mary was Martha and Lwandile's daughter. They were almost Siphos age.

"Honestly your beauty was exaggerated. You're not all that." The one who was introduced as Thokozile said. My self esteem was crushed. After what Ethan had done I was struggling with self love and my self esteem so for her to say that didn't make anything better for me. Lindani gave her a death stare that sent a cold chill down my spine too.

"I'm sorry Mj I was just playing with you.It was meant to be a joke." She said shifting uncomfortably.

"Your jokes aren't funny." Lwandile frowned."And she is very beautiful but I can't say the same for you."

"Behave guys." Leon said.

After a few minutes MaZulu started walking down hand in hand with who I assumed was Mr Zulu and the first wife.He was a caramel chocolate man he looked too hot for a grandpa.He had the aura like that of Lindani but it

was less intimidating and chilling. They sat on the opposite couch and I found myself playing with my fingers, worried if this Zulu pack was going to like me. Already this Thoko didn't like me. MaZulu did the introductions and Mr Zulu was very happy to have me in his house.

"I have heard a lot about you from my sons and I must say you're very beautiful." The first wife said. Her words didn't sound genuine or is it maybe I was given a long ass speech by Lindy not to ever trust her because she was

always up to no good. I had my guard very up when it comes to her. After the introductions we all went to the dining for the late lunch. I must say Martha went all out and I really enjoyed.

After that all I wanted was to rest because I was jet lagged. MaZulu had asked me to stay over at their place for a while till I'm back on my feet. I didn't want to invade their privacy so I decided to stay with Lindy and Lisa in Sandton instead. Sipho, Mark, Mary, Anita and Mitchell all

decided to sleep over at their aunts' place because they couldn't get enough of me. At least the kids loved me. Despite that nasty comment from Thoko I felt welcomed in the Zulu household.

"We are definitely having a slumber party." Siphso exclaimed.

"I don't wanna miss out so I'm coming with you

guys." Lwandile tried to talk Martha out of it saying she

was close to her due date but she was having none of it.

"I heard what happened to you. Trust me I could have come

and be by your side but with my condition I couldn't. I'm so sorry that you went through what you went through. I feel for you and if you ever wanna talk just know that I'm here."

Martha said when we were at Lindy and Lisa's place. I must say it was yet another beautiful house. The duo had left to buy some groceries since there was no one staying at the house so there were no groceries.

"Thank you Martha. I appreciate your concern but I'm fine now you really don't have to worry about me." I smiled.

"Are you okay?" I asked because ever since we arrived she has been shifting unconformably.

"I have been experiencing some pain like period cramps and my back is on fire too but I will take some pain killers and I will be fine." She said wincing a little bit

"No you're having contractions Martha and that only means you're about to give birth."

"I think you're right." She was looking down at her thighs. "My water just broke."

"Ohh hell no." All I wanted was to rest dear lord not all this. I took her phone and called her husband, then I called the duo. Within a few minutes they were in the house running around like headless chickens. Lwandile was nervous.

"Did you bring her suitcases?" I asked Lwandile whilst Lindani was taking Martha to the car.

"Oops I forgot." He scratched his head.

"Then go get it." I was staying behind to look after the kids.

"How far is she?" I asked Lindani. He was the one I was communicating with over the phone. They had arrived to the hospital.

"They said 5cm does it have to stretch to like 20cm or something?" He asked.

I laughed. "It should be 10cm but don't worry she will pull through. Weren't you there when Sipho was born?" I asked.

"No I wasn't."

We continued talking whilst I prepared dinner on my side. I

needed to keep my sanity because it felt like I was the one giving birth. I sighed in sadness when I remembered that I was never going to have that chance again.

"It's a girl!!!" Lindani exclaimed over the phone and I was genuinely happy for Martha and Lwandile.

The following days were full of bliss. Martha came out of the hospital. She and her baby were in a good condition.

After seven days they had to leave to KZN for some ceremonies that were supposed to be held for the

baby. MaZulu invited me but I turned down her invitation. Reason being I was all up in my feelings and having to be around Martha and her baby would just make things worse for me. The naming ceremony and the introduction of the baby to the ancestors was supposed to last for a week or so but after two days Lisa came back because she wanted to keep me company.

"I want to start a rehab center." I said out of the blue when

Lisa and I were in the kitchen enjoying our breakfast.

"A rehab center?" She asked.

I sighed."Yes a rehab center.I have been doing a lot of thinking.Back in America I wasn't the nicest person one could come across.I was selfish,arrogant and pompous.Despite having a lot of money there wasn't a day that I made time to visit a charity organization.Instead I sent my PA to do things for me.Maybe what I went through was fate's way of humbling me and teaching me a lesson.Life humbled me.Honestly after the whole ordeal

with Ethan I feel different. Deep inside me I'm broken but there is something else that I'm failing to explain. The new me. Another part of me is broken and in pain yet a huge part feels fine. To a great extent I'm completely okay so I just want to move on and start on a new slate"

"You were scorned Maj. There is that saying hell hath no fury than a woman scorned. You can't say you went through that whole ordeal to be humbled and you can't honestly say you're fine. I'm watching you Mj. I have seen

how you're trying to wear a poker face and act like

everything is okay but none of this is ok. You're a ticking

time bomb. I must be honest with you here. If this

continues one day you might explode. I love your idea of

starting a rehab but I suggest that you also go first for

therapy. When you're completely fine you will continue with

your plans." She said looking sternly at me.

"I'm completely okay Lisa really."

"Who are you trying to convince me or yourself? Mj you

need help my dear." She said and I was suddenly agitated.

"I don't need help Lisa.I said I'm fine." I snapped and she

arched her eyebrow."I'm sorry for snapping."

"Its okay I understand dear no need to apologize.I did tell

you you're a ticking time bomb." She winked at me and I

smiled.

"But on a serious note you should consider therapy.After

all you did attempt to commit suicide and you went

through shit."

"I don't need a shrink."

I said and she just shrugged. We spent the day netflixing and chilling. The house was quiet since the kids were not around. We started brainstorming on my ideas of the rehab center. Since Lindy was into charity organizations I made a mental note to talk to her about my idea of a rehab center and make a collaboration. I was also going to talk to Lindani and Lwandile since they were into construction. I needed their services too. Lisa had pharmacies she was

going to give me her services too. She was going to provide medicines needed for me.

"It's going to be a great rehab center trust me." Lisa said.

"I pray so. There are a lot of women who are losing their

minds because of domestic violence. I'm just hoping that

the center would be of great help. If it becomes successful

I might open other organizations in other provinces. I just

need to help the women out there who are suffering."

"But who is gonna help you Mj." She asked. I rolled my eyes

and ignored her. I honestly didn't need any help at least

that's what I felt. I was hurting but just like a wound. It was

going to get better with time.

"When the pack comes back I want to move out so I might

need your help with the best apartments around here."

"Why do you want to move out. We are enjoying your company

here." She sulked.

"And I enjoy your company too but I can't stay here

forever. I will be near you since I also want to stay here in

Sandton."

She pouted."Okay fine I hear you.I will talk to Lindani he owns some luxurious apartments around."

"I don't want anything for free.Anyway Lindani is into property too."

"Obviously you're Majesty after all.An ndependent woman.And yes Lindani is into property too.He is into a lot of things."

"Hmm okay."

We spent the rest of the days with Lisa being indoors. Now

I knew a lot about her and her twin and I must say they

were amazing people.

"Lisa are you bisexual." Well I had to ask she dressed like a

guy and behaved like one at times. She had tattoos on both

her sleeves just like Lindani.

She laughed. "Hell no I love the D-game. Its just that I have

more male genes in me but I'm not into girls but I kinda

crush on a few. Ok maybe I m bisexual but urgh whatever.

For now I'm into guys."

"We are home!!" Lindy opened the door and ran inside

followed by the minions.They all hugged me and I almost

fell.Receiving this much love was something I was not

used to and I was worried if it was going to last or they

were going to betray me one day just like how Ethan and

Maka did.Those two really messed me up and I didn't see

myself trusting anyone ever again.I found myself looking

at the doorway.He was standing there with his hands in

his pockets as always. I smiled at him and he smiled back and walked towards us. We hugged and it was longer than intended. When we broke the hug everyone had already disappeared from the room. I looked at him for a while we haven't seen each other since Martha gave birth. He was smiling too but you could see that something was bothering him. Lisa had once said that he wasn't really close with their paternal relatives. There was some family drama so I guess that's what was weighing him down. I

didn't blame him though. He took care of his family alone

while the relatives enjoyed their lives. Once he did

something for his family that's when they came back.

"I brought you something from iLembe." He said taking

something from his pockets. It was a bracelet made from

white pearls and beads. "My grandmother made it." He said.

"It's beautiful thank you so much." I wore it.

"Umm you're welcome. So can you come over for dinner at

my place. I figured you haven't gone there ever since you

moved here.It will be me and Sipho."

I smiled."Dinner at your place it is."

Sipho was excited when he had that I agreed to have

dinner with them.He was over the moon shame.

"Wow this so amazing." I said looking at his house.It

wasn't a "castle" like their family house but it was very

beautiful still. I was even more mesmerized when we

walked into the lounge.The industrial interior was my style

but it needed a woman's touch though.

"Madam please come this way." One of the maids said

leading me to the lounge while the father and son duo

disappeared upstairs.

"I'm Mj don't call me madam."

"I don't think sir would like it if I call you by your name.Can

I get you something.Water or wine?"

"Umm water will be fine." She nodded and went to the

kitchen.I started admiring looking around.Lindani really

had a good taste.Then my eyes landed on the huge

portrait that was on the wall. The woman there was beautiful and had violet eyes that reminded me of Treet. For some strange reason looking at that picture made me feel somehow. Like a sting somewhere deep inside of me. I didn't need to be told obviously that was the Ariana.

"That's Ariana my late wife." His deep voice brought me back to reality.

"Ohh she was beautiful. Very beautiful." I admitted.

"Thank you. Do you want to tour around before we start on dinner." He asked.

"I would love that." They both took me on a tour but we didn't finish touring since I was already dead tired. This house was huge but it looked like it wasn't from the outside.

"Let's go back now. I'm sure dinner is ready." We all went back.

"Babe. Babe! Scar babe why didn't you come for our

checkup today.I have something to tell you.Guess what I

have twin bro---" I remembered that voice and I found

myself clenching my jaws.

I turned and looked at her.She looked good no lies and my

eyes landed on her on the baby she had in her arms.

"Ohh hell no!!!" She frowned.

35

MAJESTY

Ignore a fool to avoid noise.

"We meet again Dely." I gave her a lazy smile and she was

fuming like nobody's business.

"What the hell is she doing here Lindani?" She furiously

walked towards us.

"I don't answer to you." Lindani was all calm and started

dishing for himself ignoring the fuming Dely.

"Ohh at least you answer to your daughter. You abandoned

us Lindani. For what? So that you can be with her. Sending money doesn't cut it. You need to be there for your child Lindani. Lily is your child and you're her father. If this goes on then I'm going to contest for full custody. Then we will see if this bitch is worth you losing your daughter." She frowned looking at me. It seemed the argument was about to get intense with the way Lindani was clenching his jaws. He was upset. I honestly didn't know why she was being insecure. Jeez Lindani and I weren't dating.

"We are going to have our dinner in the kitchen." I didn't

wait for his reply and took Siphoh with me.

"That woman is a nightmare. She doesn't even want me

near my sister." Siphoh clenched his jaws.

"Don't worry about it let's just enjoy our food here okay." I

squeezed his hand.

We started eating quietly while those two were busy

arguing. Delia was just being dramatic. I felt pity for the

baby though. She was caught up in this mess.

"I'm so sorry she ruined the dinner. I did not know she was going to come." He sat on the kitchen chairs.

"It's okay. Let me warm your food and dish up for you." I said wiping my hands with a dishtowel.

"You don't have to. I have people for that." He said.

"Don't worry I got this." I warmed his food, dished up for him and gave him warm water to wash his hands. All that time he was just looking at me and I looked everywhere else but him. Sipho and I had ice cream while he ate his

food. After he was done I washed the dishes again and asked him to take me back to the duo's place but it was kinda late. He said he was too tired to drive around. I didn't have any option but to sleep over at his place.

"I'm too grown for a lullaby or a bedtime story. So we are going to play a video game till I feel sleepy." Siphos dragged me to his room. We played games till we both passed out on the couch. The following morning I woke up in the guestroom. Well that meant Lindani carried me there. I

quickly showered and went downstairs to prepare breakfast for them before I leave. It took me a lot of convincing for the maid to allow me to cook.

"Good morning." His voice startled me that I dropped the spoon.

"Ohh my God don't sneak up on me ever again. You almost gave me a heart attack." I said picking up the spoon and looking at him. He was leaning on the door shirtless and with only his Nike shorts. He was holding a towel and

headphones were snaked around his neck and sweat was dripping all over his upper body. I found myself staring more like drooling. Don't look at me like that I was just admiring God's creation with my eyes. He looked like sin. If he had come into my life a year ago we could have been talking of something else. I was no longer that girl.

"I'm coming from a jog. I thought I would find you fast asleep." His voice startled me because I was kind of lost in my own thoughts.

"Well I'm a morning person so I decided to make breakfast.

I actually thought you were still asleep." I focused on my

pots because looking at him would only make me have

sinful thoughts.

"It smells really good.Anyway let me go take a shower." He

said.

"Okay." I stole a glance and he caught me.

He smirked."Remember in Paris I once told you to take a

picture.It always last."He winked and went upstairs leaving

me with heated cheeks. After I was done preparing

breakfast I went to wake Sipho up which was a struggle

because he didn't want to.

"Five more minutes mom." He said with his eyes

closed. Tears streamed down my cheeks. Did he just call

me mom. I became so emotional.

"Come on baby wake up. I prepared your favourite omelette

and beef steak sandwich." When I mentioned food he

quickly got off the bed and ran to the bathroom. I wiped

my tears and smiled.I made his bed and went back

downstairs to dish up for Lindani who was all dressed up

in his usual black jeans and a black hoodie.

"Lisa said you want to move out of their place why?" He

asked.

"I will have to move out sooner or later.I can't stay with

them forever.I need my private space and I'm sure they do

too." He nodded his head and continued typing something

on his phone.

"Okay I will have my estate agent to help you around on that issue.I have some apartments around so you will choose the one you like and I will get my lawyer to draw up the lease." He said.

"Okay thank you.I have something I wanted to discuss with you but after breakfast." I sat down.

"Okay cool."

Sipho came downstairs and we all enjoyed our breakfast with Sipho cracking jokes here and there.He made me

genuinely happy. With Sipho around I didn't have to put on a poker face because he actually warmed my heart and he was my happy place. Its like my happiness was entirely on him. After breakfast he left to a friend's house and that gave Lindani and I an opportunity to talk about business.

"So I talked to Lwandile about buying your shares and he agreed. I was just talking to my lawyer now and he already made all the formalities needed. He talked to your lawyer too. Your price is good and we are going to stick to that. I

also got the other shareholders apart from Prince to sell their stakes. The money will be yours. You're the owner after all and you deserve it."

I became emotional. "You didn't have to."

"No I had to. Those people shouldn't have anything to do with your company."

We continued discussing about him buying the shares. At first I actually thought he was just saying he wanted to buy just for the sake of saying but he was very serious. Even

though it wasn't really a formal meeting we contacted our lawyers. The process was going to be done the following day. I talked to him about my idea of a rehab center too and how I wanted the services of his construction company. He was impressed.

"That's a very good idea. So you draw up a plan

Lwandile, Lindy and I will help you out in everything. In fact

you should talk to Lwandile in person he is really good at

drawing business plans. He will help you out." I was

uncomfortable with the idea of working with Lwandile. I had this weird vibe I was getting from him ever since that prolonged hug at the airport. It might have appeared as if I was exaggerating the whole issue but my gut feeling was telling me otherwise. We continued talking until Lisa, Lwandile and some four guys came. The guys were all wearing expensive suits holding briefcases but they were kind of creepy. One of them even had tattoos on his face he looked like a detention desk. They all greeted me, calling

me MaZulu. Then my eyes landed on him. What the hell is the Mexican guy doing here? My inner voice shouted while I looked at him with shock written all over my face. He recognized me because he was equally surprised.

"You!!!" We said in unison. I honestly wanted to laugh when I remembered our encounter and how I embarrassed him but this wasn't the time. Why was my past knocking on my door again?

"What the hell are you doing here?" We said in unison

again.

"You guys know each other?" Lindani asked.

We both nodded.

"How do you know each other. Is Carlos your ex Majesty?"

Lisa asked. My dear lord how was I going to explain that I

kicked this Carlos guy out of my house because he didn't

know his way in bed. Carlos on the other hand was looking

down in embarrassment. I'm sure he was reliving the

moment that I told him that I don't want to be tickled.

"Umm we just had an encounter. It wasn't a pleasant one."

I said.

"Umm do you mind if I ask what kind of an encounter it was?" Lwandile stared at me. Again his look was giving me the creeps. The way he stared at me was just questionable.

"Its in the past now okay. You don't have to know about it because it doesn't matter anymore." Carlos was scared of the death stares he was getting from Lindani.

"Cool anyway let me drop you off. I have some business I

need to discuss with the gents." He took his car keys and held my hand as we walked out. I could feel the stares I was getting from the guys when we walked out. He drove me back home in silence and it was really uncomfortable. I just prayed that Carlos doesn't open his mouth but with the way I bruised his ego back then he was not going to say anything and subject himself to humiliation. Now this was one of the moments I was starting to question some of the choices I made in my life. I wondered how many

men I had a past with that I was going to meet

accidentally like this.

"We are here?" I was lost in my thoughts his voice brought

me back to reality.

"Thank you." I said quickly getting out of

the car.He drove off when I walked inside.I leaned on the

door and sighed in relief.Well that was awkward.

"So how was the dinner." Lindy winked at me.

"It was okay.What's with that naughty face?" I raised my

eyebrow. She laughed it off and ignored me.

LINDANI

One step at a time. There is no need to rush.

I clenched my jaws as I drove off. I knew what the deal was

between Carlos and Mj but it wasn't in my place to even

judge her because I had my own skeletons in the closet

which could come flying my way anytime. I couldn't stop

myself from being jealous though. Yes Majesty wasn't

mine to claim "yet" but soon enough I was going to put

bullets in the skulls of people like Carlos. I didn't even want to imagine what went down between those two. When I arrived I found Lisa busy interrogating Carlos. He was one of my Mexican guys who I did business with and I didn't want our personal issues to mess business for us so I told Lisa to stop interrogating him. I wasn't interested in knowing what went down between him and Majesty. One thing I was sure of however was that Majesty somehow bruised his ego and that made me feel better. Crazy I know.

"We weren't supposed to meet here you know that right." I didn't fancy the idea of hustling at my place because I didn't want to subject Sipho to drugs and guns or anything else which was shady. So we all walked out and drove to one of our isolated warehouse.

"This is what I have for you and my boss want you to triple the amount of ketamine and we will triple the money. A kilogram of ketamine we will make it \$8,500."

"\$9000 a kilogram or nothing." I said. They knew I meant

business so they agreed to it. We were selling them 10kg of ketamine since it was the trending drug on the market especially in Mexico. I was no longer dealing locally anymore that was Lisa and Leon's business. I was starting to deal internationally and things were working very well in Mexico. I knew this was dangerous having to deal with international crime bosses and drug lords but I was dangerous to. As long as we got along nothing was going to go wrong. Besides I had made a lot of contacts and

acquaintances so I was safe. That didn't mean I would let my guard down so easily though. We did our exchange and Lwandile left with the guys to the other warehouse so that he could give them their bricks. Lisa was happy about this deal because it brought us a lot of money.

"You know what Scar I was thinking. I'm going to mix coke and mandy then make a pill. You know during summer people rarely buy coke so if we mix it with mandy it will role in money for us."

"Isn't it dangerous?" In asked.

"Not really I will mix a reasonable amount. I examined

someone who takes both drugs. Yes its not healthy but its

not that dangerous. Its effects are like that of weed unless

you overdos buts addictive."

I nodded my head. "Okay then you talk to Leon."

"I was also thinking that we should expand our business

and start weapon smuggling. What do you think." She

asked.

"Blackwidow we are already selling drugs in bulk its dangerous as it is. Weapon smuggling will mean more labour,resources and danger.I have people I care about I don't want to endanger their lives even more."

"By people you mean Mj." I didn't answer because that was true."But she is already protected and you know we will protect her with our lives."

"I know but weapon smuggling is like adding more enemies on our list.So no.Let's just stick to what we to

best."

She arched her eyebrow. "That is not the truth. I can see right through you. You're not afraid of having enemies because you already have a lot but you know that having to add weapon smuggling on your hustling will increase the risk of Mj finding out what you really do for a living." I didn't answer her because she was telling the truth. I was afraid of Majesty having to find out what I really do for a living. She was not going to feel safe around me or at least

understand why I did what I did that I know. After everything Majesty went through she was not going to let me in anytime soon. She needed time to heal and I felt like it was going to take a long time for her to be finally convinced that not every man was out there to hurt her. There were people like me who genuinely cared about her. I have never dealt with a broken woman before and I knew I had a lot to learn when it comes to Majesty. I really had to take baby steps with her and handle her with extra

care.

"Thinking about Majesty again?" Lisa snapped her fingers

at me.

I smiled." Sorry I zoned out.Its true I'm afraid of her

reaction once she finds out about everything"

She laughed and poured herself some whisky. "Boy you're

whipped and its not even funny.At first I just thought it

was just nothing big and you were going to get over the

silly feelings but with what you're doing for her I'm finally

convinced that you're in love. I never thought I would see this day but here we are. When she finds out she might surprise you so don't stress over it but the problem is you're hiding a lot of things from her." She raised her eyebrow.

"What are you talking about?" I played dumb.

"You know you can't fool me right. I know you're not really buying her shares because they are still going to remain in her name. Why are you doing it? You really have money to

waste neh."

"She loves her company Lisa and I know she is just hurt

but Majesty Innovations is her sweat and tears.She can't

just sell everything and move on like nothing happened.I

will not allow that.So once she is over what she is going

through I will tell her that the companies still belongs to

her."

"And you think she is going to take everything

lightly.Majesty is an independent woman and after

everything she will never accept it just like that. She will want to give you back your money. If anything she might feel insulted. She is used to doing things for herself and not for man to shower her with money because she already has it." She threw herself on the beanbag.

"I know she loves doing things for herself and she spoils herself but I want to show her that despite having a lot of money she still needs to be taken care of. She has to be spoiled. Just because she is rich it doesn't mean a man can't

buy her a car or something. She has to be spoiled too. She deserves that. I also wanted to contribute on her rehab idea so I'm not wasting money here. Anyway did you make sure that the Ethan guy got blacklisted."

She nodded. "Yea I made sure of that. My source told me that the whole family booked flights to Zimbabwe. Apparently he sold his house in USA since he is broke now so they have to go back home." She said.

I smirked. "Now I will have to make sure he suffers. He

won't know what hits him.He messed with the wrong

woman."I clenched my jaws.

"He deserves what's coming his way.I just wanted to put a

bullet through his skull you know.Who does that to a

woman and Mj's sister how could she do that to her own

blood." She poured herself another glass of whisky.

"Loyalty makes us family Lisa remember that.Talking

about family.Something is up between Lwandile and

Martha."

Lwandile and Martha were not the type to go about airing their dirty laundry but what I knew very well is that something was happening between those two. Its either they had both fallen out of love with each other or one or them did because I once saw some divorce papers in Lwandile's office but he couldn't go through with it since Martha fell pregnant. I just hoped that whatever that was happening they could solve it. Despite everything that happened before they gave us the impression that they

were a perfect example of a legendary couple.

"Lwandile doesn't say anything that is the problem same

as Martha. They are too secretive about their marital

issues. They don't even seek help from the elders. They

really should solve their mess because they have an infant

for crying out loud and the last thing I want is for my niece

to be caught up in their issues. I actually thought Palesa

was going to bring them together but they are drifting

apart even more and the bad thing is

its starting to show

soon enough they won't be able to keep up with the act.I

just hope Martha is not back to her old ways."Lisa said.

"I just hope so too."

We continued chatting until she left. I didn't have much to

do than to spend the day playing video games with

Sipho.This was another reason why Majesty had to

continue with her legacy.She was creative and I knew she

loved what she did.While we were in America I came

across one of her notebooks where she wrote down her ideas and reading them I could feel her enthusiasm.

"Is Mj sleeping over again today. I really love having her around dad. Why don't you just make her your

girlfriend?" He looked sternly at me. This was another tick

on the box. Siphos and Majesty's relationship was

something I even envied. They loved each other so much

and I knew that no one else would make a better mother to

Siphos than Majesty. In response to what he has asked I

just played with his afro because I didn't know what to

say.If it was up to me I would actually have Majesty to

have dinner with us everyday and have her stay in my

house even but I didn't want to come off as being too

much for her.She was going through a lot so she needed

her space and time.I also had Delia to deal with.Urgh!

"Dad please talk to her and get her to have dinner with us

today again after all yesterday's dinner was ruined by

Delia." He pleaded.Talking about Delia she really ruined

our dinner by being dramatic for no reason. I wasn't ready

for baby mama drama. Why did I fuck her without a

condom in the first place?

"Why don't you ask her son. You know she will never say no

to you."

"That's a good idea." He ran upstairs to his room.

"So is that our new MaZulu." Derrick walked in holding two

cans of beer. He sat down and passed me a can.

"Don't you think people will be suspicious if they walk in on

me sharing beer with my garden boy." I took a sip.He

wasn't really my garden boy he was my undercover

bodyguard. I didn't want to attract unnecessary attention

by having bodyguards with black suits and guns.Instead

my guards were my undercover staff.The

chefs,cleaners,chauffers and gardener's.Those were my

guys.My line of business required protection 24 hours. I

even had some guards who stayed in the shadows.

"You haven't answered my question yet." I was close to

Derrick because he had proved his loyalty to me not once
but so many times.

"Well she isn't your new MaZulu but if it works well she will
be very soon." I smiled.

"And he smiles. But I must say she is very beautiful." I shot
him a death stare. "Don't throw daggers at me like that I'm
just admiring God's creation."

"You better be doing just that."

The following days were amazing Majesty was spending more time with us but Delia was giving me a headache using my baby as leverage. She didn't burst our bubble though, no matter how much she tried. Majesty gave zero fucks to her tantrums. She looked stupid every time she tried to start an argument with Mj because she would be ignored.

I leaned on the door watching her swaying her thick hips

side to side. She was getting back to her shape now. From being a skinny Majesty to the one who had thick full hips, thighs, huge behind, a tiny waist and medium sized boobs. I was a guy who usually loved my women slender but when it comes to Mj I couldn't stop myself from drooling the first time I saw her. She continued humming a song and dancing around. She was wearing an oversized T-shirt with a corset which revealed her tiny waist. The t-shirt wasn't long enough to cover her caramel thighs. Damn! That didn't make things easier for me. Well I

went back upstairs to take a second shower. I was hard in sensitive places but the shower calmed me down. I went back downstairs to enjoy the food she had prepared. She was really good in the kitchen too. I was even more impressed when she asked my mom to teach her some of our traditional dishes. And man like Ethan didn't appreciate this goddess. It's true that one man's trash is another man's treasure.

"Dad can I please sleep over at Majesty's place. I don't have

school tomorrow so please."Sipho gave me a puppy face.

Majesty was renting one of my best places in Sandton

near Lindy and Lisa's place.It was a thirteen minutes drive

from where I lived.

"Its okay I want someone to spend the weekend with

anyway." Majesty said playing with Sipho's hair.My plan

was actually to get Majesty to spend the weekend with us

but now Sipho ruined it.Great now I was going to spend my

weekend alone.Thankyou Sipho.

"Bad timing hey." Lwandile walked in looking

exhausted. Something was up with my little brother and it

was taking a toll on him.

"Let me go dish up for you." Majesty immediately excused

herself. There was that thing too Majesty avoided Lwandile

as much as she could or was I reading too much into

things. I looked at Lwandile whose eyes were still following

Majesty as she walked out of the room. I understand she

was very attractive but for my lil brother who happened to

be married to drool over her like that made me clench my jaws. She wasn't mine yet but I just couldn't stand any guy looking at what was going to be mine. And Lwandile knew my intentions with her.

"How is Palesa and Martha." I shot him a death stare

He sighed. "I'm sorry about that. I was just admiring. The

two are okay even though Palesa gives us a hard time and

sleepless nights." He said and we started discussing about

irrelevant things.

Majesty came back and Lwandile started updating her on the developments of her rehab center. She had already bought the land where the rehab was going to be build. Lwandile had already got the constructors on board and drew up a plan.

"So that will be all. If you want anything else to be done just tell Lindani or me we will make it happen." Lwandile stood up and Mj nodded her head.

"Thank you. I will talk to Lindani." Majesty said.

"Good then I will leave you guys. Let me go check on my girls." I walked Lwandile out.

When I got back Mj was already done packing Sipho's clothes.

"Let me get that." I said trying to get the overnight bag and our hands accidentally touched. The look on her eyes was a confirmation that she felt exactly what I felt but as usual she brushed it off and acted like she didn't feel

"electrocuted". I understood where she was coming from

and I was going to give her the time that she needed to
heal.

"Take a picture." She snapped her fingers at me because I
was already lost in my own thoughts.

"Huh?" I gave her a confused look.

She smiled. "You were staring. In fact you were drooling."

I laughed and shook my head. "You're stealing my lines
now."

36

MAJESTY

There is nothing stronger than a broken woman who rebuilds herself.

Lindani dropped Siphos and I off at my place. He didn't stay

because he had some things to take care of. Talking about

Lindani. I was getting the signs and vibes he was

sending. He wanted me or maybe I was reading too much

into things but with the way he was acting around me ever

since I relocated to SA was a confirmation to my

suspicious. The chemistry was just too strong to ignore

but I was afraid to go down that road again. All I could offer

him was friendship and nothing more. After the whole

ordeal with Treet and Ethan I was just too broken to ever

think of being in the dating game again.

"I ordered a large pizza that means no cooking for us. We

are going to Netflix and chill. I will go pop some corns."

Sipho's voice brought me back to reality. This boy was my

remedy.

"Okay cool.I'm just gonna go and take a shower.I will be back now now." I rushed upstairs and went to the bathroom.I must say I was gaining my body back.The scars were starting to disappear thanks to the ointments that Lisa and Lindy got for me from their dermatologist.My caramel skin was starting to glow now.I wore my grey Nike shorts and a vest matching Siphos.I knew he was going to be excited about it.Matching outfits were his thing.I went back downstairs and I found him talking to MaZulu.I had

missed that woman. During the past days when it got too much I would call her and she would pray for me. Her prayers just lifted up my spirit. She also insisted that I take some therapy sessions. Like everyone else she also thought that I was a ticking time bomb. She didn't buy the whole thing of letting the past go and moving on like nothing happened. Honestly I was starting to feel okay and slowly getting over what happened. Its only that I was just so afraid and my guard was always up the wall. I didn't

trust anyone anymore including her.Can you blame

me?Mrs Jaji was once the most sweetest woman who

took me in and my siblings when our own relatives have

turned their backs on us.But what did she do.I wasn't

crucifying MaZulu for Mrs Jaji's sins but I was just being

extra careful.After everything I have been through I was

not going to be able to handle another betrayal.I didn't

want to feel anything anymore.I didn't want to be

disappointed because of my expectations from

people. Yes she was a prayer warrior, a God fearing woman

but even Judas had the guts to betray the son of God what

would stop her from doing the same to me.

"Ohh MaZulu hello." I said announcing my presence in the

room because the grandma and grandson were into their

conversation that they didn't even hear me coming

in. When she saw me she smiled and gave me a tight hug.

"My dear how have you been." She said still smiling. Her

smile was contagious and I ended up smiling too. Yes a

part of me didn't trust her but I really loved her concern about my wellbeing. She would visit me every once in a week or I would visit her and all the time we spent together it would always lift up my mood. I sat down and joined in their conversation while we ate our pizza. Thank God she also brought us some pizza with lots of meat. We were going to eat that for supper. I didn't want to sleep on the pizza.

While we were at it my doorbell rang and I went to attend to it. When I opened the door I was met by his deep stares

again.I didn't say anything for a while looking back at him

as well.I didn't remember inviting him.

"Mom called me.She said I should come pick her up." He

broke the ice and I just nodded.This was another issue

again.Lwandile!He was starting to act weird around me.He

looked at me like it was his first time seeing a woman.I

knew what that meant but I decided to brush it off.He had

to get his act together because he had a family and a good

wife who loved him to the moon and back. I'm also sure he

was clever enough not to try and tear his family apart

because of lust.

I paved way for him."Sure come on in and good afternoon

to you too."I closed the door and walked past him and I

could feel his eyes following my ass.This honestly had to

stop.I was relieved when he finally left with MaZulu.He

was making me uncomfortable and the last thing I wanted

was to be in bad books with Martha because of something

I was not part of.That lady has been nothing but good to

me and I respected our friendship very much. I was
relieved when he was gone.

"Where is he huh? Where the hell is Lindani?" I have no idea
who gave her my address. I was pissed off when Delia
stormed into my place like she owned it.

"Sipho go upstairs." He gawked at Delia clearly pissed then
stormed upstairs.

"How can I help you?" I folded my arms looking at Delia.

She scoffed. "You think I don't know what you're trying to do? Let me tell you something girl. I have survived women like you before. They always come and go. You're just one of the bitches Lindani is finding fun in. Enjoy it while it lasts."

"I have no idea what the hell you want from me. Lindani is not here. Even if he was. I don't think I owe you any kind of explanation because you're not his wife and let alone his girlfriend. I also survived women like you. All bark but no bite."

"You should be ashamed of yourself for trying to separate a father from his child.He always spends time with you and that boy while he abandons my child and me.But like I said.Enjoy while it last.He always comes back.I'm the mother of his child and you're nothing but a whore is he using for fun." She flipped her hair.

I didn't feel the need to justify myself to her.It was clear,she was a psycho.She just assumed that I was fucking Lindani when I wasn't. Who does that?She felt

threatened by my existence.Urgh!

"Go jump off the bridge.Clearly you have nothing to do with your time." I slammed the door on her face.

"Lindani and I have a child you got nothing on me.Watch the space.I'm going to take him back." She shouted.I just sighed and went upstairs.Lindani can pickthem shame!

ONE YEARLATER.

"There is no way I'm gonna allow her to stay with my daughter.She is a fucking stranger and God knows what

she will do to her. I'm not giving my daughter to a stranger."

Delia shouted. Lindani had asked me to accompany him to

her place so that he could take Lily for the weekend but

the baby mama was having none of it. For a whole freaking

year Lindani couldn't spend quality time with his daughter

because she was just so difficult.

"Delia I'm not here to fight with you. I just want my child. I

don't have the whole day woman." Lindani said clearly

pissed.

"She will only be your daughter when you get this woman out of our lives and marry me. Only then will you have a right over Lily. I don't want this woman near my child. Please leave or I will call the police." She threatened. I looked at Lindani and sighed.

"Let's go Mj. The next time I'm coming here I'm taking my child for good."

"Hell will freeze." She slammed the door.

"I'm sorry. It's all my fault. I shouldn't have come along." I

said.

"You don't have to apologize.She thinks she can dictate

my life by using my child as the pawn.She is crazy and

delusional.You don't have to worry I will deal with her

accordingly.Anyway let's go check on the rehab its been

weeks since we saw the progress." He said switching on

the ignition.

I smiled looking at my rehab center.Everything was finally

coming together. The first and second floor was complete. They were halfway done on the third floor. They were on the window level. It was a tripple storey. It took a whole year to get everything together and plan the whole thing. I wanted it to be the best and my team made sure of that. The landscape around the place was soothing with pines on the driveway and neatly trimmed shrubs all around the place. The green nature gave a sense of peace and beauty.

"Do you like it?" Lindani asked while Lwandile stole a glance at us completely ignoring Lindy who was talking to her.

"No I don't like it.I love it.It's coming together really well.I'm so so happy.I must say Lwandile you know your job."

They say give credit when its due.He did much of the work.He did the architecture and the interior design of the building.He was so involved in the whole project that he sometimes joined in building too.I gave him the credit for

that.

"Thank you.If you guys just wanna walk around you can do so.I'm just gonna go back to the others." He didn't wait for a reply and literally ran off.

Lindani sighed and shook his head."He is a mess."

"And the bad part is he doesn't anything to us.How can we help him.He is using this project as an excuse to spend less time with his wife.Something big is going on between those two"

I kept quiet wondering to myself too. Lindy once said that Lwandile and Martha were not in good books. She said over the years they fought a lot and threatened each other with a divorce but never went through with it but this time around it was serious. It was also a mess that a baby was caught up in their fights. In fact all their children were involved in this mess and it wasn't good. I just prayed that they work out whatever that was going on between them.

"You wanna check the place out?" Lindani's voice startled

me back to reality. I just smiled and he held my waist as we walked around. I felt things having his hand on me like that and his cologne was intoxicating me. I could eat him alive.

"Are you okay?" He smirked. I'm sure my heavy breathing sold me out. I was reacting to his touch which is something I never thought I would do in a million years. In response I just nodded my head. My voice would betray me at this point. We continued walking while he was explaining

whatever he was explaining. I didn't hear anything. I was busy imagining things. It's been a year now since I felt a man's touch.

"Are you even listening to me?" He chuckled.

"Yes I'm listening." I looked everywhere but him. He pulled me close to him and held my waist with both his hands.

He brought his head closer to my face that his mint

chocolate breath was fanning my face. "I know you're

undressing me with your eyes Majesty." He moved his

head away with a smirk on his face.

"You're imagining things." I said trying to free myself from

his grip.

He gave me that cocky smile of his." Like how you're

imagining me giving it to you real good huh."

"Stop.You perv!!" I hit him playfully on his chest.

He chuckled. "Am I wrong?Look at these damn hard

nipples.I know you're horny." Dammit I shouldn't have worn

this vest.He winked and walked away leaving me with my

mouth wide open. This was the second time he was leaving me with jaws dropped like this. Three months back when we had dinner at his house he shocked me. After a dinner filled with laughter and joy like always. He drove me back to my apartment and walked me to the door like he usually does.

"I love you Majesty. Always know that." He brushed my cheek and walked away leaving me tongue tied like that. I avoided him for the following two weeks and didn't pick up

his calls. The next time when we met at the duo's place I didn't know how to behave around him. I just didn't know what to do and I was so cautious about everything. I acted like a teenager who just saw her crush but he was all cool and collected like he didn't drop a bomb at me on our previous encounter. He never said anything related to that thereafter. As a matter of fact he acted like he didn't say he loved me. It was like I had hallucinated about the whole scenario. His once off confession just came off too strong

on me.I couldn't believe that the mighty Lindani was in love

with me.I didn't know what to feel about it so I just let it

be.Now he was starting to make me feel things again. I

was scared honestly.

"And you two just had to act like I was not around." Lindy's

voice startled me back to reality.

"You guys just deal with the sexual tension or whatever

that is going on between you two.Do something about it

and stop making the atmosphere horny."

"You're just overseeing things wena let's go." I dragged her towards Lindani who was having a chat with the builders. We walked around one more time and said our goodbyes. We passed by Steers and brought the hot wings I was craving for before going to the duo's place.

"Mom called. She said Sipho's uncles want to see him so she wanted to host dinner and asked if you're okay with it since Delia will be there. She has been trying to call you but your phone is off." Lisa said the moment we got inside the

house.

"Let me go and call her." Lindani excused himself.

"So twinnny some people were close to acting porn out in the open and with me watching.Imagine." Lindy winked at

Lisa who smiled and sat down attentively waiting for Lisa

to fill her in on the juicy details.I just laughed shaking my

head and went to the kitchen leaving the two laughing

their lungs out. I opened the fridge and took a tub of ice

cream.

"I want some too." I dropped the tub.

"Geez Lindani stop sneaking up on me like that."

He walked over to me. "I'm sorry I scared you." He picked the tub. I breathed heavily. Ever since the whole abuse with

Ethan I became very jumpy and edgy.

"Its okay." I tried to take the tub but he placed it on the counter and pinned me on the fridge.

"What are you doing Lindani?" I couldn't even recognize my own voice.

He chuckled,licked his lower lip and looked at me for a while.He was so close that we were exchanging breaths."Nothing.Let's go have the ice cream."He took the ice cream and held my hand going to the lounge.

"You done with the quickie already." Lindy winked at his brother and I blushed.

"That's too soon."Lindani replied and I blushed even more.

We spent the rest of the day chatting,eating and laughing.

For the first time in forever I was experiencing the

happiness I always wanted. Sometimes I would get worried
though. I couldn't help it. What if it was just short-lived
happiness? What if they betray me? What if things take a
wrong turn? What if I mess up?

"Don't think too much?" Lindani brushed my cheeks and I
sighed. This was another thing. The chemistry between us
was undeniable not to mention the sexual tension but
what if he turns out to be like Ethan? I know it was unfair of
me to paint him with the same brush but then again who

would have ever thought that Ethan would turn out the way he did. Besides I didn't know much about Lindani enough to pursue anything with him. I only knew he was my knight in a shining armour and always saved me but what if he becomes an abuser in aluminium foil later on. I was afraid of that and there was just something off about Lindani that I couldn't put my finger on. He rarely went to work but the guy was moneyed. Yes he had a company but still there was something off and shady about him. That was a red

flag for me. Above it all I honestly admitted to myself that I felt something for him. I didn't know what it was exactly and I wanted it to stay like that for a while. Although it was a year now after the incident with Ethan I was still afraid of the uncertainty of my future and everyone else involved in it.

"You zoned out again. What is bothering you? Talk to me?"

He was concerned and it was genuine.

"Nothing that you should worry about. I'm fine." I said.

He looked at me for a while without saying a word."Let me
in Majesty.Open up will you."

"You don't have to worry Lindani.I'm completely fine okay."

I stood up and went to the kitchen to avoid further

discussion on the matter.He didn't try to force me to talk

about it.He completely understood where I was coming

from and never pushed.I got a call from MaZulu while in

the kitchen and she invited me for the dinner they were

talking about.

"I don't know maa." For some strange reason I was

hesitating about this dinner but then MaZulu can be very

persistent so I ended up agreeing.

"I will come pickyou up for the dinner." He walked me to

the door when he dropped me off to my place.

"I'm leaving early so that I can help with the cooking." I

said.

"So I will pick you up at 6."

"Okay then." I said turning so that I could punch in the pass

code.

He hugged me from behind and rested his head on my

shoulder."I really enjoyed spending this day with you Ms

Browns and you looked really beautiful today."

I felt the butterflies in my stomach.He perked my

cheek,went to his car and leaned on it.After I went inside

he honked and drove off.I leaned on the door for a while.

What are you doing to me Lindani Zulu?I sighed and went

to take a nap.I woke up at 5:30 and took a bath.After

moisturizing I went through my walk in closet looking for something to wear. MaZulu said it was a formal thingy so I had to look for some good evening dresses. I found a Roma Amor black sheath dress with a cut on the back. It was one of the dresses I bought. Lindani took me one weekend on a shopping spree. I tried to refuse at first but he insisted and I ended up enjoying the spree. I'm sure I exhausted his card. Well not like it hurt his pockets anyway. I enjoyed being pampered that day and ended up

buying even things that I didn't need.

I wore the dress and it hugged me very perfectly.I

completed the look with Gucci braided black heels.I turned

around on the mirror admiring myself.I was starting to feel

good about myself. "You look beautiful today."Lindani's

voice echoed in my head.Every day he would pass a

compliment of how beautiful I looked and what not.It

boosted my confidence again.I stopped wearing my

oversized baggy clothes and went back to what I used to

wear. My phone rang while I was brunching my hair up. I

ditched the idea of the haircut because Lindani was

against it and I found myself listening to him. So instead I

had it dyed it copper brown.

I answered his call. "I'm waiting outside." He said and

dropped the call.

I applied lipstick

took my purse and went downstairs. The

way I was nervous it felt like he was taking me on a date or

something. I opened the door and his jaws dropped when his eyes landed on me.

"Wow umm.I don't know what to say.You look

wow,gorgeous..umm.I'm running out of words.You look amazing." He said.

"You look amazing yourself." I said mockingly.He was rocking his usual jeans and a hoodie.

He chuckled."I could walk butt naked and people would still know my worth."He said with a wink and I blushed.

He ushered me to the car and he drove off. It was only the two of us since Sipho was at her grandma's place. On the way he was nodding and whistling to the song that was blasting on the speakers. He was playing Ne-yo for a change. He was a Tupac die hard fan.

.... How can you understand something that you never had

Ohh baby if you let me I can help you out with all of that

Girl let me love you and I will love you, until you learn to

love yourself

Girl let me love you,I know you're troubled, don't be afraid

to let me in

Girl let me love you and I will love you,until you learn to

love yourself

He sang along while stealing glances at me.I looked at him

and he just chuckled and focused back on the road

again.Message received loud and clear.

"Dzamn I could wife you right now." Leon said giving me a

tight hug.He was the crazy one in the crew.

"You look gorgeous my dear." Mr Zulu said and both his

wife shot daggers at him.It was so funny that we all

laughed.

"Don't even think about taking her as the third wife

because I will kill you." The first MaZulu said and we all

laughed again.

"I would never agree to that." I said laughing.

"You don't want all this sugar." He said dramatically fixing

his suit and I bursted into laughter. He was a funny man

and I guess that's where Leon got the traits.

"Where are the others?" Lindani asked.

"Sipho is upstairs getting dressed.He is so excited about

this. Martha and Lwandile are in the kitchen.The twins

went to buy some more meat and the kids are upstairs

with Sipho." Zara said.I figured between her and her sister

she liked me but that loud mouth Thokozile hated my

guts.I once put her in her place when she tried to walk all

over me when we met for a family lunch. I showed her I wasn't a playing ground and from that day she never tried it with me.

"Let's go help Martha in the kitchen." Zara said. Mr Zulu protested saying I was looking too good to sweat myself in the kitchen but we had to help Martha. I figured they didn't have chef in this house. MaZulu once said her husband was African like that.

Zara and I went to the kitchen. When we walked in

Lwandile and Martha stopped talking and anyone could sense the tension between them.

"Hello guys." I said walking past Lwandile and I could feel his eyes on me. The least he could do was to respect his wife in the room and stop gawking at me.

"Hey how are you." He smiled like a retard and I just sighed looking at Martha who didn't look pleased at all. She clicked her tongue and went to the sink ignoring me. Zara had gone to the pantry so she didn't see all this.

"Wow you're looking beautiful." He said and I just couldn't believe his guts. His wife was in the room and he didn't even try to hide the fact that he was drooling.

"Please excuse me." I walked to the sink where Martha was.

"Can I help you with something."

"Sort the salad everything is almost done here." She said coldly and I did as she said. The silence was intense and I could feel her stares on me.

"So how is Palesa?" I asked trying to break the silence.

"Fine." One word answers just wow.

"Ohh okay.How have you been?Its been long since we

talked.How is being a mother all over again treating

you.The sleepless nights and all." I was really trying here

but Martha was just being cold.

"Yea its exhausting but you wouldn't know right.You're not

a mother so.." She shrugged and her words stung.Did she

had to say that.

I fought the tears that were threatening to come out. I was not going to let her bitterness ruin my day and this dinner for me.

"Are you okay Martha?"

She stopped what she was doing and looked at me with her arms folded "Of course I'm okay. Who wouldn't be after their husband calls out another woman's name in the middle of a steamy session? No scratch that. Lwandile called out your name while with me."

"What is that supposed to mean?"

"Don't try it with me Majesty please. Don't test me. Let's not

insult each other's intelligence here. You can drop the act

because deep down you're happy that Lwandile was

picturing you while having sex with me. What is really going

on huh? Did you seduce my husband? It wouldn't be a

surprise because you spent most of your time with him at

that rehab of yours. I wouldn't put it past you provided your

history with men. You fucked every Jim and Jack out there

so now you're onto my husband. Now you have your eyes
on my husband! Let me make one thing clear to you Mj.I'm
a good person but I also know where to hide a dead
body.For my husband I can kill.So you better back off
before I bury you alive. Nxaa sfebe."

She clicked her tongue and continued peeling potatoes.I

didn't understand the last part but I knew it was an insult.I

was too shocked and hurt to even utter a word.I just

thought Lwandile's stares would end but for him to picture

me during sex was just extreme and for Martha to just
accuse me like that was just painful. Yes I had a history
which was I not proud of but I had moved past
that. Lwandile was a handsome man and had everything a
woman would want but not even once did I feel anything
towards him. I didn't want him. While I was lost in my
thoughts Thokozile walked in and started helping
Martha. They started to laugh like old time friends. When
did they become best friends because the last time I

checked Martha hated Thokozile. I couldn't stay in the same room with them because clearly their laughter was to spite me and make me feel out of place. So I walked out and went to Siphos room to help him out. He was happy to see me shame and he was also ecstatic about meeting his uncles.

"I can't wait to meet them. We should have met a long time ago but they were overseas so now that they are back we going to have lots of fun together." I felt a little bit

jealous. For some reason I wanted him to only have fun
with me.

"They have arrived Siphon let's go." Mitchell walked into the
room.

"Do I look okay. I'm so nervous. Do you think they will like
me?" He asked nervously.

I cupped his face. "Of course they will like you. You're so
adorable. Who wouldn't like you? Now let's go. You don't
want to keep them waiting now do you?" I smiled.

"Okay let's go together. I'm so nervous and I'm shaking." I laughed and held his hand. We walked down the stairs and as we got nearer I heard a familiar voice. When we walked into the lounge I froze coming face to face with the two of them. Ohh hell no!!!! I was dreaming there was no way they could be here. Everyone's eyes were on me now as I was stuck at one spot with my eyes popped out.

"Jesty." They said in unison.

"Treet, Tyrone. What are you guys doing here?" I was

puzzled. Instead of responding to my question Treet

literally ran to me. He hugged me tightly. It was so fast that

I couldn't stop him.

"I heard what happened and I have been looking

everywhere for you. I even hired a PI. Your brother refused

to disclose anything. How are you Jesty. Ohh my God its

really you."

He cupped my face. My eyes moved to Lindani he frowned

and stormed out. Tyrone came too and gave me a bone

crushing hug.

"I'm glad you're okay." He said.

"Okay I'm confused here. What the hell is going on? How do you guys know each other?" Of course Delia was in the room also.

"Answer me how do you know my brothers? What the hell are you even doing here? You're not family." She folded her arms. Already she was showing me some attitude when she only knew them for like what two minutes. Bitch!!

thought someone was going to save me out of this

situation but even the twins couldn't say anything they

were just looking at me.

"Ohh isn't he Treet. The guy you had an affair with then he

divorced his wife for you. Then you chose your companies

over him and then married your best friend. He is the guy

right? And that must be Tyrone the twin you were hooked

up with the same time you were messing with his

brother." Fuckyou Martha.

My life is a joke!!!

37

MAJESTY

Falling in love with someone you had no intentions of falling for is the most beautiful kind of love. No force in chemistry but just a pure and raw connection that created on its own.

The past will always affect your future. When making life choices be wise or it will come back and bite you. This was one of the scenarios where I was suffering the consequences of my actions and the way I chose to live

my life in the past. It was coming back to bite me. I looked at Martha wondering what exactly came over her that she had to humiliate me like this? Thokozile and her mother were not making things easier for me either. They looked at me like I was an alien with eight legs. But can you blame them? I didn't know what to do now that the spotlight was on me. Martha was smirking feeling so proud of herself.

MaZulu dismissed the kids and told them to go wait in the dining room.

"I'm so disappointed in you Martha. I didn't expect this nasty behavior from you. You have absolutely no right to stand there and talk about someone's past like you don't have your own. Must I need to remind you that everyone has their own skeletons in the cupboard but it's up to that individual to air their own dirty laundry. Will it be okay if I bring your past like this? I'm disappointed in you." MaZulu reprimanded Martha but the damage was already done. How were they going to look at me after knowing

that about me?

"Well we can't ruin Siphos dinner just because Martha

decided to behave like a loud mouth. I apologize for

that. We all have a past we are not proud of. Let's not allow

that to ruin this night for Siphos. Let's go get started with

dinner." I don't know if Mr Zulu was trying to make me feel

better or make things less awkward but either way that

wiped the smirk off Martha's face. She was now looking

down with shame. At the end she was the one who looked

stupid. Before we went to the dining they called Siphos back and he greeted his uncles.

"You guys look like peas in the pod or is it my eyes?" Lindy said looking at Treet who was holding hands with Siphos.

I looked at them and for some weird reason my heart started pounding really fast.

"The hair, the eyes, the facial expressions. You're really uncle and nephew." Mr Zulu commented.

We went over to the table. Lindani and Treet pulled out the

chair for me. I just sighed and sat down. I was between the two while I was facing Tyrone and Lwandile. Talk about being awkward. Well for others it wasn't awkward as they conversed and laughed at Siphos jokes.

"You don't like green salad too." Siphosaid looking at Treet. It seems like he liked Treet more than Tyrone.

"Yes it feels like I'm eating grass." Treet said.

"Yaah that makes the two of us." Siphosaid.

I stood up and took the dishes to the kitchen. Martha was

on my tail. Good thing she followed because I had to make
a thing or two very clear to her.

I gave her one of my intimidating looks when she was
about to speak and that silenced her. "I have made many
mistakes. I have offended many people. I have sinned many
times but the Lord's grace continues to guide me in
character. I'm not going back there. I'm not going to be who
I was in my dirty past. I don't know what you were thinking
earlier but whatever it is. Let it be the last time you step on

my toes like that. You said a lot of mean things to me ever since I got here today. I'm not going to let you hurt me and push me back to the dark hole again simply because you have issues with your husband which in your wild imagination I'm responsible for. Stop directing your anger and venting your frustrations at me for something that I know nothing of. Yes you're allowed to be angry but at Lwandile not me because he is the one who said my name during the act. I wasn't even there. I don't control what

people think and I definitely do not control what people fantasize about. I have no interest in Lwandile and you know that very well. Yes I have a dirty past that I'm going to be crucified for probably for the rest of my life but it doesn't mean I'm still the Majesty in my past. People change too and I happen to be one of them who turned their life around for the better. You said you know where to hide a dead body right. But dear don't let this sweet face fool you I can ruin your life in 2,5 seconds flat and still

have a smile on my face so don't try me. I can ruin you too

Martha so don't underestimate what I'm capable of. Broken

people are dangerous people they can make hell feel like

home and you don't want me to make your life a living hell

because I can. Whatever you give me I multiply it. If you

give me shit I will give you tones of crap so don't try it with

me Martha. Don't you dare. I'm not your playing ground. Let

this be the last time we confront each other like this. About

your husband. I don't even want him. Its sad that you

actually think I'm seducing him because I'm not. Don't go around throwing baseless accusations at people it might cost you. The best you could have done was to sit down with me, confront me and interrogated me like an adult about this issue rather than acting like a bitter woman. Stop trying to punish me for you husband's sins and clean up your mess. I'm not the enemy here. If anything I want you and Lwandile to be happy together. You know where the problem is. Sit down with Lwandile and make it

right.If you continue like this you're going to loose people who genuinely care about you.Me being one of them.For what is worth.I actually respected and valued our friendship.I thought you were a nice person but then I'm not a good judge of character.I'm glad that you showed me this side to you.Now I know who to trust and who to confide in.Its really sad that you're this kind of a person.Its very sad."I didn't wait for her to retaliate and walked out bumping into Lwandile.

"I'm sorry abo--"

I interjected. "Not right now Satan and stop picturing me

during sex nxaana." I pushed him aside and walked

away. The way I was so pissed. I went and joined others in

the lounge. There were two free seats one besides Treet

and the other besides Lindani. I went and sat besides

Lindani and held his hand.

"You look pissed and its turning me on." He whispered into

my ear and I laughed. Treet gave me a disapproving look.

"Can we go talk outside." I said.

"Sure." He held my hand and we went to the patio. He held me closer and I shivered with his hand on my bare skin.

"I'm sorry about earlier. I almost ruined your son's dinner."

"You don't have to apologize. In fact I should apologize on behalf of Martha. She shouldn't have said what she said. It was wrong." He cupped my face and made me look at him.

"But do you still love him? Do you still have feelings for him? Be honest with me I won't stand in your way. Hurt me

if you must with the truth now so that I won't go around in circles with you. I'm too grown to go back and forth. I'm not going to hold anything against you if it is Treet that you want. Tell me the truth. If you still have feelings for him tell me so that I will know where I stand with you."

"I just care about him but as for love." I sighed "It's been nearly two years now. Time heals. People change with time and I happen to be one of those who did. I will be honest with you I care a lot about him but I can't say I still love

him."

That was the truth. I still cared a lot about Treet. We would

always have a connection because he was my first in

everything but things change and I changed. Now he was

that chapter I closed too. Yes there was a time in my life

where I thought he was my "meant to be". As people when

we think of "meant to be" we automatically assume its

forever. But maybe it isn't supposed to last forever. Its just

that someone is in your life to teach you

something. Sometimes the "forever" is not the person but what we gain from them. In my case Treet and I were meant to be. Our forever were the children we lost along with everything else we went through. I learnt a lot from my experience with him. Those lessons were my forever not him. It's unfortunate we couldn't overcome everything thrown our way. But I still cared about him though. I really cared but after everything that happened I realised with time that maybe we deserve each other or I didn't deserve

his love.

"But I'm a mess Lindani.I really don't know what you see in me.You heard a part of my past down there.I'm not perfect for anyone."

"You are my mess.You don't have to be perfect because I'm not perfect either.I don't care about your past because I'm not proud of mine too." He tucked my hair behind my ear."You're my imperfect mess."

We hugged for the longest time.His bear hugs were my

weakness.

"You're smelling me ain't you?" He chuckled and I laughed.

"You smell so good.I can't help it."

"You're creepy." He laughed and we broke the hug.Only to

find Lindy and Lisa busy taking pictures.

"You're invading our privacy." Lindani said snaking his

hand around my waist.

"We just had to capture the moment.You guys are sweet

together."

"Thankyou." I smiled.

"Lindani uncle wants to talkto you." Lindy said.He perked

my cheekand walked away.Just when he was gone

Lwandile walked to where we were and asked to talkto

me in private.They gave him questioning looks but left us

anyway.

"You have five minutes to tell me whatever it is that you

want to say." I folded my arms.

He sighed "I'm sorry about the way I have been around

you.I have always had feelings for you Majesty.I'm sorry

because of my feelings I put you in an awkward position

today.I'm so sorry because this feels like I'm betraying

Lindani.Heck I am.He had made his intentions for you

clear to everyone and it's wrong that I had to eye you like

that.I was just being selfish.I wanted to have my cake and

eat it too which is wrong.A vindictive side of me wanted to

get back at him for what happened years ago.Anyway

Lindani loves you so much that sometimes his love for you

scares everyone.He is whipped.I also saw how you guys
look at each other.I know you have been through a lot of
shit but give my brother a chance to show you what he has
got.Give him a chance to heal your wounds and love you.I
want you guys to be together.He has been through so
much from such a young age.He deserves some
happiness too and you can give him that.You guys can
make each other happy. Don't hold back because of what
happened and open up yourself for his love.You will not

regret it. Once again I'm sorry for the way I feel about you
and I'm sorry for everything that transpired today. I also
need a favor from you."

I sighed "What favour Lwandile?"

"Please don't tell him about my feelings for you. I know he
is suspecting it but please can this stay between us." He
pleaded.

"You're asking me to lie to him."

He sighed. "No I'm asking you to protect him from

hurting. Once again I'm sorry."

"It's ok."

I did my best to avoid Treet and succeeded. After the dinner Lindani drove us to his place. I practically lived there because most of my clothes were there and I slept over frequently. When we arrived he forced me to use the guest room. He said he won't be able to control himself if we were to sleep in the same bed. Urgh! I wanted those big

muscled arms around me all night.

When I woke up the following morning "This is the second time you're creeping me out like this." I said rubbing my eyes.

"You look cute when you're asleep." He was looking fresh and his cologne filled the room.

"The last time in Paris you said I looked scary." I yawned getting off the bed.

He chuckled."Which is true."

I laughed and threw a pillow at him."That's every

mean.Anyway you should have woke me up.Its 9.I

overslept."

"I enjoyed watching you sleep.Good morning my Majesty."

"Good morning to you too Ntshangase."I said.

He looked at me with amusement written all over his face.

"Where did you hear that from?" He smiled.

"I heard MaZulu calling your uncle Gxabhashe and I asked

what she meant.She told me it was a clan name.I asked

her why she was calling him like that and she said you

Zulu men love it when called by your calm names. Since I

can't pronounce Gxabhashe properly she said if I want to

use a clan name on anyone I should just stick to

Ntshangase since its easier to pronounce."

"You look so sexy right now. You will call only me

Ntshangase

Advertisement

no one else because they will see what I'm

looking at right now." He licked his lower lip.

"Let me go and take a shower Ntshangase." I giggled and winked at him. I took a long bath and wore a red baby doll dress with black Gucci braided sandals. I walked downstairs and found Lindani already eating. That man and food. If he didn't hit the gym often he could have been chubby I'm telling you.

"You couldn't even wait for me." I sat besides him.

"Sorry you were taking too long. I didn't eat everything though. Open your mouth." He started feeding me. While

we were at it I received a call from an unknown number.

"Hello."

"Hey Majesty.Its Treet."His voice echoed from the other
line.

"Ohh hey Treet.How can I help you?"

"Can we please meet.Please don't say no.We have a lot to
talk about."

I looked at Lindani and sighed."Ok.Let's meet at Roco
mamas in thirty minutes."

"Okay no problem." He said and I dropped the call. Lindani was just quiet and I knew he was worried about this whole thing but decided not to say anything.

"I'm going to meet Treet. He might want us to continue from where we left off. I have to tell him that things have changed. I don't want to drag it so it's better I tell him today." He nodded his head and led me to the lounge.

"It's ok you don't have to explain."

I nodded and we stayed in silence for a while.

"Let me love you Majesty.Be mine." He looked at me like he was searching for something in my eyes.He cupped my face and I touched his hand.

"Let me love you." He said again.I nodded."You agree to be mine?"

"Yes Ntsangase." I said and he smiled then made me sit on his laps.

"I love you." He said.In response I just smiled.I was giving us a chance but I was not ready to say the magical words

or at least admit to him that I felt the same way. He made me happy. He made me feel things but I was just so afraid to accept that I was falling for him. A part of me was still pulling me back because I was scared.

"You don't have to say it back. It's already enough that you agreed to be mine. Now can I kiss you?" He licked his lower lip.

"Yes please."

With an infinitely tender gaze he drew my head down until

our lips touched.He perked me and I parted my lips
beneath his.He took advantage of it sliding his tongue
against mine in a dance and demand,I didn't know which.It
was a combination of strength and seduction from his
side and vulnerability from my side.It was a precious
moment for me, a treasured even.I felt like I was being
kissed for the first time.His lips so gentle and so,so sweet.
His fingers tangling lightly in my hair and drawing it down
that its tips caressed his shoulders.Creating a curtain that
when we stopped trying to catch our breaths,I opened my
eyes and all I could see was the perfection of his face.
My scarred warrior!

38

MAJESTY

A promising future.

His hand moved to my ass and he squeezed it as we resumed kissing. I could feel his desire for me and my body too was reacting to his touch. With everything that went down during my marriage with Ethan I never thought I would react like this to a man's touch. Things were getting heated up but we had to stop.

"We have to stop. Fuck!" He whispered breathing heavily. I

nodded trying to catch my breathe.

"I have to go now or I will be late." I said getting off his laps

and my knees were wobbly.

"Yea you're right about that.Do you want me to drop you

off?" He asked putting his hands in his pockets to hide his

bulge.

"Don't you think you need a cold shower to calm yourself

down first."I giggled.

He chuckled." Okay give me five minutes."He jogged

upstairs.I went to the guestroom in suit bathroom. I wiped myself and changed my thong. We were in comfortable silence all the way with Tupac playing and Lindani nodding his head.When we arrived he opened the door for me and I walked out.

"Call me if you want me to pick you up." He said brushing my cheeks.We shared a brief kiss after I told him that I will definitely call after the talk with Treet.He drove away while I turned and walked inside.I spotted Treet sitting at a table

on the corner staring through the window. I guess he

already saw me with Lindani.

He looked like he was lost in the world of his own when I

approached him.

"Hey." I said sitting down. He snapped out of it and looked

at me with a sad smile plastered on his face.

"Hey Jesty. Looking good as always." He smiled lazily.

"Thank you. Have you already ordered." I asked trying to

make this whole meeting as comfortable as it could be.

"I don't think I can stomach anything right now.If you want to eat then go ahead. I have all the time in the world for you." He said.

"I'm good.I will just have sparkling water."

We stayed in complete silence for a while.I did not know what to say to him without hurting him.I have done that a lot of times in the past.I felt bad having to repeat that over and over again but it had to be done.

"So how have you been?Wasn't it overwhelming finding

your family and everything." I asked. I had to find an approach to this. It was a sensitive matter to the both of us and had to be handled with caution.

He sighed. "Of course it was overwhelming and exciting at the same time. Expect the part where we had to shave our heads bald when we were introduced to the Khumalo ancestors. I looked terrifying with a bald head."

I laughed to that. "I don't even wanna imagine you bald. So how did your dad handle the whole situation. I mean you

were stuck with the Jackson family for so long."

"They are still family even though I can't forgive my mother

for keeping such a secret from us.I'm thinking of cutting

her off completely but then she is my mother.As for Mr

Jackson he is still our father.He took care of us so there is

no way I'm going to just forget about it and turn my back

on him.We even kept the surname because its already too

much for dad that we relocated here.The least we can do

is keep his surname.It will also save us from a lot of

paperwork. Our new family doesn't have any problem with

that so we are cool." He explained whilst I nodded my head.

"He deserves that much from you and I'm glad you chose

to keep his surname."

"Yea. I heard what went down between you and Ethan. I

know it will be painful for you to tell me about it but just

know that I'm sorry about everything."

I sighed. "It's okay. It's nearly two years now since the whole

thing happened. I'm healing." We went silent for a while

again.

"So you umm and that buff guy. My nephew's father. What's going on?" He asked.

"I met Lindani and his family that time when I took a break and went to Paris. Since then we were in touch. When Ethan left me in Zimbabwe they came through for me. A lot happened and I relocated here."

He sighed. "So you're dating Lindani because you think you owe him for saving you out of your miseries."

"Its been nearly two years Treet since we last saw each other.Lindani has always been there.I didn't plan it but it is what it is.I honestly never thought we were going to meet like this again.Besides time heals Treet.A lot happened and in between that time my heart stopped yearning for you because I made peace with the fact that you were never going to come back to me again.I don't feel indebted to Lindani.He doesn't even make me feel that way either.He genuinely makes me happy."

"I can make you happy. Yes it's nearly two years now but you're still the same person that I'm in love with. You and I can start over. Forget about everything else. Just you and I. We will start our own family without all of this." He said with his eyes glistening.

I held his hand and squeezed it "Don't do this to yourself. It's different now. I'm not here to brag so I will not talk about how I feel for Lindani. Trust you're a good guy and any woman out there will die to have a guy like you. We had our

chance and it didn't work. I still care about you a lot but it was way over between us when I married Ethan. Its time you move on because I already did. There is someone out there for you and it's definitely not me. I'm sorry to do this to you."

He looked at me for a while with tears threatening to come out. "Tyrone once told me that when you're rejected accept it. Where you feel unloved let go and if someone chooses someone or something over you move on. I guess its time I

take what Tyrone told me seriously. In as much as it hurts I

must accept that you never loved me Majesty but its okay. I

know its going to be very hard for me but I will manage. At

least I know I tried with you Majesty but I can't keep on

holding on to a woman who chooses someone else over

me again and again. Thanks for the time we spent

together. I will always cherish those moments. I hope

Lindani makes you happy. Its unfortunate you will have to

see a lot of me since you're my nephew's stepmother

now.If it was up to me I could have gone somewhere else

far from you but I can't do that to Sipho because I love that

kid.He is a part of the sister I never knew.Anyway I wish

you the best in life Majesty."

"I also wish you the best Treet.I hope you will find love

soon and a woman who loves you like how you deserve to

be loved."We both stood up a tight hug.

"I don't wanna let go.Its hard for me.I will always love you

Majesty but I will have to let you go."He said and broke the

hug.He brushed my lips and licked his.

I sighed." I have to go."

"Sure." He sighed and sat down.

I fought the tears that were threatening to come out and

walked away.God I hurt him again.

"Did it go well?" Lindani asked while driving to the twins'

house. I nodded.I felt bad for Treet.I had hurt him so many

times when all he ever did was to love me.

"It went well." I said sadly.

We drove to his family house for lunch and it was filled with joy like always. This time around Martha was quiet and didn't utter any nasty remarks but she shot daggers at me. Somehow I had a feeling that there was more to the story so I made a mental note to ask Lindani about it. After lunch Lindani insisted that we go take Lily but I knew Delia was not going to allow it.

"Don't test me woman. I'm taking my child ok. You didn't make this baby alone." Just like always they started

arguing.

"Yes you're right I made this baby with you. So then why the

hell is she here? Why did you bring her along again when I

made it clear that I don't want her near my child." Delia

shouted.

"Ohh so now she is your child. But when you need money

she is our child. Delia better get used to Majesty. You will

be seeing a lot of her because she is my woman

now. Better get used to the fact that at some point she is

going to mother your child and there is nothing you're

going to do about it." Lindani said calmly.

Delia laughed sarcastically. "Then if she is your woman

make your own baby. Wena you better pack your things

and go back to the hell hole you came from. He is fooling

you. Him and I are a family with our child. We are going to

get married so you better leave with your dignity still

intact."

"DELIA!!! Go bring my child for me or you will know me

today. You're going too far. I was respecting you as a mother of my child but clearly you don't deserve it. Now go bring my child before I do something I will regret." His voice boomed and he coldly looked at Delia. She didn't wait to be told twice. A minute later she brought Lily who ran to her father with her arms wide open.

"Papa." She smiled. She was really growing into a female version of Lindani's.

"Hey my girl." He lifted his child and took her baby

bag."Let's go Majesty."

We walked out and I drove us to his place.I spent the day

with them and decided to just sleepover .There was no

need for an overnight bag because most of my clothes

were at his place.While he was playing with Sipho and Lily

I was cooking dinner for us.My man loved meat so I made

grilled chicken

roasted potatoes and green salad.

"Mj this is yummy.Look at Lily she is eating like its her last

day. Go easy on the meat lil sis." Siphohomed looking at Lily who ignored him and concentrated on her food. She was turning two years in a few months but she could eat on her own. When we done with dinner we watched a movie till the kids fell asleep. We tucked them in bed and went to our bedroom. I insisted on sleeping with him. I wanted to cuddle. The bed was too big for me alone.

"What's the deal with Martha? Why did she suddenly change her behavior?" I asked drawing circles on his rock

hard chest.

"Martha and I once had a thing back in the day."

"When she was married to Lwandile?" I asked.

"Yea before she was married to Lwandile and one time

while she was married to him." I didn't comment to that. I

had a dirty past myself.

"After Ariana's death I thought my life was over. Siphos was

2 and I had no idea on how to be a good parent to him

without his mother around. Her death caught everyone off

guard.I loved her and she was my world so when she died

my life crumbled.Booze and bitches became my life.I

drowned myself in alcohol and slept around.It killed my

pain,horrible memories and sometimes depression.During

that time Martha and Lwandile were just best

friends.Lwandile was involved with Delia.Martha came to

me as someone who just wanted to share my pain and be

there for me so I let her in.Little did I know that she was

doing it to spite Lwandile and get him to notice her.The

plan did work because Lwandile noticed her. He ended things with Delia and started dating Martha. I didn't know about this new development and Martha didn't tell me about it either so we continued sleeping together while she slept with Lwandile as well. I had vowed not to ever love another woman because it appeared as if I was betraying Ariana but I was already planning to be serious with Martha. After all she loved Siphos. She was a woman you would want to settle down with and she was a wife

material. At that time she became the only woman that I was sleeping with. Anyway the truth always come out so we all found out that we were being played. Lwandile and Martha continued with their relationship even after everything. I wasn't thinking straight during that time. I was angry at everything and everyone around me. Ariana's death turned me into a bitter person. I was also upset that Martha chose Lwandile over me. I seduced her and we started fucking behind Lwandile's back again. This time I

knew what was going on. She fell pregnant with Martha and made me believe that he was my child until we did a DNA. It turned out it was Lwandile's son. I was angry that she played me again. Driven by anger I went for Delia who was bitter too that Lwandile broke things with her to be with Martha. Out of anger we slept together. Delia took that as an opportunity to force her way into my life. Either she really wanted to be with me or she wanted to spite Lwandile but she forced her way into my life. That's how I

got stuck with her for some time. I came clean to Lwandile about my thing with Martha. It strained our relationship but after some time we were cool again. Martha on the other hand apologized for what she did and changed for the better. At least that's what we all thought. The past was never spoken of again. It was like it never happened and we all moved on with our lives. Up until now. For the past few years Martha and Lwandile had problems in their marriage. That's probably the other reason why she is

bitter. She also saw how serious I am about you and that didn't sit well with her. I suspect that's the reason why she started changing her behavior towards you. She is jealous. What she said that day was to create a rift between us. But I promise you babe. I'm no longer that guy. You're the only one that I want."

To say I was shocked is an understatement. Martha never struck me as someone like that. This bitch wanted her bread buttered on both sides. And to think that she

humiliated me when she had her own dirty past like this
made me angry. What she did was like a vegan hating on a
vegetarian. It's one and the same thing. We both had the
same nasty past. She went on and on about how I messed
around with brothers but what did she do?

Anyway Lindani came clean about his past and his
drama. His past was like a past of my male version. Him
sleeping around was what I did in the past too so we were
both not in a position to judge each other. We were two

lost souls who turned their lives around and had hopes for a brighter future. I came clean as well about my past but I didn't tell him about how I first met Treet. I didn't think it was necessary to go that deep about my history with my ex. He knew I was once involved with Treet and that was enough.

"I'm not proud of the man I used to be Majesty but I'm no longer that same person. I'm serious about us and I just hope we are on the same page. There is no going

back.You're mine and I'm yours.I understand you're holding

back because of what you went through.I don't blame you

but like I said its already enough that you gave us a

chance.I'm patient and I will wait for you to completely

heal.I love you."He said and his lips come to meet mine in

a crushing kiss.We kissed until our breathe mingled and

we were tightly wrapped in each other's arms.He stopped

catching his breathe.

"If we don't stop now then I'm going to fuck you so bad

that you will have a funny walk for a week." My heart

pounded so wildly and my body trembled with desire for

him.

"Fuck. I want you Lindani." I whispered.

He smiled." Isn't it convenient that I happen to want you

too. I want to take you right now so bad." I moaned as his

hand cupped my breast over the soft material of the silk

nightdress I was wearing.

"So what's stopping you from taking me?" I moaned again

as he peeled the garment over my head. My nipples peaked and my thighs tingled as I felt the rush of cool air from the aircon. My body was on fire.

"I want to study you. I want to know every inch of you that if I were to take an exam about your body then I will get full marks." He growled. The front of his briefs were ridged and I swallowed imagining what could be underneath. He parted my legs and slowly removed my thong.

"Fuck! You're beautiful and I'm a lucky man." His fingers

tangled further down at the juncture of my thighs. I felt a hot and fierce heat building up inside me as he flicked my moistened folds with his fingers. I squirmed as he thrust his fingers into my heated and moistened honey pot. I felt like some erotic puppet and he was the master pulling the strings.

"Ohh Lindani." I gasped closing my eyes as I felt it about to happen. I was close.

"Let it go baby." He urged thrusting harder and

faster.Obediently my body jerked and I reached my sweet
oblivion. "I'm not done with you." Without warning I felt his
hot tongue on my folds.I completely lost it.As his tongue
danced inside me I reached my orgasm one after the other.
After a plethora of climaxes I drifted to sleep with a smile
on my face.I couldn't believe that he didn't actually fuck
me to get to the edge.Just his fingers and tongue were
enough.He was an erotic master.

Days blended into each other and turned into weeks. I was the happiest woman alive. My life was filled with nothing but love and joy. I got everything I ever wanted. A man who loved me to the moon and back. I got family and friends who never judged me because of my past. What more could I ask for? With Lindani I was in a happy place. At times it scared that my happiness was revolved around him. What if something happens? What if he changes? I kept on asking myself. I was not ready to handle another

heartbreak. It would kill me worse if coming from Lindani. I

didn't show it though that he was my world in fear that he

would use that to his advantage. I talked to Prince about

my relationship with him and he happy for me. It was about

time. He said. Each passing day Lindani would prove that

they were still good men out there who were willing to

treat women like queens. He was one of those. We were

compatible. We had a lot in common. For starters we were

both whores in our past. Secondly his father was killed and

so was my mother. We both had a fair share of pain so we understood each other. With Lindani I was comfortable and I was not afraid of being judged or him using my past against me. Yes I had my insecurities just like any other person in a relationship. Especially where Delia was involved but Lindani was doing all he can to show me that I was the center of his universe. Delia meant nothing to him. She was doing everything in her power to get Lindani back. In her wildest imagination her and Lindani were

supposed to be family since there was a baby in the

picture. Talking about her she called on Lindani's phone

and I answered it because my man was in the shower.

"I want to talk to the father of my child." She said sniffing.

"He is in the shower. I will pass the message." I said.

"Lily is in hospital. She had stomach problems and the

doctors said its food poisoning. I don't know what the hell

you fed my daughter but you will pay for trying to poison

her."

"Excuse me?!Why would I try to poison her."

"You're evil like that.Tell the father of my child to get to

Netcare ASAP!" She dropped the call.

"Who was that?" Lindani asked wiping his head.

"It was Delia.She said Lily is in hospital.Netcare."

"What?!" He quickly moisturized and wore his clothes.He

drove to the hospital like a mad man.

"The doctors said its food poisoning Lindani.I don't know

what my child did to you Majesty but how can you go as

far as poisoning her." She cried in Lindani's arms as soon

as we arrived.

"I didn't poison your child Delia.I love Lily.I would never do

that to her.She was completely fine when I dropped her off

yesterday." I defended.

She wiped her tears."So you're saying I poisoned my own

child.Lindani this is the reason why I didn't want my child

near your girlfriend.You see now what I meant.When my

baby has been only under my care I never brought her to the hospital. Only when your girlfriend is involved then she is poisoned. Please leave Majesty. I don't want you near my child. I don't want you here. Instead of apologising you're denying that you did it and implying that I did. Which mother in their right state of mind would do that to her own child." She continued crying while Lindani rubbed her back without saying a thing.

"You seem like that kind of mother to me. I bet this is one

of your plots to create a rift between me and Lindani. Aren't
you going to say something Lindani?" I glared at him.

She cried. "Leave us please. I don't want you near my
daughter."

"Delia yo--"

"Enough Majesty!!! Just go home. We will talk when I get
back "He half shouted.

"Wow. You know what? Fuck you. If you can't see through
this bitch then I will not force you to open your eyes. Mxm."

I threw my hands in the air in frustration and walked away. I

looked at Delia who was buried in Lindani's arms with a

smirk on her face. I couldn't believe he couldn't see that the

bitch was using the child as a pawn to her games. She

clearly poisoned her own child just to be close to

him. While I was marching in frustration I bumped into

someone and almost fell but they caught me before I

could. My jaws dropped as I stared back at him.

"Justin!!!" I said yanking his hands off me. Not even my

wildest dreams did I ever thought I would meet this villain
from my past.

"Majesty." He said equally shocked. He fixed his white coat
and loold at me with his jaws dropped. "Its really you."

The memory of what he did to me came crushing
down. "Mxm Satan's toenails. "I said walking past him but
he held my hand.

"Wait. How have you been?" He fixed his glasses. I couldn't
believe that I once found this guy cute. Like what the hell

was I thinking? What was wrong with me? I must have been
lonely as hell to date this guy.

"Not today Satan." I roughly yanked his hands off and
walked away leaving him staring at my behind. Mxm
shithead.

When I got home I showered and went to prepare lunch for
Sipho. He loved food that one just like his father. Before he
got back from school Lindani arrived first. I didn't even
bother asking him about Lily. He made it clear that he took

Delia's side.

"So when are you guys getting married?" Siphos caught

both of us off guard during lunch. We had decided to tell

him about us after at least seven months or so. We didn't

want to raise his hopes high for nothing. Little did we know

that the guy already saw through us.

"I saw you guys kissing thinking that no one was watching.

So when are you two getting married?"

He looked at his father who choked on his food. I kept

quiet looking at down.Lindani was the one supposed to address this issue not me and I was too angry to look at him.

"Umm Siphon my son Majesty and I..."

Siphon cut in quickly. "You're dating I know and I approve but when are you getting married?"

"Soon enough son.When she says yes I will definitely wife her." I knew he was trying to get a reaction from me but I just smiled briefly at Siphon and continued eating my food

ignoring his father's attempts to start a conversation with me.

Sipho grinned."My wish came true after all.Remember Mj I once told you that you and my dad were going to be together.You have my blessings and dad thank you for making her your girlfriend. Thanks Mj for agreeing to be my dad's girlfriend. You guys can stop sneaking around.

Let me go and see my grandma.As it is you two need some privacy.Toddles."He winked at us and ran out after

finishing his meal

"Babe can we talk." He helped me load the dishes in the dishwasher.

"You might as well take medication. We don't want another case of food poisoning now do we?" I glared at him and walked out. He followed me like a lost puppy.

"What was I supposed to say babe. I know Delia is crazy but she wouldn't go as far as poisoning her own child."

"So you're saying that I did it?" I asked my voice breaking.

"No babe."

"You're implying it Lindani. You know I once went through this similar situation years back. I'm not going through that shit of being accused of something that I didn't do. Clearly you're very blind. You don't see what's going on here. Let's hope it will not be too late when you open your eyes. I'm going to take a nap don't disturb me." I went to the guestroom.

My nap was disturbed by Lindani. I frowned looking at him

when he woke me up.

"What do you want?" I frowned.

"Delia said Lily has a temperature. It might be because of the medicine but she is freaking out."

"So what am I supposed to do?"

He sighed."Can you please accompany me babe.I don't want to go alone.I can't deal with Delia freaking out and Lily being sick as well.Please babe."

"The last time I checked Delia doesn't want me near her

child."

"Baby please." He pleaded.

"Fine." I got off the bed and went to freshen up.

When we arrived at her apartment the security didn't give

us a hard time since they were expecting Lindani. He

parked and we went to the front door. Delia opened

wearing a red lingerie and heels. When she saw me she

immediately covered herself with the black lace robe she

was wearing. I gave Lindani a look.

"Why did you bring her along?" She said her face flushing with anger. I was the one supposed to be angry and she was supposed to be embarrassed but no not this bitch here.

"You're unbelievable. Where is Lily?" Lindani asked as I forced my way into the house. She had decorated place with rose petals and what not.

"She is with my mother. I called you here because I wanted us to solve our matters Lindani. We are supposed to be

family together with our child..." I lost it and slapped the living daylights out of her. She didn't expect it so she fell down. I was also surprised with my anger. I have never felt that angry all my life. I was channeling all my anger towards her so when I slapped her I gave it my all. I was about to beat the shit out of her for disrespecting me like that but Lindani stopped me. I couldn't stay in that room or I would strangle her. I walked out with Lindani on my tail. I was shaking in anger.

"Deal with her before I do." I said breathing heavily.

"Let's leave before you murder someone." He said and we

left. "I have never seen you so angry. You looked different."

"I'm sorry babe for the way I handled everything

earlier. Honestly a part of me thought Lily was in hospital

because of you. I'm ashamed that I would ever thought

about that when you have been nothing but loving and kind

to her. I'm ashamed that for a minute I doubted you. I'm

sincerely sorry my love." He said gently squeezing my

hand.

"Lindani I love Siphho and Lily equally because I know they are an extension of you. I know you come as a full package with them and I accepted that. What you did earlier hurt me so deeply. You showed how much you don't trust me when it comes to your children. I'm angry that you know the kind of person that Delia is but you believed her and never gave me the benefit of doubt. That same woman abused your child for years and you didn't even notice. I was the one

who found about that. Your son confided in me when I was nothing but a stranger to him. You held that bitch in your arms and told me to leave like I meant nothing to you. What would I gain from hurting Lily? Did you take a moment to think about that? You know very well how crazy that woman is. Didn't you think she would do anything to get back with you even if it means hurting her own child? For someone who was so worried about her child she had the strength to decorate the whole house with

roses and wear a lingerie for her baby daddy.Look Lindani I

have had enough drama that can last me a lifetime.The

last thing I want is to deal with Delia because an innocent

child is involved.You're too soft on Delia.She gets away

with everything because she knows you will never do

anything to her.I'm not encouraging you to hurt her but she

should know her limits.If you don't draw boundaries for her

then you and I are going to have some serious problems."

"I hear you babe.I hear you.I will sort out this mess.She

means nothing to me."

"But you mean everything to her.Sort this shit out."

"You're sexy when you're angry." He smirked pinning me
against the wall and kissing the daylights out of me.

The following morning we woke up to the news that Siph
was in hospital.He just had a sudden fever and had to be
rushed to the hospital.It reminded me of the time when
Gift had a sudden fever as well.Lindani and I were both in

full panic mode so we were chauffeured to the hospital.

"He had respiratory problems since he was a kid so I think

he relapsed." Lindani said with worry written all over his

face.

When we arrived the two pairs of twins were already

there. This was my first time seeing Treet after our last

meeting at the restaurant.

"What did the doctor say?" I asked the question directed to

Lisa and Lindy.

"They didn't find anything wrong with him yet.They are running some tests again but they are saying he is completely fine.But I know he is not okay.He had a sudden fever then he passed out.Yes he had some healthy problems here and there as a child but Sipho doesn't get sick that quickly and when he does it will not be this serious.For the doctor too to say nothing is wrong with him its complete bullshit."

Everyone was in a panic mode but we just had to

wait. There was nothing we could do. Once again they didn't find anything wrong with him. Lindani even told them about Siphos medical history but still scientifically he was very healthy and nothing was wrong with him. Lindani was all over the place and demanded that they rerun the test again. They moved him to the ICU. His condition was critical but scientifically there was nothing wrong.

He spent two days at the hospital but still the doctor's didn't find anything wrong with him. It was too much for my

man. Mr Zulu took matters into his own hands and got Siphon discharged. Since western science had failed him he resorted to the traditional healers. I thought MaZulu was going to protest since she was a Christian but she didn't. At the end of the day no matter how modernized or Christianized our society can be one way or the other we will have to go back to African traditional religion. This was one of the cases.

The sangoma revealed that Siphon was not introduced to

his ancestors. Apparently the ancestors he was introduced to couldn't recognize him and his real ancestors were fighting for him. I don't know what that shit is all about but maybe there was an ancestral war or something and Siphos was caught in the mess.

"We did a ceremony for Siphos. What do you mean he needs to be introduced to the ancestors? Yhrow the bones again!"

Lindani was frustrated this was weighing him down. He was a mess. First was Lily now this

"That's what I was showed Lindani.The bones don't lie.This boy needs his ancestors protection.Do the ceremony for him again and appeal to his ancestors if you must or you will loose this boy.Maybe there was a foul play the first time the ceremony was conducted so do it again."He packed his stuff and Mr Zulu walked him out.Lindani was devastated but it had to be done.The following day I packed for both him and Sipho so they left for iLembe were the ceremony was to be conducted.I

wanted to go with Lindani but this was their family matter

so I remained behind with Zara and her sister. Two days

later they were back but Siphos was worse. We didn't know

what to do.

"We did the ceremony but nothing is changing mom. I

thought Mageba said he will be fine after the ceremony

but he is getting worse." Lindani was worried and so was

I. Siphos was getting worse he was hearted up and had

started vomiting.

"I will call Mageba again and maybe there is another explanation to this."

"Do you think maybe he is acting up because his mother's death anniversary is near?" Lindy asked.

"Then Mageba should have seen it." Lisa said.

Everyone was stressed that we were quiet not knowing what to do next. The doorbell rang and a maid went to attend to it. Treet who had left for a while after they came back from iLembe walked in looking like he had seen a ghost.

"I think Sipho is my son. I think he is our son Majesty." He said.

What the heck!!!

39

MAJESTY

The universe and it's sense of humour.

Everyone looked at Treet like he was crazy. Myself included.

What the hell was he on about?

"What are you talking about?" Mr Zulu asked.

"I know I might sound crazy or like I'm high on weed but I

think Sipho is our son Gift." He said and everyone gasped. I

heard some "yohs" from Thoko and her mother. I was too

shocked to even move. What the hell was he talking about?

"What are you talking about Treet?" I asked slightly

shaking.

"Sipho is my son man. What are you talking about?" He

ignored Lindani and came to me. He took a folded picture

out of his pockets.

"I really think this is our Gift that is why I want a paternity

test. I don't know what the hell happened but this must be

our child Majesty. I don't know how the hell he ended up

with this guy and my sister but this is our baby. Look at

him.I was going through the family album and I came

across Sipho's pictures when he was an infant."I was

starting to feel dizzy and his voice was echoing.I took the

picture with shaking hands then unfolded it.

"Ohhh my God." I covered my face with my hands and

wept.It was really him.He was even sucking his thumb

like he used to do.Those violet eyes and dark curls.It was

him.Why didn't I notice that it was him all this while?

"Ok fill me in here.I'm lost.What the hell is this about?Sipho

is my son. What is this about?" Lindani's deep voices filled the room. I stopped wailing and wiped my face but the tears kept on streaming.

Before I answered him Treet beat me to it. "Majesty and I met at some party. I'm not proud of the way things happened that day or how I handled the situation but because of that night she became pregnant with my twins. She miscarried the other one and then gave birth to Gift but he "died" after nine days. This is exactly how our

Gift looked like when he was an infant. Its exactly the same and it really cannot be a coincidence. Come to think of it. Siphos is sick because the traditional healer said you didn't introduce him to his ancestors. You introduced him to the wrong ancestors. You can all judge by Jestys reaction that a mother recognized her child."

Lindani looked at me with shock written all over his face. Now this was the moment I wish I had told him the entire truth. I didn't think it was necessary but now I

realized how important it was to tell him about that

chapter of my life. Yes he knew I once had a child but not

with Treet.

"Majesty what the hell is this guy talking about?"

"It's true. I was fifteen when I became pregnant with Treet's

kids. He didn't know so he left Zim and went to America. I

lost the first twin when I was a few months. Then I gave

birth to Gift. He was doing just fine but when he was nine

days old. He had a sudden fever and that was it. When I met

Sipho I felt something and..."

"We don't care what you felt Majesty.Sipho is Lindani's

son.He might look like yours because Treet is Ariana's

sibling but it doesn't mean he is yours." Thoko interjected.

"Isn't it suspicious that I never saw Sipho's pictures as an

infant ever since."I took out my phone and scrolled in the

gallery then clicked on Gift's picture and gave the phone to

MaZulu.She gasped too and covered her mouth.

"This doesn't mean anything. Sipho is my boy okay.He is

my champ and Ariana would never lie to me about it. She

would never do that to me. There is a

misunderstanding. None of this makes sense okay. Siph

is my boy." I have seen how tough this man was but

looking at him right now I could see how hurt he was

behind that tough scarred handsome chocolate face.

"Okay let's not jump into conclusions right now. Let's all

behave like adults. I understand this is a sensitive situation

so it should be handled with extra caution. Let's all sit

down and breath." MaZulu said and we stayed quiet for
sometime trying to digest everything.

"Were you there when Sipho was born?" I asked looking at
Lindani.

"No I wasn't there." He answered.

"When was he born?"

"19 September." He said and I laughed in disbelief. That
was Gift's death anniversary.

"Where was he born?"

"In Zimbabwe.Ariana had a mission there.I mean some charity work to do there.She left when she was eight months pregnant. I tried so much to stop her but she wouldn't budge.She left with Delia and did her charity work for sometime and then she gave birth there in Harare."

"19 September that is Gift's death anniversary.Sipho was born in Zimbabwe and you weren't there to witness it.Also his name is Sipho which I believe means Gift right.He doesn't like green salad like Treet.He is allergic to nuts like

Treet. When he doesn't like something he scrunches his nose like me. He is allergic to pollen like me. I noticed all this but never paid that much attention to it but now its starting to make perfect sense and don't tell me you think this is just a coincidence. Gift had a birth mark. It was a black and tiny mole on his left big toe. Its very tiny that you might not see it on first glance. Let's check Siphos." MaZulu went to Siphos room and came with Siphos who looked much better than he was in the morning. Seeing him my

heart pounded like never before. It was like I was seeing

him for the first time after I lost him. How the hell didn't I

notice that he was my son? What kind of a mother was

I? Tears continued to stream down my cheeks as I made

my way to him. I was shaking.

"Mj you're okay?" He said scrunching his nose. I cupped his

face and kissed his forehead. I was having the same

feeling I had when I held Gift in my arms for the first

time. Hell no I didn't need a DNA test or a birthmark to

prove that he was my son because now that everything

was starting to make sense I could feel it in me that I

pushed that big head out.

"I want to see your left toe." I said. He gave me a confused

look but removed his socks anyway. There it was black and

tiny. You couldn't miss it because he took his father's

complexion so the birth mark looked out of place. My limbs

went weak that I lost balance and sat down. I covered my

mouth and continued shaking.

"Mj are you ok." He asked with a concerned look on his face.

"J-just h-hug me ..okay." I stammered and he obliged then hugged me. I didn't want to let him go because I was afraid that letting him go out of my sight I would never see him again. So I hugged him for dear life. I felt arms around us and by the scent I knew who it was. Treet! We broke the hug and I kissed Sipho all over the face.

"What's going on? Are you leaving?" He asked

"No my baby no. Go to your room my baby. Go to your room." I said and he just nodded with confusion written all over his face and left.

I looked at Treet. "Call your sister here. I need some answers. Call Delia." He nodded and left. I looked at Lindani who looked so shocked and pained. I felt his pain. It was his wife's death anniversary and it was the same day he had to find out that the child he treated like his all along was not his.

"We can conduct the DNA test today." I said and everyone nodded. I could see they all knew what the truth was but still wanted to go through the test just hoping that it would turn out the other way. A few moments later Delia walked in the room, feeling herself as always. She greeted everyone and only a few people answered her back.

"So why am I here?" She asked looking at Treet.

"What the fuck happened when you were with Ariana in Zimbabwe during Siphos birth? What the hell happened?"

Lindani barked. He was angry and hurt. Veins were popping on his forehead and his eyes were bloodshot red. He didn't look like the Lindani I knew.

Delia shifted uncomfortably on the couch. "What are you on about? She gave birth and we came with the baby"

"I ain't playing with you. Do you understand what I'm saying. Just because I can't a woman it doesn't mean I

won't find the one who can." Lindani said moving slowly towards her. I ran and held him. I was also afraid of his

angry self but I gathered enough courage to hold him. With the way he was clenching his jaws and fists. Shit was about to go down. Lindani was always calm even when angry but this time around he was pushed too far. He looked at me with that same look and looked at my hands which were holding his arm. I knew he wanted me to let him go but I didn't.

"No Ntshangase please. I understand you're angry but please my love don't do what you want to do please no

Ntshangase.Let's go back and sit down then talk like adults ok." I pleaded with him.He sighed and calmed.We went back and sat down.I saw how he roughed up Ethan I didn't want him to do the same to Delia.If anything I wanted to deal with that bitch myself.

"Tell the truth sis.This is serious okay." Treet said.

Delia really didn't see how serious the situation was as she continued with her bitchy attitude. "I don't know what the hell you called me here for but I told you what I

know. Ariana gave birth to Sipho in Zimbabwe. I was there and we came back with the baby. I'm leaving. Sort out your issues because clearly this has nothing to do with me so I'm not needed here." She stood.

"Sit your ass down before I make you!!!" I shouted which shocked everyone. Including Delia. She sat down and started shifting uncomfortably. I was feeling the anger brewing in me. I was very close to bursting with anger.

"We gave you a chance to tell the truth but you blew

it. You're going to regret this. For now let's do this damn DNA thing." They all agreed with me. The doctor who did the DNA test for Treet, Tyrone and the Khumalos was the one we all agreed to use. So instead of us going to the hospital he came and took the DNA samples of Treet, Lindani, Siphon as well as me. Lisa asked to be involved in the testing to avoid a foul play. Since she had studied medicine Dr Rockford agreed to have her in the lab during the procedure. Tyrone requested to be present as

well. The following day we were going to get the results. A

lot has happened that day so we all decided to go to our

places. We would meet the following day. I asked MaZulu

to keep a close eye on Delia and she promised she would.

"Can we talk?" Treet said when we were walking outside.

"Not right now." I followed Lindani to the car. He wanted to

drive but with the condition he was in I was not going to let

him. I took the keys and drove us to his place. When we

arrived he just stormed upstairs. I followed him again but

he slammed the door on my face and locked himself in his study. I let him be. Trying to talk to him at this point would only infuriate him more. I had my own emotions to deal with anyway. I was happy, sad, confused, shocked and angry at the same time. It was making me go crazy. I didn't even bother to make dinner. No one was going to eat. I went to sleep on the big cold bed alone. If sleeping is staring on the ceiling all night long then that is exactly what I did. Around

6 I took a cold shower then wore a black ripped jeans and a black T-shirt. Yep my mood was that bad. I went to knock on Lindani's study. He walked out looking like a mess. I peeped into his study and everything was upside down. I sighed and followed him to his bedroom. He was in the shower. I sat on the bed and waited for him. After a while he came back with only a towel wrapped around his waist. He was dripping wet. I don't know if this was the right time to be turned on but I was turned on just by looking at

that chocolate rock hard chest,the abs and that roughed

torso.I pressed my legs together.

"Please get out I want to change." He said maintaining that

serious look of his.

"Lindani I..."

"Not right now Majesty.Please just get out." He said trying

so hard to be calm.I sighed and walked out.After he was

done he came downstairs wearing all black as well.I drove

again to their family house because with his mood he

would cause an accident. Everyone looked exhausted just like us. Lisa called and informed us that the results would be ready by 2pm.

"Delia just tell the truth." Treet broke the silence.

"I told you what I already know." She rolled her eyes.

"You do realise that this case can land you in jail right. If it turns out that Siphos is not my son then I'm going to open a case. Ariana is no longer alive to pay for her sins but you're. You will pay big time for a lot of charges. Better say

the truth now and I will consider sparing you." Lindani

threatened and Delia looked horrified.

She wiped a sheen of sweat from her forehead."It was

Ariana's idea.Sh...she lost your baby Lindani.She talked to

some nurse who said her husband was a doctor and could

get us a baby.Ariana and that Doctor made that deal.I had

nothing to do with it.So yes Siphos is not Lindani's son."She

confessed and I looked at speechless.Everyone was

equally shocked.

"What was the doctor's name?" I asked shaking with anger

and pain. Delia and her sister stole thirteen years of my

child's life from me. How evil can one be.

"I think it was Jack or is it Jayden...I don't remember but

it's starts with J."

I cried out. "It's Justin Moyo. He is the one who did this. I

can't believe he did this to me. I saw him a few days ago at

Netcare."

"He is going to pay. Delia you're also going to pay for it."

Lindani's voice boomed in the room.

"But you promised.."

"Ohhh shut up Delia.You abused my son.You and your sister robbed me thirteen years of my son's life.How can you be so evil?How can you do that to another mother?"

"I was just an acquaintance.I'm sorry alright. Please don't send me to jail."

"You're going to pay for it and very dearly." I threatened

Later on the results came.We could have bought the DNA

test kit to save us a lot of money but those things aren't

100% correct so we did it the old school way..Like I

expected Siphos was my son.Lindani was devastated.He

just stormed out followed by his siblings as soon as the

results were announced.

LINDANI

The ultimate price for people who mess with him and his

queen.

"We found him." Lwandile's harsh voice said through the phone.

"Ok I'm on my way." I responded and drove to my warehouse. The bastard was going to pay dearly for messing with me and my woman. I was upset that I believed a lie for thirteen good years. I was angry that I loved Ariana so much and she fooled me so easily. Now I had to swallow the bitter truth that the boy I thought was my son wasn't. To make matters worse he belonged to

that bastard who wanted my woman. How fucked up was that? Now I get to feel how Majesty felt when Delia was involved. I wasn't looking forward for the baby daddy drama. Majesty still had a soft spot for that dude so obviously he was going to exploit. How on earth was I even going to tell my boy that I wasn't his real father. The air around me was stale and my steps were hard as I went inside the dark warehouse. I met Leon first whose face conveyed nothing but disgust and hatred. My siblings

shared the same sentiments with me.They loved Sipho as one of our own so this situation hit them real hard too.The fucker had to pay.

"He is here." Leon said.I nodded and walked further inside with Leon behind me.Stomping forward,I found a bloodied man strapped to a chair.The room was empty except for the chair he was sitting on and a small table which had my tools on it. Lwandile, Leon and six of my men surrounded him.As I got closer I got a better view of his face.It was

swollen and twisted in pain.

"W-whats g-going on? What do you want?Is it the money

you want?" He asked painfully. I roughly grabbed his hair

and pulled him hard until his neck snapped painfully.He

groaned in pain.

"You stole my woman's son.You fucked up.Majesty

Browns.Does that name ring a bell?" My voice boomed.

"I swear I didn't do anything to her.We just dated and we

broke up that's all."I took a closer look at the bastard's

features and failed to understand why Majesty thought she loved this man at one point. What was there to love? He was handsome but wasn't built like me. He didn't have the confidence in his gaze like I possessed. I bet with all my money that he couldn't fuck well like I did.

"A man who owns up to his mistakes is redeemable but the one who lies pays the ultimate price. I suggest you think carefully about what you're going to say next because I'm not giving you another chance. Be very careful

about your answer. Its either you live with it or you die for it. What did you do to Majesty's son? Start talking before I make you." I took a hand axe. Examining it I smirked evilly looking at him. He flinched in fear and I was satisfied. He better be petrified.

He started shaking. "Her son didn't die. My wife is a nurse and she was part of the crew which helped to deliver Ariana's baby. Ariana is the woman we sold Majesty's baby to. She had a still born and she was devastated. She talked

to my wife and asked her if she could help her steal a baby for her. The offer was good because she was paying thousands. My wife talked to me about it and that time I was attending to Majesty. She was a teenager and always complained about parenting her child on her own. She was a kid herself. She was miserable about raising the child on her own at such a young age so I decided to do her a favour. I needed the money too because I wanted to pay lobola for my wife. So I told her to tell Ariana that we had a

baby for her. She didn't want the adoption process because it was going to take too long so we had to take the illegal route. I knew Majesty was not going to agree to give up her child. Ariana's sister came up with a strategy of faking Gift's death and that's what we did. Kidnapping him was too risky for him. Faking his death was easier because I knew the medicine to be used to make him "dead." I used midazolam. It is the safer one and can knock anyone for days. I used a very small dose on Gift. He had a sudden

fever and his pulse was close to nothing. Everyone

thought he was dead but I knew he was alive. To cut the

long story short. They buried an empty coffin and Ariana

took Gift as her son. I don't know how she managed it but

she left the country with Gift as her son..."

He went on and on confessing everything. He even

mentioned how he gave Majesty abortion pills with her

oblivious to it. I was disgusted by this scumbag. The anger

that took over my body was indescribable. I had promised

myself not to get my hands dirty but the bastard forced my hand.He messed with what's mine.I walked towards the table and picked the pliers.

"Fuckyea.Now Scar is talking." Leon smirked.He held

Justin's head in position. I stood in front of him and

roughly grabbed his chin not caring if I hurt him.I forced

his mouth open and held the pliers to his teeth.I had

unleashed the monster.It tookme hours to be

satisfied.When I was done he was barely breathing.

"Let me finish him off." Lisa was in her Blackwidow mode. She was craving for blood so I let her. She cocked her gun and a few minutes later it went off. He was no longer breathing with a gun shot wound on his forehead. May this be a lesson learnt. Mess with me and what's mine, you will pay the ultimate price.

"A hijacking gone wrong." I said to my men and they all nodded. They understood what I meant. I walked out and drove straight to one of my cabins. I couldn't go to Majesty

like this.She wasn't supposed to know this side to me.

MAJESTY

The Zulus were so devastated about the news.They

couldn't believe that Ariana did something like that to

Lindani.She really pulled a fast one on him.Delia was taken

to the guestroom.Lindani was going to deal with her but I

so wanted to strangle her.Treet asked to leave with Siph

or should I say my Gift to spend some quality time with

him. I told him not to tell him about this new development yet. The Khumalos didn't lose in this. Either way they still had a grandson. Life can be so unfair sometimes.

"Do you want to come along so that I could tell them with you present as the mother of my child."

I sighed. "I need to be with Lindani. I'm sure you can handle it. You're a grown ass man. Just make sure when you tell them Siphos will not be around. This is sensitive and I don't want my baby to be confused. "

"But there is nothing confusing. I'm his father and you're his mother..."

I cut in. "Lindani is his father too. You're his father biologically but Lindani has always been there. He is also a victim in this situation. You should consider his feelings as well. You know how this is. You saw how this broke Mr Jackson in your case. I don't want Lindani to be hurt well he is already but please be considerate about this. I know you're ecstatic about finding out about our child. I'm

equally happy but consider Lindani.I know I sound selfish
right now but please."

Before he responded.I went into the car where Siphos was
and kissed him all over his face.

"I love you okay my baby."

He smiled."I love you too.See you tomorrow."

I went back inside as Treet drove off.

MaZulu smiled sadly looking at me."Now I see the reason
why you were brought into my son's life."

I panicked."Talking about your son.Where is Lindani.My

God I hope he is ok.He was really hurt."

I immediately ran out and drove to his place.

"Lindani..Lindani!!" I called out but there was no response.I

panicked and ran around the house.He wasn't there.

Three weeks passed by and Lindani was still MIA.Sipho's

ceremony was conducted.I wanted Lindani to be there but

at the same time it would look like I was rubbing it in or

something. Siphso had no idea what was going on. We couldn't tell him because Lindani had to be there. Treet on the other hand wanted a celebration to be held for Siphso. Honestly I wasn't in the mood for a celebration so I told him we would talk about that when the dust settles. Since we found out about Siphso/Gift we didn't discuss a way forward because I was delaying. I knew it was not going to be an easy road especially after everything that happened between the two of us. I was

also stressed about Lindani pulling a disappearing stunt on me like that. I had a feeling that the siblings knew where their brother was but didn't want to tell me and it was pissing me off. Yes Lindani was pissed and hurt but three weeks were too much for me. I couldn't go on without him. Something had to be done. I paid Leon a visit. That one was an easy target. I emotionally blackmailed him and threatened him. He eventually cracked. Lindani was at some cabin in the woods.

What the fuck?" I will ask about that cabin later. Right now I need to see my man." Leon drove me to the cabin which was an hour away from Lindani's place. When we arrived the place was clean but there were a lot of empty bottles of Scotch. The motherfucker has been drowning himself in alcohol. Lisa was also there when we arrived. I was going to deal with her later. I asked her where Lindani was and she directed me to the bedroom upstairs. I opened the door and he was standing on the balcony shirtless with his

sweatpants on holding a glass with whisky. He didn't even

hear me coming in until I went to the balcony and stood

besides him. He looked surprised that I had come. He

looked exhausted. The eye bags and unshaved beard were

a clear indication that he had sleepless nights and a rough

time.

"What are you doing here?" He asked with a scratchy voice.

I scoffed. "Really? Are you seriously asking me that right

now? Lindani I understand you're hurt but you sit down with

me and we make it right together. I thought you said we would fight together but clearly your actions say otherwise.

How long were you planning to do this to me?"

He shrugged. "I wanted to give you and baby daddy time to play happy family."

I did the unthinkable. I raised my hand and my plan united with his cheek. I slapped him! "I love you dammit!!!" I shouted. "Fuck." He slammed his lips on mine. I wrapped my arms around his strong neck as his hands wrapped over my hips, tugging me closer.

40

MAJESTY

Love on the brain.

He kissed me like it was his last day on earth.He grabbed me by the back of my hair and continued to pull my lower back towards his bulge.He continued devouring my mouth like a man claiming his woman.Then he lifted me and carried me to the bed.His lips never left mine.He sucked my bottom lip,his tongue danced in my mouth and he breathed a sexy breath which had a mint scent mixed with

whisky.He rolled me on the bed as his lips was still on mine.I moaned in his mout.I was so aroused,so turned on.I gripped the back of his neck and kissed his chest feasting on his chocolate skin.He pushed my dress to my waist then ripped my red thong that I wore underneath.Man that was one of my favourites!He grabbed my dress next and ripped it too.

"Holy fucking shit."He said with a husky voice.I was completely naked before him and he looked at me like it

was his first time looking at a woman. He had sexy
bedroom eyes, half closed and blood shot red. He cupped
both my breasts and kissed them both then took one
nipple in his mouth. I moaned, wrapped my legs around his
waist with my back arching, pressing my boobs further to
his face. He gave them both equal attention, sucking them
both a little aggressively and then licked my cleavage.

"S-stop..t-teasing..." I struggled to breath because I was so
so aroused. He chuckled. With the way he was teasing me I

was already feeling myself reaching my climax without

him inside of me. His kisses moved to my neck, my

stomach, my thighs. He worshipped every inch of my skin

with his mouth. I was a moaning mess.

"Ohhh Lindani...fuuuck!!! I moaned louder when I felt his

hot breath on my most tender part. The moment his

tongue sucked on my clit, I came. He chuckled and licked

me clean. He ate pussy like a king. He sucked it, bit it, kissed

it and then I felt his finger circling in me. I squirted

aggressively, spraying all over the place. I messed both his face and the sheets. He came to my face with my wetness visible on his face and he didn't seem to mind.

"That's my girl." He whispered and pressed his lips on mine while his fingers were doing wonders to me. I kissed him tasting myself on him. His fingers did the magic again and I came.

"I ..want ..you inside." I said trying to catch my breath. He smiled and carried me off the bed. I gave him a confused

look.

"We will make love don't worry just not today. I want it to

be a very special moment for us ok." I felt like crying. How

could he do this to me? I wanted him inside of me. He saw

my frustrations and chuckled. He carefully placed me down

in the shower, opened the taps and stripped. His cock was

pointing north. It was very thick, long and veined. It was a

little curved with a big mushroom red head. I looked at it

like I had never seen a dick in my life.

"Like what you see?" He winked. How could he tease me like that when he also wanted me as much? I went on my knees and grabbed him when he least expected it. It pulsed in my warm hands.

"Shit." He groaned. I licked his head, then his balls. He groaned and closed his eyes when I took him in. He was so thick that I had to open my mouth wider and I could only take half of him in. I didn't break the eye contact and his bedroom eyes were the sexiest. With my other hand I

stroked him while I ate the other half.He kept on
groaning,with his jaws clenched and he started talking in
his mother tongue.I didn't even understand some of the
words he was saying.His groans deepened.I knew he was
closer.I continued eating like I was born for it and he shot
his load in my mouth.I swallowed up like a big girl.That
was the best oral sex ever.

"Fuck that was amazing." He smirked as he took the
shower gel and smeared it on both of us.While he was at it

I felt his hard on again. I gave him a surprised look and he smiled innocently. This man!

"Don't look at me like that. I'm looking at the most beautiful woman and she is naked." I tried to hide my smile. I was still frustrated that he teased me like that.

"Stop sulking babe. Ntshangase is all yours okay." I hit him playfully on his chest and we showered. Since my dress was torn I wore one of his black hoodies. He complained that it was revealing his assets but there was nothing we

could do. We went downstairs and as soon as we walked into the lounge Leon and Lisa gave us funny looks. Oops hope I wasn't too loud.

"Bro she still can walk?!Haa bafo I'm disappointed in you."

Leon said shaking his head.That one was just dramatic.

"Let's hope you have sound proofs in your rooms.We could hear the moans from the gate." Lisa arched her eyebrow at me then gulped down her scotch. I blushed.

"What are you still doing here?I thought you guys would be

gone." Lindani said.

They shared some weird eye contact with Lisa. Lindani

just nodded his head. We went to our car leaving Lisa and

Leon since they said they had business to attend to.

"Let's get going babe. I'm sure my so-.. I'm sure Siphos is

waiting for me right." He sighed sadly.

"He is still your son Lindani. He doesn't necessarily have to

be your blood. You are a good father and Siphos couldn't

have found anyone else better to love him the way you

did.Thank you so much for being such a good dad to him
and taking care of him for all these years.You did a great
job and if you still want to father him then you have every
right to.I'm so sorry that you went through this whole
ordeal.I would be lying if I say I understand what you're
going through because I don't but one thing is for sure.I
know its not easy and its painful to accept the fact that the
child you thought was yours turned out to be not yours.I'm
so sorry about that Lindani.We will go through this as

well. We can fight this. You must be hurt, sad, feeling

betrayed and angry even and I don't blame you but don't

push me away or Siphos. We both need you and we love

you." He gave me a bear hug.

"I'm hurt but I will manage. I'm a lucky man" I realised that

Lindani was a man of a few words so this was enough. He

didn't need to say it in words but I knew we would go

through this together.

"I love you MaZulu."

I chuckled."I'm not MaZulu yet but I love you Zulu

Ntshangase."

We shared a brief kiss.We went into the car and he drove

us back to his place.I wanted to ask about the cabin but

decided to just let it be.It was probably their

mancave.When we arrived I changed and wore a decent

dress.Then we drove to Treet's place.I wasn't looking

forward to this honestly but this had to be done.Treet lived

in an apartment in Sandton not so far from where my

apartment was so it didn't take time for us to arrive there. I

had already informed him about our visit so the security

didn't give us a hard time.

"Dad!!" Siphos ran to Lindani when we walked in. This was

going to be harder than I thought.

"Hey champ." They did their signature handshake. I looked

at Tyrone. I couldn't read his facial expression. We

exchanged pleasantries and went to sit in the lounge. The

whole thing was awkward but Tyrone tried to make it less

awkward by chatting with Lindani asking about his

wellbeing. Siphon on the other hand went on and on about

Treet buying him a new play station, clothes

gadgets and

taking him for the movies. He did spoil our son hey and

Siphon was happy.

"Boy let's go play that new video game I told you about."

Tyrone said. He realised we needed to talk without Siphon in

the room. We were left in awkward silence until Treet broke

the ice.

"I want Siphos full custody." What the hell!!?

"What!!?" Lindani and I said in unison.

"You can't do that Siphos my son too." Lindani said.

"He is my flesh and my blood so yes I have every right to."

"You can't do that. I took care of that boy like my own. In

fact he is my own." Both of them were on their feet slowly

walking towards each other.

I stood up and pushed them apart. I was so frustrated.

"Stop acting like dogs fighting over a bone. The both of you. You want to fight when my son is in the next room? If he walks in on you fighting like boys what will he think and what image will you be portraying? How do you think he will feel about you fighting over him? Don't try me both of you. This is serious. This is not about your egos. Lindani sit your ass down and you Treet follow me." I walked out with Treet on my tail.

"That is not fair Treet? Have you finally lost it now?" I

folded my arms and gawked at him.

He sighed and messed his hair. "I'm not crazy. I just want

my son's full custody. I'm just being a father okay."

"You're being selfish. Are you forgetting that I'm the mother

here too? If you're being a father you should consider your

son's feelings in all of this. How do you think he will feel

when you do this to him? Also you should consider Lindani

in this too. He is playing a vital role in this issue." I said.

He clenched his jaws in frustration. "Why should I consider

him huh?Sipho is my son.The buff nigger has you.He can't have both my son and the woman I love.He can't have his bread buttered both sides.You're the one who is being selfish for asking me to consider your boyfriend in this matter.What about my feelings?Because of him I lost you and now you want me to share my son with him just because you love him.Forget it.You guys make your own baby."He blurted out.

I laughed in disbelief and shook my head."Ohh so this is

what its all about now.You want sole custody just to spite
us right?You're saying I'm selfish?You wanna know what
selfish is Treet?Let me tell you what selfish is.Selfish is a
guy who takes advantage of a vulnerable girl at a party.He
makes her drink alcohol and she gets drunk then she acts
out of character because of the alcohol that the guy gave
her.The guy takes advantage of the situation by sleeping
with the girl.Selfish is the guy who risks that girls life by
sleeping with her without a condom and then the following

morning he throws money at her face like she is a
bitch. Selfish is that same guy even after realising his
mistakes he never bothers to check after the girl he
humiliated. Selfish is the sisters of that very same guy
who took away the victim's only child. Stealing the only
good thing in her life and ruining her life. So do you wanna
go down that road? Do I need to continue telling you what
selfishness is?"

"That's not fair Majesty." He said.

I sighed."Life is not fair Treet.Your sisters robbed me
thirteen years of my son's life.I moaned my son's when he
was alive.Now I just found him and you wanna take him
away from me?And you're talking about fairness?"I half
shouted.

He stared at me for a while digesting everything I had
said."I'm sorry.I guess I'm just being bitter hey."He sat on
the bench that was next to a fountain and I sat besides
him.

I sighed loudly."I'm sorry too.I said I forgave you but I brought up the past again.I shouldn't have I'm sorry.I just wanted to prove a point.Treet this isn't about me and you anymore.This is about our son Gift/Sipho.This is about what best for him so we should put our ego aside.We have a history and a not so pleasant one at it but right now is not the time to settle our scores using Sipho as the pawn.Sipho grew up with Lindani and he considers him his father.He knows you as his uncle.It's going to be hard for

him to understand the new development and what's really going on. Don't add to that by trying to take him away from Lindani. They love each other so much. And I'm sure you understand what I'm talking about considering that you have been in the same situation. The difference is your situation was not handled well. You know how you felt when you were told that Mr Jackson is not your father. I'm sure you don't want your son to feel the same way. But he will only feel that way if we fight. Let's handle this with

caution. Let's handle this like mature adults. It will make things easier for him too. You're still using the Jackson's surname and you still love that man because he raised you. So why can't you also allow your son to still be part of Lindani's life? I want us to share the custody because we both have equal rights over our son. We should coparent and he will get to experience the love of both his fathers and mother. You're my son's father Treet and I respect you for that. I also expect the same from you. Think about what

I said. If you need days to ponder about it then its okay you have all the time in the world to think about what's best for our son. Remember this isn't about us anymore." I gave him a pat on the shoulder and stood up.

"I'm taking Siphos with today and you need to think about what I said. Once you make your decision come over to Lindani's place." I walked inside the house. Siphos and Lindani were busy playing a video game and Tyrone was in the kitchen.

"Its time to go guys." I announced. Siphon ran to the car after saying his goodbyes to Treet and Tyrone.

"Man I'm sorry about earlier." Treet said to Lindani.

"Its cool man.I shouldn't have acted the way I did too.It was so immature of us." Lindani said and they shoulder bumped. Ohhkay!

"I will sleep on what you said Jesty and I will get back to you tomorrow." Treet said.

"Thank you."I said and Lindani drove us home.While he

was away I had changed the entire house and turned it to

what I liked so I had my fingers crossed hoping that

Lindani would not throw a fit.

"Wow it looks different in here.You did this babe." I nodded.

"I was afraid that you won't like it."

"I love it.I'm going to buy you a house and you will decorate

it whatever way you want okay."

"You don't need to buy another one.This one is fine."

"Well there are a lot of Ariana's memories around here.I

want us to start afresh.Create our own memories in our
own house."He said.

"I love the sound of that."We were about to kiss but Sipho
cleared his throat.He had his arms folded.

"Sorry."We said in unison.

Lindani had a hard time sleeping that day though.I woke
up around 1am.He wasn't in bed.After looking for him all
around the house I found him in the garage burning
Ariana's pictures.Her clothes were packed in boxes.I

guess they were going to charity.I hugged him from behind

and rested my head on his bare strong back.

"What's eating you up?" I asked.

He sighed"I don't think he is going to agree to share the

custody and I can't fight him because its his son.He has

every right."

"He will come around I know.He is not that difficult.He is

just not over what happened between us but he is

considerate."

"You know him that much huh." He turned and looked at me.

I smiled."What's that smell?Is that jealous I smell there."I

sniffed and he chuckled."I know him enough to know that

he is going to think over what I told him and make the right

decision."

"I trust you then."

"That's more like it.Damn babe you're smelling like

barbeque.I could eat you right now."I said and he laughed.I

loved it when he laughed.He had a perfect set of
teeth.They were small and pure white so whenever he
smiled or laughed he looked so cute

"You're staring." He said

"You're kind of cute when you smile."I cupped his face.

"Hell no that's an insult.I can't be cute I'm not a baby.I will
punish you if you say I'm cute again."I laughed I knew what

this punishment was all about.I was so going to press all

his red buttons till he "punishes" me.He lifted me and

carried me to our bedroom. We took an innocent shower to get rid of the smell of smoke then we went to sleep. The following morning I woke up late. Lindani had left a sticky note on my forehead saying he had some things to take care of so there was no need for me to prepare breakfast for him. I took a quick shower and made breakfast for Siphos with a lot of bacon. He really was Lindani's son as well. The way he loved meat. Yoh I give up. After breakfast we sat in the lounge and started playing some video

games. Treet called and said he was on his way. I texted

Lindani and informed him that Treet was coming. He

texted back saying he was also on his way. Treet was the

first on to arrive with Tyrone and Lindani arrived a few

minutes later.

"Can I give you guys anything water, whiskey or beer?"

"Whiskey is fine." Treet said.

"Whiskey it is then." I served them the whiskey. Tyrone had

already disappeared with Siphos.

"Like the old days? Double and on the rocks?" I asked Treet.

He chuckled. "You know me really well." I smiled and I saw

Lindani giving me an eye. He really didn't have to worry.

"So I thought about what you said and made my

decision. You were right. We should consider our son in all

of this since it's not about us anymore. And with that in

mind I agree to sharing the custody. In as much as I don't

fancy you Lindani you were a good father to my son. I can't

take that away from him. In fact he will be blessed to have

two fathers who love him and would do anything for him.I

talked to my lawyer.He has started drafting the

coparenting agreement but for it to be finalised he said we

have to go to home affairs and change Siphos birth

certificate."Treet explained.

"Thank you Treet hey.So now I think its time Siphos knows

the truth." Lindani said.

"Yea I agree with you."I nodded.

"Okay. Are you gonna say what you wanna say or I should just go back to my game?" We had called Sipho but none of us had the courage to tell him what was going on. We were afraid of his reaction.

"Okay umm my baby. There is something we need to tell you and its very important" I said playing with his afro.

"Are you pregnant?" He asked and I choked on my saliva looking at Lindani. This boy!

"Okay you're not pregnant so what is this talk about?"

"Okay champ umm Mj here is your real mother and Treet is your real dad.I'm also your dad but biologically Treet is your father."I gave Lindani a look.

"Really Zulu there is a way to say things.You just don't say it like that." I said.

He shrugged."You were not saying anything."

"Okay what are you guys talking about?" Siphos looked at us confused.

"The thing is Siphos.I actually gave birth to you.Like Lindani

your dad said, you're my son and Treet is your father. When

I gave birth to you you were stolen. Like being

kidnapped. Lindani and Ariana took care of you like their

child. We found out about this some few days ago after

running some DNA test. I'm sure you know what that is

right? They teach you those things in Science. So you're my

son and that is your father but Lindani is still your

dad. Nothing and no one is gonna change that." My gosh I

was so bad at this.

"Okay do I have like two fathers and you're my real mom."

He said and I nodded. He was ecstatic about it and didn't

look as confused as I thought he would. What mattered to

him was that he had two dads and I was his real mother. I

couldn't believe I actually had a thirteen year old son. I was

a mother!!

Later that day we went to home affairs and applied for the

changes on his birth certificate. Two days later the

changes were done. Gift was his second name even

though it meant one and the same thing with Siphon. The custody papers were ready as well. We both had our lawyers to go through them just for the formalities but the clauses were fair. I was to stay with Siphon on the weekdays and Treet would take him on the weekend as well the holidays. We agreed to make decisions pertaining Siphon after discussing it first. We were to contribute 60/40 financially since both of us were financially stable. Treet insisted on contributing 60%. I wanted it to be 50/50 but

you know man and their egos..Lindani had already opened a trust fund for Sipho way before so Treet and I were just going to contribute to that.

"I want to go with him to the US and introduce him to my dad if that is okay with you?"

"Of course.Mr Jackson needs to meet his grandson but make sure you come back before Christmas.I want to celebrate it with him."

So Treet and Sipho left for the US.This whole baby daddy

issue was over.I was now hands on the rehab center.Gift foundation.I named it after my son.Thanks to Lwandile and his team the building was finished.Everything was done.Lindani,Leon and Lwandile went to buy the furniture whilst Lindy,Lisa and I were working on advertising job vacancies.We needed therapists,nurses,guards,chefs,cleaners and so forth.I had agreed to partner with the twins so it wasn't difficult to get the stuff.They knew people who were qualified for the

jobs.Lindani had said he would take care of the security so

that was minus one problem.So we were doing the

interviews and I was now damn tired because we started

our interviews in the morning.It was now towards lunch.

"We are only left with the head chef and the head

therapist.We are almost done." Lisa was not even

tired.Aibo this girl tho!! looked like I have been hit by a

train.Sitting all day and talking is tiring.We were lucky

though that most people we interviewed had good

references. It made our job easier.

"About the head therapist leave that to me. I know

someone who deserves the position." Call it nepotism or

whatever but Dr Spencer was perfect for that position. So I

gave her a call later that afternoon and she was glad to

hear from me. I told her about my offer with my fingers

crossed hoping she would agree to relocate and she did. I

figured she didn't have any family. She was an orphan and

a widow without a child. I guess that's what gave her the

drive to become a therapist. She was happy to take the offer so I organized her transport and accommodation.

"Its done we have a head therapist now.What's left the catering team?We could apply from catering companies." I sat down.

"Umm catering companies are a no no for me.Right now we need a catering team which will be there to stay.Catering companies will only give us people temporarily. We want people we are going to employ

permanently here." Lisa said.

"Zara once hired her friend Lerato on one of our birthday

parties. She is independent and got her team. She is really

good too. People couldn't stop commenting about her

food. You remember our 25th birthday party Lis."

Lindy got in contact with Zara immediately and asked her

about the girl. Lucky enough she was also looking for a

permanent job. We got in contact with her. She was around

as well as her team so they came for the interview. They

had quite a good reputation. It was only the three of them that meant we still needed some other chefs as well but since she knew about this business she referred us to some people around the city who were good chefs and needed the job.

"She is super cute and young. I love her drive. At 22 she is so hardworking and determined. She reminds me of my younger self." I liked Lerato. She had this aura that was soothing and you would just like her without her even

trying to win you over.

"She is a good person. A church girl and I'm sure she is a virgin." Lisa said the last part with laughter in her voice.

"Who said church girls are virgins?" Lindy said.

"Not all of them are but she is. I'm sure of that. I once kept tabs on her. I once had a crush on her." Lindy and I looked at her with our eyes popped out "I'm not bisexual stop looking at me like that. I just wanted to experiment okay."

"I wouldn't put that past you." I laughed shaking my

head. We knocked off around 5 leaving Lindani,

Lwandile, Leon and their team off loading the bunk beds. I

was super tired but I knew Lindani would be dead tired and

hungry once he comes back. Despite being exhausted I

cooked up a storm for the man and prepared a bath for

him. We were kind of cohabiting since I spent much time at

his place than mine. When he came back he ate and we

showered together then slept afterwards. We were both so

tired. The following morning Lindani left to handle the

furniture with the guys and I left with the twins to finish finish the interviews. Things were done very quickly that in two weeks we had contacts for our workers, Dr Spencer had already settled in Rosebank, the rehab was already inspected and registered. The only thing left was its official opening which was to happen after new year.

"So is there anything else you need. Are all the utensils that you need here?" I asked Lerato while in the kitchen. She nodded her head with her eyes at the door. She wasn't even

listening to me anymore. I turned and saw

Treet, Siphon, Prince, Lindani and Girly!!!! I screamed in

excitement and ran towards them. My baby was growing

into a beautiful girl. I took her from Lindani's arms

and cried when she kept on calling me mama. She didn't

forget.

"Let me go to the guys. There are a few things we need to

do." Lindani kissed my forehead and excused himself.

"You didn't tell me you were coming." I said.

"Sorry mom we didn't want to ruin the surprise." Siphon
grinned.

"You surprised me guys. Let's go sit over there. Lerato can
you please bring us some cool drinks." I said snapping her
out of the world she was lost in staring at one of the guys.

"You did a good job with this place." Treet commented.

"Thank you." I said. Lerato brought the drinks and I finally
saw who she was staring at all this while. Looks like
someone had an admirer!

"Umm guys this is Lerato my head chef.Lerato this is Treet
my friend and baby daddy,this is Prince my brother,Sipho
my son and Girly my daughter."

"Nice to meet you guys.Nice to meet you Treet."

"Yea likewise." Treet said paying attention to his
phone.Mxm this guyShe just smiled.Sipho asked to be
shown around and she left with him as well as Girly.

I hit his arm."Ouch what's that for."

"You were rude douche.The girl is interested in you. The

least you could have done was smile" I said.

He shrugged."Okay let me break it down to you Jesty lest

you didn't know.My baby mama broke my heart and I'm

not interested in anyone else right now.I just want to focus

on my son.Women are a heartbreak, headache, bp as well

as kwashiorkor so I will pass.Also she looks too young for

me.She will not be able to handle all this honey.So thanks

but no thanks."He winked.

"You know what I give up on you dude.But you really need

to get your game back on baby daddy.You can't die lonely

with blue balls.Jerking off cannot cut it anymore."

He laughed his lungs out."Who said I'm not getting

laid?Get off my case Jesty okay thank you.You know what

I will love you and leave you guys or I will not hear the end

of it."

"We will take about it again.You can't run away forever." He

laughed and walked out.

"You guys are getting along now?" Prince said.

I sighed."Yea we are."

"And Lindani is ok with it?You do realise the dude still have some feelings for you right?"

"He is not gonna act on them." I defended.

"And you?" He furrowed his forehead.

"What about me?"

"You don't have any feelings for Treet?"

I sighed."He is the father of my child.I'm entitled to care about his wellbeing.I always have his best interest at

heart. But as for romantic feelings well I would rather not talk about that. Treet and I have a past Prince."

"Hmm." He sipped on his drink looking at me sternly.

"So Girly? Did Ethan allow you to take his child along?"

"Ethan and the rest of them moved back to Zimbabwe. I

had to force his hand so that he will leave Girly. He knew

what was best for his daughter so he left her in my

care. The poor child can't suffer because the father is a

shithead. I have been living with her ever since. I couldn't

tell you the other time because there was a lot going on."

"Ohh okay that's great. So how is life that side and

everything. How is Mary and Petty?"

"Sis I know you're curious about Majesty innovations. Its

running smoothly. Mary is the Managing Director and she

is doing a good job. And yes it is still Majesty Innovations.

Lindani didn't change the name."

"I'm glad to here that."

41

MAJESTY

Explicit content.

Prince and I talked for a while.I later dropped him off since

he was complaining of a jet lag.He refused to stay with us

at Lindani's.I took him to my place instead with the rest of

the team.They all had to rest.I cooked lunch for them and

after they ate I took my kids to bed and tucked them both

in bed.My cuties were exhausted.I received a test from

Lindani reminding me of our doctor's appointment.I

immediately drove back to the rehab and picked him up

then went to the hospital.

"You're late Mr Zulu." The Indian male doctor said as soon

as we walked in.

"Sorry about that Gupta. We had a few things to take care

of." They did a shoulder bump.

"One of my friends who was a gynaecologist at Netcare

was hijacked and killed. I really should attend a service in

his memory. I'm running late." He said taking out the test

kits. We had gone for the test.

"A gynaecologist?" I asked. This was the same hospital

that Justin worked at.

"Yes Mr Justin Moyo. He was killed. I guess it was a

hijacking that went wrong so he didn't make it." He took

our both our blood samples. I looked at Lindani who looked

calmed and collected. Something in me told me he was

responsible for this. I did not know how to feel about it. Yes

Justin was wrong and evil but for him to be killed like that

it was just brutal. And if Lindani was responsible then that was scary. There was something dark and dangerous about Lindani which I couldn't put my finger on.

"Do you want any family planning injection, pills? You can choose what you want from the range and I will get it done."

"No Doctor its fine. I don't want any family planning." What was the point of a birth control? I was barren. Ok scratch that. Sipho was enough proof that I actually conceived

once upon a time but things had changed and I had
issues. I couldn't give birth anymore. I didn't want to waste
my time by taking pills or having injections. Worse still
suffer the side effects of the birth control for nothing.

"Okay if that is all then you will come and collect your
results tomorrow they will be ready."

"Lindani did you kill Justin?" I asked while turning on the
ignition.

"No I didn't but its good that he is dead. Good riddance." He

said coldly and looked outside. I just sighed and drove us home.

"Babe you good?" Lindani asked while I was cooking dinner for us. Justin's death didn't sit well with me.

I sighed. "I don't know Ntshangase. There is something dangerous about you and I can't seem to put my finger on it. You tell me Zulu. Is there something going on in your life that I need to know? You and I both know there is a side to you that you're not showing me. I need to know everything

about you. I have an unsettling feeling in my stomach

about Justin's death. Did you kill him." I asked.

He sighed and held my waist. "I didn't kill him but I can kill

for you. So stop worrying your pretty head about it. As for

my other dangerous side well you're just imagining

things. There is nothing dangerous about me okay." He

kissed my forehead, my nose and my chin. I ended up

laughing forgetting that I was so tensed up not so long

ago. I finished cooking and dished up for us. When we were

done eating he did the dishes while I talked to Girly and

Sipho over the phone. We had our not so innocent shower

before going to bed. The following morning we went to

collect the results and we were squeaky clean.

"Grandma wants us to celebrate Christmas and new year

at iLembe." Lisa said whilst we were having lunch at

Steers. Everyone frowned to that idea. No one wanted to

spend the festive in the rural.

"Why are you all frowning. What's so bad about iLembe?" I

asked.

"I want to get wasted on Christmas and new year.It cannot

happen with Grandma and Uncle Nkulu.They won't allow

us to drink. If I start my new year sober then I will spend

the rest of my year sober so no no.I don't want to go to

iLembe.Besides there is a bunch of annoying aunts there

who still live in 1955.You will have to wear a long dress

and a head wrap.Only if Aunt Dintle and MaBiyela come

then we will have fun but they are too talkative."Lindy

complained and the guys laughed.

"We can raincheck on Christmas but on new year trust me

sis we are spending it at iLembe." Lindani said. We finished

our lunch with the girls sulking about the whole iLembe

issue.

"I want to go with you to iLembe and introduce you to my

grandmother." Lindani said. I didn't know how to respond

to that or how to feel about it. I had bad experiences with in

-laws. Mai Tawa and Mai Moyo gave me a hard time at Mr

Jaji's funeral. Now there was this Aunt Dintle and MaBiyela that I heard about. From what Lindy said they were loudmouths and no nonsense aunts. The last thing I wanted was to embarrass myself and Lindani. First impression matters too so I had to tread carefully.

"I don't know Lindani. The truth is I'm scared. What if they don't like me. I suck with first impressions and people usually have wrong opinions about me without getting to know me first." I said.

"You will be just fine trust me. Just be yourself and don't try so hard. I know they are going to like you. If they don't then that's their loss and they can go jump off the bridge for all I care. My grandma is the one who is very curious about you and I know she is going to love you." He said.

"If you say so then fine iLembe it is." He was happy and he kissed me all over the face.

"I know this isn't the right time to ask this but Prince once told me that you wanted to do a ceremony for your parents

but you couldn't get in touch with your other relatives."

I looked at him sternly. "So what are you saying or suggesting."

"Umm this is your family matter with Prince so you discuss with him first but if you need help to track them down then I'm your guy." I could tell he wanted to say something else but decided not to. I wondered what his sudden interest about my relatives was all about but I brushed it off.

"Okay I hear you Lindani. After the official opening of Gift foundation I will definitely start with the preparations of the ceremony." I said.

Days passed and like Lindani had said, we managed to dodge going to iLembe on Christmas. A few days before the celebration Lindani and I went to take baby Lily from Delia. Lindani had already started his plans on getting full custody for Lily. I supported him hundred percent. She deserved what was coming for her. Like I had suspected

she actually poisoned Lily herself. I don't know how Lindani got the truth out of her. She was a psycho.

"Enjoy it while you still can bitch." She said as I packed all of Lily's clothes.

I rolled my eyes. "That line is two thousand and late."

She scoffed. "You won't be able to handle him. Do you know what he really does for a living? Do you?"

I gave her a confused look and she laughed. "See I knew you were one of the bitches that would go eventually. He is

not even honest with you. That says a lot about your relationship. So yea girl enjoy it while you can. Soon enough you're going to run for the hills. You don't know the man you think loves you. Uuh shame its very sad."

"You need to get a life Delia. And if you continue behaving like this bitter bitch then I will make sure you will never see your daughter again. By the way I will take good care of her like she is my own. I genuinely love her and that's what a decent mother does. Something you failed to do when you

poisoned her just so you can get Lindani. On second thoughts, you will never see her again. She is not going to miss you either." Although I had my suspicions I didn't allow what Delia said to get to me. She was trying to create a rift between Lindani and I.

We went all out preparing for Christmas. The rest of the Zulus were in iLembe. The twins, Lwandile, Martha and Leon were painting Joburg red. My man, Prince and Siphon

went to buy the Christmas tree and other groceries I had listed for them. I was left with my girls. Lily was an angel. She clicked with Girly.. For a moment I thought of Ethan and Maka's wellbeing but then I brushed it off when I remembered the last day we saw each other. The betrayal and everything else that transpired that day. Urgh!

"Mommy I want some cookies and milk." Girly said.

"Me too mommy." Lily smiled. She was so adorable.

"Okay my girls give me a minute." I placed the turkey in the

oven.

"There we go. Now let's get you guys the cookies." They

both screamed in excitement.

The guys came back and we had fun decorating the place

and wrapping presents. Prince slept over after a lot of

convincing. In the morning Siphos was the one who woke us

all up. Making noise all around the place.

"Lindani please talk to your child." I said covering my head

with a pillow.

"He will not stop let's just wake up." He said.

I frowned.I was really sleepy."First he makes us wear this

funny green and red pyjamas.Now he is waking us up at

6.Hai this is not on."I complained brushing my

teeth.Lindani laughed brushing his besides me.Before we

even showered the boy came with his sisters and they

dragged us downstairs to open the presents.

"Thanks mom." Siphon hugged me.He loved the sneakers

that I bought him.I didn't know what else to get him

because the boy had everything.I bought Lindani a watch and cufflinks for Prince as well as Versace Cologne set for both of them.I bought two princess dresses for my girls and a Sophia the first doll set.Lindani bought me tear drop diamond earrings and Prince bought me a watch.I had a collection already.Lindani bought another pair of expensive sneakers for Sipho and lot of clothes for Girly and Lily.

"Can we go back to sleep now." Prince yawned.

"You can go and sleep whilst I work on breakfast.Merry

Christmas guys."

"Merry Christmas." They all chorused.

"But where are the Santa's reindeers?" Girly asked.

"Those ain't real." Siphon replied.They started arguing about
it.

"I will take you to see Santa Clause later today." Prince
said and the girls were excited.

They all went back to sleep but I couldn't thanks to that

son of mine. I prepared the traditional Christmas day

breakfast of strawberries, Danish pastries and of course

lots of meat for my two Simbas. Later after breakfast Treet

came to pick up Siphos. Girly and Lily wanted to go with

Siphos so he ended up taking the three of them.

The Zulu minions suggested that we celebrate our

Christmas at a township chisanyama and it sounded like a

plan to me. I rocked a blue bumshort which was not so

short though, a simple white T-shirt and white

sandals.Lindani was just Lindani in his all black outfit.

"I feel like ripping that thing apart." He said brushing my thighs.

"Okay Mr Zulu we will do that later.Right now let's go." I

said dragging him outside the bedroom or we would start

making out and be late.Prince was just rocking his jeans

and a simple T-shirt as well.We met with the girls and they

were in a partying spirit already.Martha was there too.I

didn't even give two fucks about her but I caught her twice

drooling at Lindani. I made a mental note to give her a piece of my mind later on. When we arrived all eyes were on us. The Zulu pack was really popular at this place. They were treated like gods. Lindani was in full territorial mode with his hand on my waist all the time and kissing me here and there. The twins, Leon and Prince had already joined others who were dancing. Some of them were even drunk. This early! I ordered a kota as soon as we arrived. I was always curious about it and when I ate it I was blown

away.

"I love it.I could eat this everyday."I said.

We chilled there for the whole day eating and conversing.I

loved the kasi vibes. It was cool.It got even more enjoyable

when it was starting to get dark.Now this was time to get

drunk.The guys came with five six packs for the ladies

while they had their strong stuff vodka,gin and what

not.When I was starting to get tipsy I went with the twins

on the dancefloorand we danced.I was good at it

people. Remember "my bad old days." Clubbing was my life. I noticed no guy danced with me thanks to Lindani so I forced him to the dancefloor. I didn't know big guys could get down like that. I thought buff guys were stiff but no that's a lie. Not all of them are made of cement. Behind that muscle Lindani and Lwandile could kill the vosho bra. They shocked me. I enjoyed that side of Lindani. He was drunk and funny. Prince was the only "sobber" one so he was the one who drove us home. By the grace of God we made it

home alive at 3am. Lindani and I were so wasted that we didn't even change into comfortable clothing. We just threw ourselves on the bed and drifted off to lalaland. We both woke up late the following morning with the mother of all hangovers. Well at least for me because Lindani looked perfectly fine. Good for him. I drank the disgusting concoction that Prince had made and vowed not to ever drink again. Between me and you. That was a lie. I was so going to drink a bottle or so again.

Days passed by and on 30 December we started preparing for our journey to iLembe. I was so not ready to meet the rest of the Zulu clan honestly. I had already packed our clothes and just like Lindy had advised I packed long dashikis, long African print dresses and the head wraps. I packed Lindani's usuals and for the kids as well. Prince was also coming along. We woke up early because it was a six hours drive. I showered and wore one of the dresses which had a white lace detail on the upper body and a

royal blue design skirt that reached just beyond my knees.I

finished the look with a matching royal blue head wrap.All

my three kids were wearing their royal blue and white

outfit that matched mine.It was a last minute thing but I

got Girly and Lily dresses that matched mine.So my girls

were rocking similar dresses.Their big brother was in his

blue jeans,white T-shirt and white sneakers.Call me old

fashioned but matching outfits with my kids was the

"it".Their father was in his usual jeans and a T-shirt.That's

Lindani for you

"You're looking like thee makoti. There is only thing

missing. This." Lindan teased and gave me the beautiful

bracelet that his grandma made for me. I wore it and it

completed the look. We went and picked Lisa and Lindy. I

laughed my lungs out when I saw the two. With their

slender bodies long dresses didn't do it for them. They

were complaining about the head wraps being

uncomfortable. Lwandile, Leon and Martha had already left

the previous day so we hit the road. I slept throughout the journey because I was that tired.

"Wakey wakey we are here." Lindani kissed me all over the face till I woke up. I looked around in confusion. Was this the rural place that the twins were complaining about? I got off the car and admired. There were like six big rondavels that were neatly thatched and painted in grey and black. In the middle there was a single storey but it was huge as it covered much of the space. Far away from the houses

there was a cattle kraal. There were also electricity poles around, three JoJo tanks and a WiFi router! These people were living the life.

My nerves kicked in as we walked to the main house but Lindani held my hand and gave it a squeeze. Some little boys older than Siphos carried our bags. They seemed to get along with my boy because he helped them even though he struggled.

"Mom we will be at the kraal with my friends here don't

look for us okay." He said.

I smiled."Go have fun.And take care of your sisters. "

"Okay mom." He held both Lily and Girly's hands.

Lindani looked at me as were about to enter.Prince and
the twins had long gone inside but I was still very nervous.

"Babe you will be fine." He said for the fifth time."I forgot

to tell you.My grandma is partially blind and because of

old age she might say something odd don't mind it ok.She

was very spiritual in her days.Everything is going to be

okay.Let's go in."He held my hand and we walked
inside.Everyone went quiet and all eyes were on me.I just
prayed for the ground to just swallow me immediately.I
spotted Mr Zulu who was sitting besides another bald
headed man who looked exactly like him.I'm sure they
were were twins.Then there was two other bald men who
looked a little bit younger than Mr Zulu and his "twin" as
well as two teenage boys who were standing besides
them wearing some animal print vests.I spotted MaZulus

both of them.They were sitting on the couch with who I assumed was gogo.Then there were two ladies who were sitting on the reed mate.Definitely Aunt Dintle and aunt MaBiyela.With the way they were looking at me I was very right.I didn't realise I was stuck in one place until Lindani held my waist and walked with me towards this Zulu pack.I knelt down greeting them.I was nervous their silence was scaring the shit out of me not to mention the intimidating looks.I greeted them one by one with the only

Zulu formal line that Lindy had taught me. After I was done

they started whistling, ululating

smiling and saying

something to Lindani that I didn't understand. I looked at

him with confusion and he mouthed. "They like you". That

was a relief. I finally breathed. Lindani did the introductions. I

was right Mr Zulu had a twin and the two ladies on the

reed mat were indeed Aunt Dintle and MaBiyela. The two

teenage boys were their sons whose names I forgot as

soon as they were said.Gogo said something and Aunt

Dintle translated.

"She is asking you to come sit besides her." I nodded and got up from the reed mate and sat besides her.She cupped my face,held my hand and touched my bracelet.She smiled and said something again.MaZulu told me that she was saying I'm beautiful. Whilst she was holding my hand she stopped smiling and then sighed.Then said something again.I looked at MaZulu and she smiled.

"She said. Don't let the circumstances talk you out of believing what God has planned for your life. It may look dead, it may look hopeless, all the experts may tell you that it's impossible but I can tell you firsthand that God has the final say." MaZulu explained and I just nodded but I had no idea why she said that to me. I believed her words though.

"She needs to rest now. She was waiting for you guys all along." MaZulu and MaBiyela took her to the bedroom and Aunt Dintle took me to the kitchen where there was

Martha,the twins,Zara,Thokozile,Leon and Lwandile.I

laughed looking at Leon and Lwandile they were wearing

overalls.They looked exhausted.

"This is not the new year I dreamed off.I will have to find a

way to get out of here." Leon complained and we all

laughed at him.I started helping out on making lunch and

Aunt Dintle was impressed with me.

"Makoti you cooked uphuthu exactly the way mma loves

it.She is going to be happy that someone cooked it like

this. You're a keeper." She said smiling at me. We continued preparing lunch. While we were at it some girl walked in. She was beautiful no lie with everything natural, all slender and light skinned.

"I heard Lindani arrived where is he?" She sounded breathless and was ecstatic about my man's arrival. No scratch that MY MAN'S arrival.

"Ohh Melissa. You're here. Lindani must be in the lounge with the other men. Help us here while you wait for him."

Martha said.I felt like strangling her.

"By the way.This is Lindani's woman/girlfriend/future

wife/the love of his life/his heart/wife to be/the future Mrs

Zulu." Lindy can be dramatic if she wants to be.

"And Lindani's wife to be.This is Melissa.A girl who was

promised a marriage with Lindani by one of our uncles a

long time ago after Ariana's death.She still believes she

has a future with him but you and I both know that its not

gonna happen.She is not a threat."Lisa said too and Aunt

Dintle laughed shaking her head while Melissa sulked

looking down.

"Nice to meet you Melissa." I smiled at her and smirked at

Martha.

"Likewise." She said.

"You people shouldn't slave my woman." Lindani walked in

saving us from the awkward silence.

"Hai suka you big head. We are not slaving her. And you

chose well son. She makes delicious uphuthu. Let's not

mention how good she is in making other dishes as

well. She is a keeper." Aunt Dintle said and Lindani winked

at me.

"Ohh Melissa you're here hy." He said standing besides

me. Melissa replied clearly annoyed with everything that

was happening.

"Let me go and help the boys at the kraal." Lindani

excused himself and left with his brothers. We continued

making lunch. After we were done we served everything in

dishes and went to one of the rondavel we were directed to. There was a lot of noise coming from that rondavel but when we walked in they all went quiet. While I served them water to wash their hands they started whistling and fist bumping with Lindani. We dished out for them and walked out.

"They like you." Lisa said and I smiled. I was so afraid that they wouldn't. But just like Lindani had advised me to do. I was myself and never tried to impress them. It worked out

just fine. We went to the other rondavel to have our lunch there. I must say it felt like a kitchen party of some sort. MaBiyela and Aunt Dintle went on and on about how much the Zulu men needed to be satisfied. They had a sexual hunger for days.

"Be loud in that bedroom mogirl and open those legs wider even though it hurts your spine. Eat him if you must. It doesn't matter if you're a vegetarian eat that meat. At this age I still do things that I'm telling you. That is why my

husband never took a second wife. Trying eating it with

lukewarm water. He will go crazy and call all your clan

names." MaBiyela said. We all laughed expect from Melisa

and Martha.

"Too much infor maa. This is not a kitchen party please. We

already had enough." Lindy laughed. Did she stop? She

went on and on. I must say I picked a thing or two. The day

passed by quickly and at night we prepared dinner then did

the whole procedure again that we did in the afternoon.

Aunt Dintle took us to the bedrooms we were going to sleep in. She was also sleeping with us. Dammit how was I going to sneak out and see Lindani? My girls were sleeping with their grandmother. MaZulu has been taking care of them the whole day. She couldn't get enough of them.

"Can you come out?" Lindani texted.

"I can't. Aunt Dintle locked the door and placed the key under her pillow." I texted back. We continued texting till I fell asleep.

The following morning we woke up early and cleaned up the whole house. This was going to be one hell of a new year I'm telling you. Breakfast wasn't hectic. We just had to make bacon, eggs and they were going to have it with steamed bread.

"Your man is something else. He slaughtered the whole beast himself." Prince said wiping his hands on the overall he was wearing.

I shrugged and smiled. "Well that's my man. And I'm sure

you just stood there and did nothing."

"I helped where I could. Anyway continue with what you

were doing. Let me go back to the kraal. It's fun." He ran

away. While I was going back to the main house I heard

people talking and somehow heard my name so I decided

to eavesdrop.

"He is not even looking my way Martha. His eyes are just

on Mj and no one else."

"Don't feel threatened dear. Mj thinks she is all that but she

is not. You just have to act your part and seduce

him. Lindani is a Zulu man. He will not resist you. Besides

you guys once slept together so use your charms girl."

I walked to them and slapped the living daylights out of

Martha.

I looked at Melissa who was now shaking. "Read my lips

girl. If you dare to look at my man or even breathe the same

air as him I'm going to skin you alive. You better disappear

before I make you." She nodded and ran as fast as her legs

could carry her.

"And as for you bitch.I know you still want my man.And I

don't know what the hell you're trying to achieve here.This

is my last warning to you.Next time I won't repeat

myself.Try any games and you will know me nxaax." I

walked away and went back to the kitchen.

We spent the whole afternoon cooking and talking. I was

only praying that Lindani comes up with a plan so that we

wouldn't get to celebrate our new year there but my man

here was reluctant. He acted like he was enjoying it

there. We didn't even find time for each other and I had

missed him so much. Around 7pm I was starting to lose

hope.

"We are leaving tonight but the kids are staying behind

with mom." I almost jumped on him but I had to remain

collected since there were elders around.

"I could kiss you right now. But will MMA be okay. Girl can

be very difficult sometimes."

"She will manage don't worry. There is a present for you in your suitcase. Wear that for me will you." He winked and left. I went to say my goodbyes to granny and the rest of the crew before going to take a quick shower. After I was done I opened the neatly wrapped box. It was a red long dress with a slit that went to my upper thigh. It had an open back and showed my cleavage perfectly. This Zulu man had good taste. I completed the look with the pair of diamond earrings he gifted me on Christmas as well as

red bottom silver heels.I texted him saying I was ready to
leave.

"Girl you are one lucky bitch.Some of us are stuck here."

Lisa pouted."And girl you look like Valentine."

"Thank you. "Lindy came with my girls and their brother.I

kissed them goodbye.

"Shall we?" He said opening the door for me.He was

wearing a black formal shirt which hugged his muscles

perfectly and formal black pants.He looked hot in

formal. He drove us back to Rosebank and all the way we were singing along to some old skul love songs that he played.

"Where are we going?" I asked looking confused because he wasn't using the way I knew.

"Patience Mrs Zulu patience."

I just nodded and let him be the GPS. We arrived at a huge gate and he punched the pass code on the keypad. It automatically opened. He drove in and all I could see was a

perfect landscape before he parked in front of the most beautiful double storey. He came to my side and opened for him while my mouth was open with surprise. He led me inside without saying a thing. It was empty inside but was huge and beautiful.

"Welcome to your new house future Mrs Zulu." He smiled.

"Ohh thank you so much babe." He carried me upstairs to the roof top. It was decorated with fairy lights, roses and what not. There was a dinner table set up for two. Honestly

I couldn't stomach anything because I was already full with everything that he had prepared. The decorations, the dinner. I only could stomach wine and he also didn't even touch his food. He stood up and came to my side then took my hand without saying a word. His fingers held the back of my head and he stared into my eyes like he was searching for something. He didn't have to say it because I could see it in his eyes that he loved me. He lifted me and carried me to the bedroom, his muscular arms effortlessly

holding me.He dropped me on the bed and his hands went to my dress.This time he didn't rip it.He slowly removed it like he was unwrapping a gift.

"Fuck!"He murmured staring at my naked body.I didn't wear any undergarments on purpose.He removed his shirt and stared right at me while he undid his pants and dropped his briefs next.He crawled to the bed and moved on top of me,perked my lips then went to kiss my tits and then started devouring them again.I hooked my legs

around his waist.I started to grind on him,my folds rubbing against his beautiful,huge cock.Skin to skin with this chocolate man was enough to drive me to the edge.The contact was so sensual and powerful that I moaned louder and climaxed without him necessarily having to be inside of me.Just grinding was enough to drive me crazy.He went on my tender place again and started devouring.When I was close to the edge again he stopped and I growled.

"This time you're coming around my dick."he said with his husky voice.

"Then fuck me already.." I demanded. He chuckled then kissed me.I felt him pressing his thick mushroom head on my entrance. It was tight and a little bit painful fit at first.Gosh I have been abstaining for nearly two years now.He stretched my walls to the maximum but once he sank in perfectly we were like a hand and a glove.He took a moment to appreciate my tightness then started

thrusting slowly but deeply. In thirty seconds I was feeling my orgasm building up. I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip.

"Ohhhh Gaaad....uhhh baby fuuuck!!" I moaned

"Look at me. I want to see you come." He demanded. I

opened my eyes as my intense orgasm was a million

times stronger with that eye contact. He continued fucking

me through my orgasm with an increased pace. I moaned

louder as I felt myself building up again. Within a few

minutes I squirted, spraying all over the place. He smiled

then perked my lips but he never stopped. He continued

thrusting harder, faster and harder.

"Happy new year my love." He clenched his jaws and his

cock pulsed in me. He groaned filling me with his seed.

"Happy new year." I said trying to catch my breath. He hooked his arms behind my knees and brought my legs up to his shoulders. He was hard again like he never climaxed at all. I didn't know how that was possible. I have never seen a man climax then ready to go again immediately.

"Now I'm going to fuck you."

Ohh boy!

42

MAJESTY

Love is all about commitment and there is no commitment without effort.

I didn't need to feel his body against me to know that last night was real. I smiled and licked my lips remembering what he said to me with his husky voice.

"When I'm balls deep I want you to know whose name to shout."

He promised to fuck me and he did. He had his way with

me and I shouted his name like I was in a trance. Well of course I was in a trance, sexual trance. MaBiyela was right. The sexual hunger of Zulu men can surprise you. Lindani proved it to me with the way he handled my body. Hats off to him. No wonder he always said he wanted it to be special. It was worth the wait. We barely slept the previous night. I was still craving for him real bad and he satisfied the cravings in the best way ever. I turned on my side and looked at him. He was sleeping peacefully and I

took the time to admire him. My hands went on his scars. I

wondered again what happened? I imagined the pain he

must have gone through. My man was a survivor and the

scars were the proof. They made him more handsome. My

scarred warrior. I continued admiring him and I did a silent

prayer thanking God for bringing this man into my life.

"I love you too." His deep voice rumbled and it sent

goosebumps all over my body. He really had that effect on

me. He opened his eyes and smiled.

"I never said I love you." I smiled.

"You were staring and admiring this mountain of a

man. That is enough for me to know that you love me."

I laughed. "Cocky much huh. Now let go of me. I want to go

to the bathroom."

He tightened his hold. "But I don't want to let you go. What

should we do about that?"

"Look who is being clingy now." I teased him.

He gave me a cocky grin which made him look even more

sexier."Let me carry you."He was dominant especially in bed but did it in a way that made me feel wanted instead of me feeling like I was being controlled.When I first met him everything he uttered was a command and with time I realised that it was just who he was.He was used to controlling things and taking care of situations.It was supposed to send a red flag for me but instead I felt some sort of comfort and I respected him as my man.I was used to be the one to control and demand things but the

situation had changed now.I was going to surprise him

one of these days though and be the controlling one....in

bed.

"Don't worry I will manage." I said and he let me.He

loosened his grip.I tried to stand but my legs were

weak.They felt like seaweed.I couldn't stand.I ended up

sitting back on the bed.He laughed clearly proud of

himself.

"Yep I fucked you.Well done Lindani.Well done." He

laughed giving himself a pat.

"Not funny." I said fighting back a smile.

"I did a good job. Now you're having a hangover of my

cock." He rolled over on me and I spread my legs

wide, making room for him. His body covered mine and it

felt so right. This was home. Finally. He kissed my forehead

and my nose. I felt him grow.

"Give me a sec. I will be back." He said getting off the bed

with his cock hard. He walked to the door while I admired

his butt.Damn!

After a while he came back and opened my legs

wider.Then started kissing from my toes going to my inner

thighs.I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip as I felt a

tingling sensation on my most tender part.The morning

glory.Ohh laawwd!My inner whore exclaimed and did the

victory dance.I felt his tongue.It was cold and it soothed

the soreness of the previous sessions.I arched my back as

he continued to play with my folds.The coldness made

things more arousing that I ended up moaning his name

louder.He had ice in his mouth and it was soothing.The

floodgates opened again.I squirted.

"Now good morning my messy beautiful woman." He said

kissing me and I responded tasting myself on him.

"Good morning to you too Ntshangase." He deserved to be

called by his clan name after the job well done.He

chuckled and went back to muffing.I might have been a

little bit sore from all the fucking last night but I still

wanted him and he knew it.He came on top of me.He had a proud grin plastered on his face and looked at me with the bedroom eyes.I couldn't get enough of those sexy hazels.They were half closed and red.He looked like he was high on weed.He rubbed my entrance with his dick,slowly smearing both of us with my wetness.Then he slowly entered.I wanted to touch him but he interlocked our fingers instead.I couldn't even complain because I liked the way he commanded me to do things.Not only

between the sheets but in some cases where he would take control. Control and order were two things needed in my life so that I could properly function. Sometimes I needed things mapped out and Lindani was doing a good job. Letting me have my way all the time had consequences so I needed someone to point me to the right path.

I moaned as he thrust with his eyes locked with mine. I

gasped as we connected. It was powerful and something

in me shifted. An invisible bond flowed between us. He

groaned and I moaned as we both moved.

"Ohhh laaawd. That is so good. Yesss baby

ahhhhh.... Lindani yeesss!!" I was that vocal.

"I love you." He sucked on my bottom lip before kissing his

way down to my neck. With every thrust he kept on

breathing heavily and whispering the "I love yous" in my

ears. He wrapped his arms around my back like he

couldn't get close enough as our connection

strengthened. My hands went to his tight ass every time he pulled out. I grabbed tight and brought him back in. My pussy pulsed and my vision went black as I climaxed. He followed right after. The only sound in the room was of us breathing. He stared into my eyes then pulled out. I felt his cum leaking. This time I didn't object to the idea of him carrying me to the bathroom. We bathed together without saying a word to each other. Actions speaks louder than words and being in each other's arms was enough for the

both of us. He carried me back to bed after the water was cold.

"You need to rest. I will sort breakfast so long." He didn't need to tell me twice. The moment my head hit the pillow I drifted off to lalaland again. I really needed the rest because it felt like I ran a marathon. When I woke up he wasn't in the room. I sorted my face and wore his shirt. My knees were no longer that weak but I did have a very funny penguin walk. "The hangover of my cock". His words rang

into my head and I laughed shaking my head. He was right though. I found him in the kitchen moving around. The kitchen and the bedroom were the only places with furniture.

I leaned on the door watching him. "Smells good in here."

He smiled. "I ordered breakfast so I'm warming it up for you. Come sit down." I obliged and he gave me bottled water.

"I'm sure you're dehydrated from all the "flooding." I loved

every part of it."He winked and I flushed.I never squirted in my life.It was my first time experiencing such pleasure.

"I didn't know you're that messy but I love it when you wet my face like that.Before moving in we are going to grace every corner of this house.How does that sound?" He smiled dishing up.

"It sounds nasty but I love the idea."He gave me a plate with a little bit of everything.I really needed the energy.I ate everything while he just sat there and watched me.I called

Sipho and we talked to our kids wishing them a happy new year. We were going to see them later on. We toured around the house. It was beautiful and surprisingly what I always dreamed of. Only that this one was huge. I loved it nonetheless. I was going to hire a professional interior designer to make my dreams come true. Later on we went to his house first for a change of clothes then went to my place thereafter. He knew I didn't want to mess around with him in the same house he messed around with Ariana

so he respected my wishes. We were going back to iLembe

later on after spending some quality time together. You

know what that means right? We didn't really have plans

for the new year other than staying indoors and making

love, gracing the whole place. Don't look at me like that. It

has been a long dry season for the both of us. We needed

the thirst quenched. Around 12 I was drained out and very

much exhausted that I passed out. After an hour or so I

woke up to take a quick shower because we had to

celebrate the rest of the new year with our family so we had to leave. My funny walk was going to sell me out though. Before making my way to the bathroom I noticed a bouquet of white roses. I wonder how he figured out that I preferred white instead of red roses because I didn't tell him. There was a letter and a neatly wrapped box beside it.

Another present! This man was spoiling me rotten. He loved spoiling me and I loved being spoilt.

Dear Majesty.

I want you to know how much you mean to me. I know I don't say much about how I feel and I know how much you try sometimes to figure me out. It's really hard for me to express myself in words. It's really hard for me to explain it to you how prominent you're in my life because no words can ever express how much you mean to me. I prefer action but sometimes words are important too. I have a poem in mind. I will never be able to recite it to you in person. So I wrote it down instead and here it goes.

O my love's like a white, a white rose,

That's newly sprung in June:

O my love's like a melody

That's sweetly played in tune.

So deep in love am I;

And I will love thee still my dear,

Till the seas dry, my dear

And the rocks melt with the sun;

And the sand of life will run.

But I will still love you Majesty.

I've tried haven't I? I'm sure you're smiling and that would

make me very happy. I love you Majesty. I will say it a

thousand times because I mean it. I see a bright future

with you and with God's grace only death will do us apart.

Once again, Happy new year my love.

Yours Lindani.

I smiled wiping my tears and opened the gift. It was a pair

of Saint Laurent red bottom heels. I always wanted

them.They were not easy to find even on the online market

but he made it happen.I wore them and they fit perfectly.I

found him downstairs watching news.I sat on his laps and

gave him a bone crushing hug.

"I love you too and so so much.Why didn't you just become

a poet?Are you sure you chose the right career?"He

chuckled and kissed my nose.We cuddled on the couch for

some time.

"You do realise we have to go back to iLembe right." I

reminded him getting off the couch or the next thing I

would have my legs up his shoulder with him pounding on

me hard and fast.

He sulked."Fine.I'm ready to leave but I can't say the same

about you though.You look like a troll with your hair like

that.Did I tell you babe you look really scary when you

wake up from your beauty sleep.The irony of it.They call it

a beauty sleep but you my sugar you wake up looking like

you escaped from a zombie movie."He teased and I gave

him a middle finger.

"Fuck you Lindani." I laughed.

"I would love that but you and I know we will be very late if

we start with the fucking so my messy sexy thingy why

don't you rush now and take a quick shower before I have

my way with you."

I giggled going back upstairs.He was right.We were going

to be very late had I stayed a minute longer in the same

room with him.After I showered we left for Ocean Basket

first and had our quick lunch there. Then we passed by
tops and bought wine and other spirits for the gang back
in iLembe. Apparently they wanted to get wasted but the
elders were having none of it so that's where we came
through. When we arrived the twins and I managed to
sneak in the alcohol like a bunch of teenagers. It was
funny. I did all I could to hide my funny walk when I went
greet the men. Luckily they were too wasted to
notice. When I went to check on MaZulu and the kids I'm

sure she noticed but just smiled and decided not to say a word about it.

"You're glowing."

"Thank you maa. Did the kids give you a hard time?" I said looking at Girly and Lily who were fast asleep. Siphoh was outside at the kraal with his friends.

"No they didn't my dear. I raised hot headed men like Lindani so I'm good in this department." She said and I smiled. I was sitting on the other corner and she took a

chair and sat opposite me. I could feel her stares. I looked everywhere but her.

"What do you feel about marriage my child? Considering everything that happened, where did that leave you and your concerns about marriage?" She asked. I never had a talk like this before and going back there was just painful for me. I didn't want this talk but I was not going to dodge it forever especially where MaZulu was concerned.

"I know this is hard for you and very painful for you to

revisit the past but I just have to hear your views. I see how serious things are between you and my son."

I sighed. "I'm scared of getting married again maa. I know

Lindani is grown enough and is in this relationship with me

to stay but I'm scared because I know he will want to

settle down sooner or later. I don't want to ruin the love

that we have by marriage. What if we get married and he

starts to show me some sides to him that I never

knew? I'm not painting him with the same brush as Ethan

and I know Lindani loves me very much he had showed me

that so many times in so many ways but at the same time

I can't control my fears. In my subconscious mind I'm

always wondering. What if he wants to settle down and I'm

not ready? What if we get married and he changes? I don't

want to repeat the same mistake I made with Ethan. At the

same time I don't want to be just a girlfriend to Lindani but

I'm afraid maa. I can't help it. The other day he was asking

about my family. I had a feeling that this had something to

do with him wanting to settle down.I got so scared.I didn't know how to handle it."

She smiled.It was contagious that I ended up smiling too."

I understand my dear.Your fears are justified considering everything that you have been through.I suggest you start counselling to get over the trauma of what happened to you when you were married to your ex husband.You were right about Lindani wanting to settle down.He came to me weeks ago and asked me to have this talk with you

because apparently I'm the one who gets to you. And you know him, talking is not really his department. He didn't know how to approach you with this matter without scaring you away. He is ready but he wants you to be ready too so he can make his move. I refused at first to meddle in your affairs and told him to talk to you himself but knowing my son it's very hard for him to express himself in sensitive matters so I came for the rescue. It's good you expressed how you truly feel and I want you to talk to each

other about this matter. Don't rush it take your time and then talk. You will reach an understanding." She sighed. "Anyway Majesty thank you for being in my son's life. I have seen him very happy after a long time. I know it's because of you. He is very lucky to have you. I know he comes with his baggage which at one point you will find too heavy to carry but just know one thing. He loves you and you love him and that's what matters."

She stood up and walked to the door then looked at me

one more time with a smile on her face.

"Gogo was asking about you in the morning. She wanted the uputhu you made for her. I think you might have to cook it because when she wakes up she will ask for it. Ohh and the bath salts will help you with the swelling and the soreness down there. I will talk to Aunt Dintle too. She has some ointments which really helps too." With that said she left me all flushed. I did all I could to hide my funny walk but she noticed. Ohh my gosh.

I went out and asked my boy to check on her sisters while

I made uputhu for gogo.I was alone in the kitchen since

everyone was outside a little bit far from the bedrooms

drinking,having a braai and playing music.I figured they

didn't want to disturb gogo and the kids.While I was at it

Martha walked in with Thokozile and Melissa They had

grown some balls since they had Thokozile with them but I

gave zero fucks shame.They were not going to ruin my

mood even if they tried.They started talking with Thokozile

emphasising how great Melissa and Lindani's relationship

was and how much they made a perfect couple. Pathetic. I

continued hammering my songs and ignoring them. The

last thing I wanted was to start my new year on a bad note

by killing somebody. I felt my anger rising when Martha

mentioned the time Melissa and Lindani slept together like

I wasn't in the room. I counted to hundred, calming myself

down after I remembered that I will never look good in

those orange prison jumpsuits. I couldn't leave my pot

unattended. God knows what these women were capable of. So they went on and on while I concentrated on the pots. Clearly some people didn't learn. I was going to strangle Martha one of these days. I didn't even wanna start with the Melissa bitch because I didn't feel threatened at all. She was in Lindani's past that's it and I knew Martha put her up to it because every time I looked at her she would tremble.

"Babe what are you doing in here." I had goosebumps all

over just by hearing his voice.

"Making uputhu for gogo.I'm almost done.Let me serve it

for her then we will go out to the others and have some

fun."

He nodded and held my waist while I moved around

servng uputhu and amasi for gogo.I don't know if it was

because of the good sex but for some reason we were

more closer and more connected to each other like never

before.He followed me when I went to gogo's bedroom

and one of the guys that was drinking shouted that I had fed him love potion since he was following me like a lost puppy. We just laughed it off. Gogo was very happy and blessed my union with Lindani again and again.

"What were Martha, Melissa and Thoko doing in the kitchen?" He asked

I sighed. "Bragging about how good the sex was between you and Melissa." I walked back to the kitchen and placed the plates in the dishwasher while he was by my side I

guess contemplating about what to say to me and what not to.

"I didn't think it was important that is why I didn't tell you about my history with Melissa. To me she is just some random girl I slept with so it wasn't necessary for me to tell you about my random fuck. If she said something that hurt you I'm sorry and I'm gonna deal with them."

I smiled. "Yes it hurt a little bit but it doesn't matter. I'm not threatened by her. We both have a past we are not proud of

and we are moving on.I had a talk with your mother she mentioned about you coming with a baggage that might be to heavy for me to carry at some point.I know she didn't just mean the women in your past but something else as well.I know this is not the right time to talk about it but once the celebration is over and we are back home.You and I are gonna have to talk.If you weren't ready to be honest with me then this is your time to prepare yourself because you gonna have to tell me the truth,all of it.We

promised no more secrets but I know you're keeping some from me so you will come clean alright babe." I perked his lips which ended up with his tongue down my throat.

"We have many bedrooms for a reason." Aunt Dintle walked in on us. Phew thank God she was drunk. No she was wasted. I just prayed that she forgets what she saw the last thing I wanted was to look like I was being disrespectful in their home. Lindani and I joined the others outside. I didn't touch alcohol because I knew I would go

crazy of which I had to be on my best behavior. When we came back I was introduced to two other aunts whose names I forgot soon after I was told so I had to be really careful. Even though they were drunk they had their eyes on me so I had to keep myself in check. I was chatting with Lindy who was very drunk when I noticed Lindani talking to Lisa. From the look of it they were in a serious conversation and my man looked kinda worried which worried me as well. At one moment I saw Lisa glancing at

me. I knew they were talking about me and wondered what it was that was worrying Lindani so much.

"Everything okay?" I asked Lindani when he came back.

He kissed my forehead. "Yes babe everything is okay. Let's go sit in the car. It's kinda noisy here and we might go for a drive. It's not really that late for a drive." He said.

"Let's go check on the kids first." We went to the bedroom they were in and they were all asleep. Siphiso had passed out too. I guess he was tired from all the playing. MaZulu

was with them and she was plaiting Girly's hair who was even snoring.

"We are going for a drive maa so we came to inform you and check on the kids before leaving." I said.

"You children go have some fun.I know by forcing you to come here in iLembe we ruined your plans so you go have fun and don't worry about the kids I got this.So go for your drive or whatever you guys get up to.We both know you get up to no good." She laughed and we laughed too

walking out. Lindani was extremely worried I could tell and I knew it had something to do with him coming clean. That made me afraid too, was this secret of his big and strong enough to break us apart. God knows what would happen to me if I break up with this man. I just hoped that he was my final destination and the last thing I wanted was to have my heart broken again. I wouldn't survive it.

"Penny for your thoughts?" His voice brought me back to reality.

"They cost a thousand dollars." I smiled.

"I can pay." He smiled and I took a moment admiring his

cute smile. Its like he knew what was on my mind because

he stopped smiling and gave me one of his intimidating

looks.

"Don't you dare say I look cute or I will fuck that mouth of

yours."

"Well in that case you look cute Mr Zulu." I chuckled.

He shook his head smiling as we made our way to his

car."But for real though what's worrying you?"

"You should answer that question Ntshangase.You looked

worried when you were talking to Lisa and even now you're

worried I can feel it.Talk to me Zulu."

He just hugged me and kissed my forehead."I love it when

you're this authoritative but there is no need for you to

worry my love."

"I know you're lying Lindani talk to me.What's wrong?"

He didn't say a thing he just opened the door for me and

gestured for me to get in. Only he knew we were going and throughout the journey he held my hand tightly and he would gently squeeze it here and there. He parked on the side of the road. The place was bushy and quiet. We sat at the backseat.

He took my hand into his. "I don't wanna lose you that is why I'm so afraid. Sometimes I feel like all this is not real and someone is going to wake me up from this beautiful dream. At times I feel like I'm imagining everything and

someone is going to shake me back to reality.I'm just so
afraid of loosing you."He kissed my hand and I leaned on
to his chest listening to his heartbeat.His heart was
pounding very fast.He really was scared and I was scared
too.

"I love you." I didn't care how many times he said it but
every time he said he loved me it was like he was telling
me for the first time.I never got tired of hearing those
words from him.

"I love you too Zulu."

43

LINDANI

White lies won't hurt.

"You should tell her before it's too late. It would be better if

she hears it from the horse's mouth. It will be her choice

either to stay despite knowing everything or not. You guys

are getting serious Scar and if she finds out about who

you really are when she is in too deep then there will be

problems. She is already emotionally involved. She loves

you. Tell her before it's too late." Lisa shook her head

looking at Majesty.

"I don't think I can tell her the truth. She will not handle it

well Lisa. She has been in a abusive marriage and her

mother was killed by her father. Then if she knows this

side to me she will never look at me the same again. She

will only think I'm yet another monster who is set to ruin

her life again. I killed people Lisa and if she gets to know

that truth about me. Do you think she will stay and continue

to love me? Majesty is fragile and the last thing she needs

is the baggage that comes with knowing what I really do
for a living. She can't know I'm a drug lord no." I sighed
looking at my woman who was looking back at us with a
worry look on her face. I loved that woman. I was not going
to destroy what we had by telling her the truth. She was not
going to handle it well.

"I don't think you know what this means Scar. This means
we will be all lying to her. And you will be forced to live a
double life. Already she knows you're hiding something

from her. Sooner or later she will find out on her own. Remember Mj is very clever. Explain it to her why you did what you did. She might be shocked but she will understand. Scar I don't like the idea of you telling her about this when she is already married to you or not telling her at all. She might be even more angrier at you for not telling her when you had the chance. And don't think because you will be married to her she will not leave you. Mj is a one strong woman. She will divorce your ass

and leave. Another man with no baggage will come to her rescue. Take Treet for example. He doesn't have the baggage that you have. He is squeaky clean and he still loves his baby mama. Be honest with her. Let her make the choice either to stay or not to." She shrugged and her words sent shivers down my spine. I was so afraid of losing Majesty.

"Think about what I said. Think deeply about it. Mj deserves to know the truth. She needs to hear it from you." She gave

me a pat on the shoulder and walked away leaving me lost

in my thoughts. Considering what Mj has been through she

was never going to take the issue lightly so I ended up

debating with myself either to tell her or not. I couldn't do it.

"Babe you ok?" I looked at her. She was worried about me. I

was lost in my thoughts thinking about what Lisa said. I

succumbed to the fear of losing her and decided not to

tell her what was worrying me. I couldn't bring myself to tell

her the truth not when she was finally happy. I couldn't do it

to her and wipe that smile off her face. I just couldn't. The thought of her looking at me like I was a monster didn't sit well with me. Yes I was a monster but she brought the good out of me. I had built walls around me and she destroyed them effortlessly. She was my one. I couldn't lose her because of what I did. Yes the truth was going to come out one day but not now. Not when I found her and not when she completely gave herself to me. She loved me and I couldn't get enough of the way she looked at

me. How her eyes sparkled and that beautiful smile
whenever our eyes met. I wanted to see that look on her
face always because it made my heart dance. I didn't want
her to look at me like I was a monster. I didn't want her to
look at me with disgust. It was wrong in so many angles
but I chose to keep the truth to myself.

"I'm fine my heart. I was just imagining us in the next five
years." I lied and I felt really bad that I wasn't coming
clean. But if keeping the secret meant I was protecting her

from hurting then so be it. She was not going to be able to handle the horror that comes with knowing what I did for a living. I didn't want her to worry every time I go out for my deals. If I was going to make it alive or not. I did not want her to stress about that. Most importantly I didn't want her to fear for her life while being with me. Thinking that one day I would lose it and end her life. Telling the truth meant I was going to tell everything including how I got the scars and people I killed. No one in their right senses would want

to share a bed with a murderer despite what

reason. Considering her past experience with men she was

going to run for the hills.

"And what is it that you saw in your imagination." She

arched her eyebrow with a mischievous smile on her face.

I chuckled. "I saw us happy with our little family."

She giggled and that sound just made my heart dance

even more. "You wanna know what I imagined us doing I'm

the next five minutes." She wiggled her eyebrows and bit

her lip mischievously.

"Woman you got no shame." I laughed.

"Well of course I got no shame.I wanna fuck you.Now

adjust the seat." She demanded and that side of her turned

me on.It didn't matter how long I fucked her.She would still

stay soaked only for me.My hands tightened on her lower

back as I pulled her hard into me,kissing her like it was my

last day.Her lips tasted like honey with a sprinkle of

cocaine.Her kisses were addictive than the last.Once I felt

her lips on me my cock was pushed over the edge.I

shoved myself completely inside her.I groaned in

satisfaction when she sat with her legs wide enough and

my dick deep inside her.She pressed her palms against my

hard chest as I guided her movements with my hands

firmly holding her ass.Her lips released a moan and she

rested it against my face looking straight into my eyes.We

were like two animals fucking in the

wild.Groans,moan,screams and growls filled the car.My

dick was deep inside her, sliding through her overwhelming wetness. She was ready for me all the time regardless of the place or the time.

"Ntashangase fuckme...harder..." She moaned loudly. I

pushed her deeper and gave her all my length and

sickness. She grew louder and louder. I had to seal my

mouth on hers to keep her quiet but she continued to

moan against my mouth. We fucked like two animals on

heat. She pulled me tightly when she was finished, her

pussy hugging me so tightly.I was close too.I gave her my
final strong pumps.Five more thrusts,I was finished,
dumping my seed in her already wet pussy.Damn!Sex has
never been so good.She kept her face on my neck for a
few minutes.I slowly pulled my dick out of her and got her
off my laps or I would be hard and fuck her all over
again.She ran her fingers through her hair,her lipstick was
smeared and she had a sheen of sweat on her
forehead.She looked fucked and that was the most

beautiful image ever.

"Gosh woman you're a freak."She just smiled trying to

catch her breathe.It sure felt like we ran a marathon.I took

wipes from her purse and wiped the both of us.

"Now let's get going before they send a search party for

us."She turned on the ignition.On our way back we were

humming along to 2pac's songs.My babe has a horrible

voice but don't tell her I told you that.

Lisa took me to a corner as soon as we arrived asking me if I came clean. When I shook my head saying no she was pissed.

"I can't hurt her like that Lisa. Do you realise she will never look at me the same way ever again? I can't do it. I thought I could but I failed and it's new year for heaven's sake. I can't ruin the year when it just started." I defended.

She chuckled and shook her head. "Don't say I didn't warn you. You and I know how Mj gets when she is angry. And if she

finds out about this from someone else or when you guys
have settled down she is going to be very angry. You know
your woman. She will put a bullet through that thick skull of
yours. Mj is going to skin you alive. Don't say I didn't warn
you." She shook her head and walked away. I went to talk
to mom afterwards. I had asked her to talk to Mj regarding
marriage. I wanted to marry again. Mj was my future. I
wanted to wife her but with her experience with that
bustard Ethan I knew she had her fears and

hesitations. Mom could get to her so I begged her to talk to her on my behalf. She had to be ready. After all marriage is lifetime commitment. I wanted her ready and fearless.

"Give her time my son she is not ready. I know you can't wait to have her as the next MaZulu but she is not ready. She needs some counselling and time to heal. So give her that. When she is ready to be married again you will just know." She gave me a pat on the shoulder and then looked at me with a smile on her face.

"Go easy on the poor girl though. She was trying to hide her funny walk. Don't exhaust her too much ok." I laughed as she walked out. Making love with Majesty was a bomb. I just couldn't get enough. I ended up having a boner without her around. I sighed and went to one of the bedrooms to take a cold shower. I couldn't have her here. I knew she was sore. I didn't want to rip her apart.

As I made my way to the room I bumped into Martha. I immediately put my hands into my pockets hiding my hard

-on but it was rather too late because that's where her eyes first landed. Her drooling on me like that turned me off completely and I went soft. So there was no longer any need of a shower here.

"Can we talk Lindani. You and I..."

I cut in" Martha I know you're up to no good but whatever you're planning its not gonna work. And if I were you I would stop messing around. You have no idea of what I can do to people who mess around with my woman. Don't

force my hand Martha or you will regret it."I walked away leaving her biting her nails.And for her sake I hope she took whatever I said seriously.Just because I respected women it didn't mean I couldn't deal with her.I had people to do the dirty work for me.She had to tread carefully. The only reason why she was still doing whatever she liked its only because she was Lwandile's wife. I could have dealt with her a long time ago.

We spent the rest of the new year at iLembe. I usually didn't like it there as it brought so many memories of my dad. It hurt knowing that my uncles were now starting to make an effort to build a relationship with us because our father was dead. They were feeling guilty. They failed him when he was alive. They isolated him and treated him like he wasn't their blood. Now there were trying to make things right when he was long gone. It hurt but with Mj by my side I endured. I was glad that they welcomed her with

love. She was the reason why I agreed to go to iLembe in the first place. They had to know her. She was scared of not being loved and accepted but the Zulu pack surprised her. They loved her and they told me she was good for me. I made the right choice. Had they not accepted her I was still going to continue loving her like never before. Their opinions about my woman really didn't matter.

When we arrived in Rosebank Mj started her preparations on the official opening of Gift Foundation. I had people who

could handle everything for her but I knew she didn't want me to help. She needed to do this on her own. It made her happy so I let her handle everything as per her wishes while I handled my business on the other hand. Now that I had a woman in the picture I knew my enemies were going to try and use her as leverage but I was prepared. We moved to our new house and I tightened the security. She complained about having too many gardeners and chauffeurs. If only she knew.

"DeLuca wants a meeting with you." Lisa said as soon as I walked into her lab.

"I got the message and I'm going."

"I'm coming with you." There was no use in trying to argue with her because she had already made up her mind. I could use her company too.

Instead of meeting at a neutral location I agreed to meet DeLuca at his place instead. He might have assumed that I wasn't prepared and since I was in his grounds so he

could use me like he wanted to but he was wrong. I never go to a battle without being prepared. Dealing with people like DeLuca was like going for a battle. He was a psychotic crime Lord who always wanted things his way or the high way. I was hot headed and dangerous just as much. I didn't take after Gentleman to be a pussy. I grew in crime so it was in my blood as a so I was ready for this. It was hot as fuck when we met up with DeLuca at his place but the old man was killing a suit. Like the fuck? I didn't even need a

thousand dollar designer suit so that people would know my worth. Who was he trying to intimidate by wearing a black suit with gold chains? I would walk butt naked and people would know my worth.

"Scotch?" He offered when we sat down but I refused so did Blackwidow. We were just following the rules of the game. Never take anything offered by an enemy. DeLuca wasn't really my enemy but we didn't get along either and judging by the sick grin on his face I knew the deal was not

going to end well. I wasn't going to like whatever it was that he wanted to offer. He was a human trafficker, a weapon smuggler and for some psychotic reason he thought he was a god.

"Why am I here?" I asked breaking the tension in the room.

"I will give you a cut if you agree to join me in human trafficking." He said playing with his cigar.

"I'm not doing it. My interest is on drugs. Trafficking is evil."

I protested.

He chuckled."We are one and the same shit Scar.You supply and manufacture drugs for people that ruin their lives.So you ain't no angel.The other guys wants you to join we could make one strong team.We could make some serious money but we need your word for it.We need you to say yes so that we can work in your territories."

"Like you said.You need my word for it.You need me to say yes and I say no.I'm not doing business with you DeLuca.I do drugs and that's where my interest is.You're right I'm

not a saint. I supply what ruins people's lives but you're forgetting that it's one's choice either to do drugs or not to. Even if I stop supplying there is cough syrup and many other medicines that junkies use as drugs. I'm not justifying what I do but I'm using these reasons against human trafficking. You rob people their lives. With you they don't have choices to make and I'm not gonna be part of that shit. I have kids and women in my life that I value. I'm not going to do that shit. So you and your boys you better

not step into my territories. You don't want to start a war with me."

He took a one long drag on his cigar and smiled with smoking coming out of his nostrils."You in my house

Scar.What makes you think that I will let you get away with it?I heard the word on the streets and they were right.The

new bitch is making you weak.It's a pity she is not as

tough as Ariana was.I'm sure she is a weakling and I would

feed on her tears so you choose your battles wisely."He

threatened.Wrong move.

I laughed devilishly. "I agreed to meet at your property not

because I'm cooperative but because I'm fearless.Your

great walls and men will not be able to protect you if you

decide to turn on me.Just one word all of them will be on

the ground right now.So you choose your battles

wisely.You better not find comfort on the words you hear

from the street.I have a woman yes and she is my strength

not my weakness.I don't have to hide her from the world

because I know I can protect her. Vultures like you shouldn't even breathe the same air as her or I will kill you. If you thought you were going to use her as leverage then think twice. I ain't the one to hide a pregnant bitch at an island now am I." I smirked at him and he looked horrified. I knew what I was dealing with so I came fully prepared.

Lisa smiled and took out her tablet. "As we speak she is reading a novel wearing a red bikini. Her baby bump is beautiful and she is beautiful too. I pray that your son takes

her genes. We wouldn't want the baby to have your nose

now do we? How far is she 7 months?"

DeLuca shifted uncomfortably. "How did you find out about

her?"

Blackwidow took his cigar and pressed it on his

hand

burning him. I remained calm looking at him

clenching his jaws in pain. "His name is Scar old man. He

knows everything. Gentleman taught him well."

I knew his men couldn't shoot us or that would start a war they would spend the rest of their lives fighting. Lisa had disrespected him in front of his men but still he couldn't do anything to us.

"And that is for calling my woman a bitch. Send the message on the street on my behalf. No one messes with me and what's mine. Let's go Blackwidow." I rose to my feet. He followed as Lisa and I went to our car parked outside, all tinted and bulletproof. Before going inside my

car I looked at him.

"I'm taking all your territories in Capetown. Tell your dogs

to leave as soon as yesterday. It was nice doing business

with you DeLuca." I took out my gun and pulled the

trigger. The bullet missed his head but went to the

shoulder of the man who was standing next to him.

"Ouch. Next time it will go through your forehead. Don't ever

think of crossing me again." When Lisa drove off I

immediately called checking on my queen, our prince and

princesses.They were perfectly fine.Of course they were

fine.They were well protected.

"I will see you when I get back." I said.

"Please hurry I'm horny." She said and I laughed before

dropping the call.

"So you still not telling her.Its been two weeks since we

got back from iLembe.You still hiding this from her." Lisa

shouted.

"Its fucked up Lisa.I can't introduce her to this world of

mine. I can't do it. She is better off without knowing." I

shouted back.

She shook her head and continued driving. When we

arrived I found my heart with Lindy, Zara and the chef from

Gift foundation. Probably discussing about the official

opening. She was so lost in the conversation that she didn't

hear me coming in until I stood besides her.

MAJESTY

Everything falling into place. Finally!!!

"The guest list is sorted. We will have a barrage of VIPs!"

Lerato exclaimed. She was excited about this. I had decided

to use her help too. She wanted to help and she was really

good too at it. We had already tasted the sample dishes

she had prepared for the big day and I must say Zara was

right she really was good in what she did. She even came

with brilliant ideas that I took into consideration. Instead of

just making foreign dishes she was also going to prepare

some African dishes to give the whole occasion an African

vibe too. That would also allow the guest to choose from a variety. I had a feeling the launch was going to turn out just fine.

"Yea that is sorted but we need some photographers and good journalist too. Who will write good things about our Queen here." Lindy said.

"I'm in PR so I have contacts of editors, photographers and celebrities so you just relax and let me handle that part."

Zara said and I smiled feeling so happy about how

everything was turning out. I knew Lindani could get me people to do everything for me while I just sit back and relax but I wanted to do this on my own. I wanted to experience the happiness that comes with it and he let me. MaZulu had offered to handle the decorations. She knew people who could do the job. I met up with them and I was impressed. I told them my ideas of how I wanted the whole thing to turn out. The following day they showed me the samples and I was blown away. The official opening

was going to start with a mass service. MaZulu had

already spoken to the priest on my behalf. He agreed on

holding the church service for me. Free of charge.

"So what is left?" I asked looking at my paper. Most of the

boxes were ticked. Catering, decor, guest list etc.

"Well Leon and Prince said they both want to be the MCs

so that box is ticked too. Mary and Petty are going to

handle make-up artist and hair stylist on their expense so

that is sorted too. Your man said he is going to handle

what you and your kids are going to wear, that is

sorted. The only thing left is for you to prepare your

speech." Lindy said.

"We are in a partnership Lindy so you will do the speech. I

can't have the spotlight all to myself." I said and she

jumped in excitement. We all laughed she was really happy

and ended up acting like a kid given some candy.

I felt a heavy presence besides me and his cologne filled

the room. I didn't have to turn to confirm it was my man. I

smiled and jumped on him, hugging him for dear life. I had already missed him.

"I missed you." We shared a brief kiss and the girls complained telling us to get a room.

"You're in our house." I laughed rolling my eyes at them.

We excused ourselves and went upstairs leaving the girls in the kitchen raiding my fridge. The kids were outside playing in the sand box. The three of them had grown so close that I didn't know how to feel about it. I was worried

because I wanted to adopt Girly legally but I didn't know how to go about it. It meant I had to involve Ethan and I wasn't ready to meet that villain of my life. I wasn't ready to meet Maka too. After everything that happened I wasn't ready even though I was in a better space now with a man who loved me to the moon and back. Hell I didn't even know where my relationship with Maka stands. Was she still my sister? No scratch that did she still want to be my sister or vice versa? We were of the same blood but

strangers now and it was sad. A part of me wished Maka was there to be celebrate with me on my big day but another part of me was still hurt by the betrayal so I pushed the thoughts at the back of my head. She chose them over me. After checking on the kids we rushed to our bedroom for a quickie. Lindani handled my body the way no one has ever had so I couldn't get enough.

I moaned as he pushed himself inside of me. He had me pinned against the wall with my legs wrapped around his

waist. Don't look at me like that. The girls were downstairs and we were in our soundproofed bedroom. What was supposed to be a quickie turned out to be a round.

After our session I wiped myself and changed my dress. He fixed himself too and we both went downstairs.

"You sure took your time." Lindy laughed and shook her head.

"We were discussing something important about the launch. And you guys weren't you supposed to like leave

since the meeting is over?" I laughed and they called me a sneaky little bitch who was trying to send her friends away so that she can have her way with her man.

"Lerato you look flushed what's wrong." I asked following her eyes. Treet, Tyrone and Lindani were talking in the lounge.

"Treet over here." I called out and Lerato shifted uncomfortably probably self-conscious about what she was wearing and if she looked okay. Cute. Treet walked to the

kitchen smiling but when his eyes landed on Lerato he
frowned and gave me a look.

I gave him a hug."Please be nice."He sighed and said a
simple hi to Lerato,sitting besides her.She blushed and
said hello in response.

"Where is the boy?" Treet asked clearly not affected by
Lerato's presence as she was.I was not about to give up
anyway.Please strangle me for playing matchmaker to my
baby daddy and friend.I was just looking out for him.He

needed to move on and I had a feeling that Lerato was going to make him happy. Only that the man was too stubborn to give a damn about her.

"Umm he is outside playing at the sand box with Girly. Lerato you can go show him." I winked at Treet before he could protest. He just shook his head and followed Lerato who was leading the way.

"What are you up to?" Tyrone's voice startled me. I didn't even realize he was in the room until he spoke. I looked at

the lounge and Lindani was arguing with the twins and

Zara over a remote or something. Those guys sometimes

didn't get along. They acted like kids.

"Hey Tyrone. If you're asking what I'm up to right now then

you can see for yourself. I'm up to nothing." I shrugged.

He sighed and sat down. "I mean Treet and Lerato. What

are you doing Majesty?"

I gave him an innocent look. "I'm not doing anything TyJ."

He shook his head. "Treet is not over you Majesty and he is

struggling. And just because he loves you he is going to string that girl along just to make you happy. Don't try to play matchmaker there because its a recipe for disaster. It would be unfair to hurt that innocent girl so don't try to push him. We both know he will end up going out with her so that you will be happy. Stop whatever you're doing before more people get hurt."

"He just has feelings for me and it will only take a woman like Lerato to make him realize that he can easily forget

about me. I know him TyJ. You're his twin but I know him too. He is just so stubborn and that tough look he is putting on it's just so that he can push Lerato away. Ask your twinny why he can't just tell Lerato to back off once and for all. The other time he came here he tolerated her. And why is that? I will tell you why TyJ. It's because your brother is starting to warm up to Lerato. And I'm watching you too. I saw you checking out Lindy."

He chomped on his saliva and I laughed at him.

Gotcha!

44

TREET

A new start.

"What was that about?What's with you trying to push

Lerato down my throat" I glared at her feeling my anger

building up.

She didn't seem fazed by my fury.Instead she giggled

throwing her head back."You should look at yourself right

now.You look furious Treet.Anyway I'm just looking out for

you stop being so angry baby daddy."

Shaking my head I realized she wasn't aware of the pain she was putting me through."Majesty you don't get it do you?!This is not funny."I snapped.She stopped smiling and moved backwards in a protective stance.

"I'm sorry I didn't mean to shout but stop whatever you're doing Majesty.I get it you're afraid that I might come and try to mess things for you and Lindani hence you want to tie me up to someone else but..."

"That is not true Treet and you know it.I'm just looking out

for you. I thought..."

I shook my head causing her to stop talking. "You thought

I would come begging you to take me beg and you decided

to play the match maker. Majesty understand that even

though I still have feelings for you I'm not going to stoop

low and try to ruin your relationship with Lindani. I long

accepted that I will never be with you but stop meddling in

my affairs. You only interfere where Siphos is concerned. As

for my love life stay faraway from it understand. Don't try to

force me and Lerato okay. If you are afraid that I might ruin things for you and Lindani then don't be because clearly you're wasting you energy."

She shook her head with tears glistening in her eyes."It wasn't about that Treet.Honestly I thought maybe I was doing a good thing for you two.I didn't know it appeared the other way to you and I'm sorry I never meant to..."

I interjected. "Yes you should be sorry.If I want to go out with someone I will do so myself.I don't need my baby

mama to play tricks for me.I know exactly what to say to
get a woman to agree going out with me.I'm dealing with
my broken heart here Majesty and I'm healing so please I
don't need your interference.Stop with this nonsense once
and for all.Just because you jumped to the next guy so
easily it doesn't mean I will have to do the same.Things
just don't happen at the snap of your fingers Majesty.This
is my life and I run it.Not you.Some of us give ourselves
time to heal.I don't want to have this conversation with you

ever again.You're just my baby mama.Stay in your fucking lane."

She quickly wiped the tears that had coursed down her cheeks.It hurt seeing her cry because of what I said but I had to tell her.It was for the goodness of everyone."Wow Treet.I'm sorry.Can I have my son now.You said what you wanted to say and I heard you."

I walked to Gift's room and he was done finishing his backpack."Let's go champ.Mommy is waiting."I took the

backpack and he ran downstairs. I kissed my son goodbye

and they walked to the door.

She turned and looked at me. "By the way you and your

brother are invited to the launch of Gift foundation. That is

the reason why I came here. I wanted to personally invite

you. You both can bring your plus ones." She walked away

before I could even reply.

"That was harsh bro" Tyrone walked in holding two

glasses with whisky.

"What was harsh?"

"You're seriously asking me that? Yea I'm the one who advised you to tell her how you truly feel about this Lerato issue but you didn't have to be so harsh. In as much as it might be true that she moved on so quickly you didn't have to rub it in like that. It was so uncalled for. And you were even half shouting. What was that for? I understand Majesty crossed the line but her heart was in the right place. She had pure intentions. You didn't have to go all

Gaga on her. You should apologize for the way you handled this issue. The poor woman was even afraid of you."

I clenched my jaws and when the whiskey burnt my throat. "I will apologize but not now. She probably doesn't even want to see me. You know bro a part of me wished that when I find someone else or when I show interest in other women Majesty would be jealous. I wished that would happen so as to feed my ego a little bit but instead Majesty is the one trying to force someone into my

life.Maybe that is why I was furious and now I'm feeling
bad for shouting at her."

Tyrone chuckled."I guess she is really into the big scarred
guy hey."

"Yea I'm learning to accept that reality but there is
something about Lindani that I can't seem to put my finger
on.Something dark and dangerous.The guy only smiles
when Majesty is around but when she is not he has this
intimidating and dangerous look on his face.The scars and

tattoos don't work in his favour either. His gaze possess something lethal."

"Yea whenever he is around the hair at the back of my neck stands. He is dangerous and he gives me a crimelord kinda vibe. Don't you also find it weird that the Justin guy was killed just after Majesty mentioned him. Anyway it's none of our business. Majesty loves him and it's clear he loves her too. He loves your son as well. So let's stay out of their business. If he is really a dangerous man then the last

thing we want is being at his wrong side"

"What if she is not safe and my son?" I asked.

Tyrone shook his head."I think the guy has proved himself

so many times that he really loves Majesty.There is no

need for you to worry.As for your son.You know very well

that he loves Gift like his own so don't stress.I think

Majesty and Gift make him a different man.So please bro

don't do anything stupid.Let's just stay out of their

business for everyone's sake."

I nodded."You're right let's stay out of their business. But I fear for you though.I don't think Lindani is gonna like the fact that you're going out with his sister.He is going to murder you I'm telling you."

He swallowed deeply and I laughed at his ass."That is why we decided to keep things on the down low for a while.

And I really need Majesty on my side but with your recent behavior she might add fuel to the fire just to spite me when that big guy finds out.My blood will be on your

hands."

I laughed throwing my hands in the air."Leave me out of it.I'm not the one chasing after Lindy.And her twin sister is going to drag you by the balls.She is the man that one."He clicked his tongue and switched the TV on.I continued laughing at him.My poor twin.He fell for the wrong girl.Anyway we ended up watching soccer together and while we were at it the doorbell rang.I looked at Tyrone with my forehead furrowed and he had the same

expression.

"Expecting someone?" I asked but he shook his head no. I

attended to the person ringing the bell only to find Lerato

standing with a smile on her face as always. I sighed in

frustration this girl didn't read between the lines nor did

she give up. I had a lot going on in my life and the last thing

I needed was a woman. I had a lot to deal with starting

from getting used to the fact that I was a Khumalo. I was

still getting used to my new found family and I had to deal

with my "dad" as well. The family secret left him a broken man and he needed us while me and my twin needed our family. Then I was dealing with my heartbreak as well as my feelings for Majesty. That was the hardest thing to do especially after finding out that our son was alive. I still had a lot to learn as a father. So being in the dating game back again didn't fit in the confusing equation called my life.

"Lerato what can I do for you?" I asked leaning on the door. She was an attractive young lady. Not really my type

but she was very beautiful and looked innocent. All tall, slender and light skinned. Whenever she smiled her brown eyes sparkled and you couldn't miss the dimple on her left cheek. At this moment her eyes were sparkling while she was staring at me nervously. She looked more prettier than the previous week that I have seen her. Or is it that the baby blue dress she was wearing complemented her light skin very. Well I wouldn't know. Snap out of it. My inner voice shouted. I cleared my throat when I realised my

stare was making her uncomfortable.

"You can come in." I said paving way for her but she shook

her head and I arched my eyebrow in confusion.

"Ohh emm.I'm not coming in.I just came to drop this off."

She said giving me a plastic bag with lunch

boxes."Majesty and I talked.I realised that maybe I

shouldn't have acted the way I did the past days,trying to

get you to notice me and all.Its my apology offering for

making you uncomfortable or whatever it is that I was

doing. I'm not like that and I have no idea why I acted out of character. I shouldn't have and I'm very sorry. So enjoy the meal and I can taste it for you if you think that it's poisoned or something."

For some reason I felt really bad. She didn't even make me uncomfortable because we rarely spoke or anything. I always brushed her off whenever she tried to start a conversation and she never pushed. If anything maybe I was the one who made her uncomfortable.

"No umm you can come in and we enjoy this meal

together with my brother. That is if you're not rushing

somewhere."

She looked shocked that I had invited her into my house or

even say more than three sentences to her. All I ever did

was to brush her off and sometimes I simply ignored

her. Which now I realized was wrong.

She smiled and played with her fingers. "Ohh umm

okay." She slowly walked inside and I couldn't stop myself

from looking at those yellow beautiful long legs.Snap out

of it Treet.What's wrong with you?

"Your place is beautiful." She said and I just smiled

following her to the lounge.She greeted Tyrone who briefly

hugged her and asked to be excused.A few minutes later

he came back looking all fresh and fine.

"I'm going for a date.I'm sorry Lee I can't stay for your

delicious food." He gave me a pat and walked out.Now the

atmosphere was awkward. When was the last time I had a

woman in my house?

"Let's go to the kitchen." I said and she just smiled

following me. After warming up the food she dished for the

both of us roasted fish, roasted potatoes, mushroom

sauce and steamed veggies that she had prepared. I was

already salivating while inhaling the delicious smell. We ate

in comfortable silence and I must say Majesty made the

right choice by hiring her. She really knew how to cook. For

desert we had a chocolate cake.

"That was delicious." I said while she washed the dishes

"Thank you Treet." Okay she wasn't much of a talker and

the silence was comfortable anyway so I kept quiet while

she continued doing her dishes.

"I guess I will see you around hey." She said standing on

the doorway looking all shy. My gosh this was going to be

so difficult.

I chuckled and walked slowly towards her. I couldn't miss

the shyness written all over her face. Her brown eyes were

sparkling. I held her hand and squeezed it gently. "My

name is Treet, Treet Jackson/Khumalo. What should I call

this pretty lady."

She giggled. "Lerato Dlamini."

"Pretty name for a pretty chef. I wouldn't mind eating your

food everyday. You're really good at cooking Miss

Dlamini. Maybe I could use a chef for a friend. What do you

think?"

"That's a good idea. Friends it is then." She smiled.

I winked."Friends.Let me walk you to your car

chommie.That's how you say it right."

She giggled."You said it right.Anyway I didn't come with a

car.I will just catch a taxi so I should really get going."

"A taxi?You came here with a taxi?" I asked and she

nodded her head.It was horrible at the taxi ranks and I

wasn't about to let her travel with a taxi.I offered to drive

her home.At first she refused but with my persistence she

ended up giving in.She lived in Alex.I parked in front of a

four roomed house.

"So this is me.Thank you for driving me."She said when I

opened the door for her.I couldn't help but frown.Not at her

but at the conditions of the place she called home.It

wasn't safe around here and there was some druggies

who were sitting around passing some remarks.Even

though I couldn't hear what they were saying I knew it

wasn't anything good.Not so far from us there were some

people cheering to what looked like a fight.

"This place is not safe especially for someone like you." I

said

"This is my home Treet. I grew up here all my life. Don't

worry about it. I'm used to it. It's nothing." I wanted to argue

with her or maybe convince to take her to one of the

apartments that the Khumalo's owned which were now

under me and Tyrone but I didn't want to push too hard

and end up pushing her away.

"Ok fine. Take care."

"You too." She said walking inside. Sighing I drove off.

Maybe I shouldn't have gone all Gaga on Majesty after

all. On my way back home I tried Majesty's phone but when

she didn't pick up for the first time I didn't call again. I was

too harsh on her she needed some time. I received a call

from Monica when I arrived home. I was still handling the

Jackson business

"dad" didn't want me to resign so I

handled it from SA and sometimes I would have to fly to

USA.It worked like that.

"Thank you for handling the meeting very well.So this means I will have to fly there next week for this project."

"Yes sir I will have everything arranged for you."Monica said and I dropped the call.

MAKANAKA

Regret in your tears when you taste them.

"You have no idea what you have done to your future

Makanaka.You have no idea." Ma

jesty's voice echoed in

my ears again and again till I couldn't take it anymore.I

wiped the tears off my face but they continuously coursed

down.She was right.I had no idea that I was ruining my

own future.All I could do now was to regret in my

tears.Latisha cried in her sleep.She had wet her diapers

and it was making her uncomfortable.I dragged my painful

body with a diaper and a warm wet towel.I couldn't stop

my tears when I saw how cracked my baby girl's butt was

because we couldn't afford any baby powder. I couldn't

give her the best life that she deserved.

"Vaseline will have to do my girl." I said shushing her back

to sleep. After a while she was sucking her thumb fast

asleep. I carefully placed her back on the bed and walked

out to check on the other "baby". She was already crying

too waiting for a change. Walking into the room it smelled

of poop, urine and vomit. I went to the bathroom to take

some domestos as well as a bucket full of water and bath

foam.

"Maa you should have called out than just soiling the bed

like this again." I knew it was a waste of time telling her to

call out because she couldn't. Just a few months after we

came back to Zimbabwe she suffered a stroke out of

nowhere. We couldn't afford her medical bills. Her

medication was taking a financial strain on Ethan and

I. Already we were struggling and her health wasn't making

things easier for us. After she was discharged I had to

mother her. I never dreamed that one day I would be in this situation. Had someone told me that I was going to wipe poop from a grown woman's butt I was going to laugh at their face but here I was. Two years of suffering like this. We couldn't afford a nurse so I had to do the job I didn't it have much of a choice anymore.

I felt like puking while wiping her folds but I was already getting used to it. After bathing her and fixing her adult diaper I changed the bed sheets and pillow cases that she

had vomited on. Once upon a time I used to have everything done for me. Majesty made sure I had everything and I didn't have to lift a finger. Now this was my karma. After treating her so badly everything just changed in a blink. One moment I was living in a luxurious double storey but the next I was living in an five bedroom house without even a maid to my service. Ethan lost everything when we least expected it. All the money in his bank accounts was gone just like that. He lost his company,

his house and everything else valuable except for this

house that we were now living in.

After I was done I had to prepare some soft porridge for

his mother to eat as well as some pap for Latisha to eat

once she wakes up. I used the remaining of the maize meal

to prepare the meal for them. I fed Ethan's mother first.

When my baby woke up I fed her the pap and sugar since

there was nothing else I could give her to eat the pap

with. She didn't complain. Instead she ate and drank some

water. She went back to sleep again. Strapping her on my back I went to take the money that I had kept in my pillow so that I could buy maize meal but I didn't find it.

"Ohh not again Ethan. Not again." I cried out holding my head. Speaking of the devil. He walked in zigzagging holding a bottle of beer. He looked at me and frowned. I knew what was coming next so I immediately ran off to the other room. I locked myself with my baby and stayed there for a while. After I was sure he was asleep. I walked

out.Indeed he had passed out on the couch that has seen better days.I sighed feeling tears threatening to come out.I brought this on myself.I had no one else to blame but myself.

Ethan was what I always wanted in a man.So as a young horny teenager I started to imagine how my life would be with him in the future.I would fantasize a lot about us and in my fantasy we were the best couple ever.I can safely say I became obsessed. Driven by lust and obsession I

continuously threw myself at him knowing very well that he wanted my sister. Another reason why I started hating Majesty. Which I regret now. I continued coming at him very hard until he gave in and we slept together. I thought him taking my virginity would mean something to him and we would start something beautiful together but he simply told me that it was a mistake and apologized for it. I lied about being on a birth control so as to use a baby to trap him. At first the plan failed as he went ahead and married

Majesty despite him knowing that I was carrying his seed.I

loathed my sister for something she was not part of.I used

every reason I could find to hate her when she was

innocent in all of this.She was oblivious to what was

happening right under her nose.Using a baby as an excuse

I started pressurizing Ethan and threatening till I got what I

wanted.I bit more than I could chew as far as he was

concerned.

"I need something to eat.Cook pap I will eat it with my

biltong." Ethan's voice startled me out of my thoughts and

I moved backward in a protective stance. When did he even

wake up?

"The money you used for your beer and biltong was meant

for the maize meal. And that was the last that I had. Ethan

you're busy wasting money on beer knowing very well that

we highly need it for your mother, your child and all other

expenses. My child can't sleep on an empty stomach

because you chose to be a drunkard." I blurted out before I

could even stop myself. I felt a hot sensation on my
cheek. He slapped me. I knew it wouldn't end there but
thanks to Latisha who woke up crying probably because of
the slap that echoed, he didn't go any further. Foolishly I
had turned a blind eye and deaf ears to my sister's pleas
because I was blinded by hatred. I was stupid to think that
Ethan was not going to raise his hand at me since I was
going to give him what my sister had failed to give him but
at the hands of this man I miscarried twice after giving

birth to Latisha. He was abusive. Sometimes I would take my phone and try to dial Prince's number but he made it clear that I was dead to him. Majesty was a no go area too. With our last encounter and all the mean words I said to her she was never going to forgive me. She was no longer in touch anyway. I guess she moved to another country.

"I told you to sell your clothes and you didn't. Where do you expect me to find money when I'm jobless." He said.

"Jobless?!Ethan weren't you driving taxis for Mr

Banda.What happened?When did you even lost the job and

why?" As if drinking and wasting money wasn't enough

now he even lost his job.

"Don't you dare question me you understand. How dare

you?I'm not your child.I lost everything because of you.I

lost Majesty and my child is being taken care of by Prince

because I cannot provide for her because of

you.Everything that is happening is because of you." He

shouted.

"Don't you dare turn this around on me Ethan. We are both responsible for what is happening here. And you're worsening the situation for us here. I sold all the clothes that I had to provide for us but what do you do? You steal the money and go down yourself in alcohol. What about your mother and your child. This child, our child? You stole the money that I was supposed to use to buy the groceries so now what?"

"Open your legs or something. After all that's what you're good at. Make a plan. I'm hungry." He shouted and walked away with no care in the world. I had no choice than to go and ask for some money from our neighbors. They felt pity for me and gave me some notes which could last us for some months. Without thinking twice I walked to the nearby grocery shop and bought all the necessities that we needed including some fancy stuff for Latisha. I carried the load on my head and walked home. I made sure to hid

the remaining notes. But my worry now was how I was going to repay them. I was jobless but I had to make a plan.

After feeding his mother she puked again. What a waste. I cleaned up as she continued crying and drooling. This was a mess and there was nothing we could do. Now that Ethan had lost his job we had no money to take her to the hospital.

"God is watching." MaZulu's voice echoed in my ears again

and I looked at Ethan's mother. Was this her punishment

for treating my sister so badly? If so then this was the

worst punishment ever. I walked out leaving her crying. I

had to attend to my baby. After I was done feeding her I put

her to sleep and went to take a bath.

"Get on the bed." He demanded and I winced in pain before

he even touched me. I had bruises all over my body. Some

were old and some were new and very painful. I won't even

mention how sore I was.

"Ethan please." I pleaded but it fell on deaf ears as he pushed me on the bed and shoved himself inside of me. I was so dry like a desert but he didn't give a damn. What was important was him pleasing himself and that's it? He had his way with me. I thought about all the time Majesty would cry and beg for me to at least help her clean her wounds but I didn't. I wish I did. He groaned and got off me after he was satisfied. I limped to the bathroom to wipe myself but before I could get there I felt a tight grab on my

hair.

"I'm not done with you." He growled like a possessed beast.

"Please Ethan not anymore. I can't take it anymore please."

"How dare you say no to me." He punched me in the

stomach and I flinched in pain. Pushing me on the bed

again he roughly opened my legs. I closed my eyes and

tears fell as I prayed for it to just go away. But one way or

the other I had to accept that this was now my reality. Had

I made the right choice I could have been in a different

situation but foolish me forgot that blood is thicker than

water.I chose the wrong side.

My sister was right after all.I didn't know that I had ruined

my future.

If only.

45

TREET

A new start.

"What was that about?What's with you trying to push

Lerato down my throat" I glared at her feeling my anger

building up.

She didn't seem fazed by my fury.Instead she giggled

throwing her head back."You should look at yourself right

now.You look furious Treet.Anyway I'm just looking out for

you stop being so angry baby daddy."

Shaking my head I realized she wasn't aware of the pain she was putting me through."Majesty you don't get it do you?!This is not funny."I snapped.She stopped smiling and moved backwards in a protective stance.

"I'm sorry I didn't mean to shout but stop whatever you're doing Majesty.I get it you're afraid that I might come and try to mess things for you and Lindani hence you want to tie me up to someone else but..."

"That is not true Treet and you know it.I'm just looking out

for you. I thought..."

I shook my head causing her to stop talking. "You thought

I would come begging you to take me beg and you decided

to play the match maker. Majesty understand that even

though I still have feelings for you I'm not going to stoop

low and try to ruin your relationship with Lindani. I long

accepted that I will never be with you but stop meddling in

my affairs. You only interfere where Sipho is concerned. As

for my love life stay faraway from it understand. Don't try to

force me and Lerato okay. If you are afraid that I might ruin things for you and Lindani then don't be because clearly you're wasting your energy."

She shook her head with tears glistening in her eyes."It wasn't about that Treet.Honestly I thought maybe I was doing a good thing for you two.I didn't know it appeared the other way to you and I'm sorry I never meant to..."

I interjected. "Yes you should be sorry.If I want to go out with someone I will do so myself.I don't need my baby

mama to play tricks for me.I know exactly what to say to
get a woman to agree going out with me.I'm dealing with
my broken heart here Majesty and I'm healing so please I
don't need your interference.Stop with this nonsense once
and for all.Just because you jumped to the next guy so
easily it doesn't mean I will have to do the same.Things
just don't happen at the snap of your fingers Majesty.This
is my life and I run it.Not you.Some of us give ourselves
time to heal.I don't want to have this conversation with you

ever again.You're just my baby mama.Stay in your fucking lane."

She quickly wiped the tears that had coursed down her cheeks.It hurt seeing her cry because of what I said but I had to tell her.It was for the goodness of everyone."Wow Treet.I'm sorry.Can I have my son now.You said what you wanted to say and I heard you."

I walked to Gift's room and he was done finishing his backpack."Let's go champ.Mommy is waiting."I took the

backpack and he ran downstairs.I kissed my son goodbye

and they walked to the door.

She turned and looked at me."By the way you and your

brother are invited to the launch of Gift foundation. That is

the reason why I came here.I wanted to personally invite

you.You both can bring your plus ones."She walked away

before I could even reply.

"That was harsh bro" Tyrone walked in holding two

glasses with whisky.

"What was harsh?"

"You're seriously asking me that? Yea I'm the one who

advised you to tell her how you truly feel about this Lerato

issue but you didn't have to be so harsh. In as much as it

might be true that she moved on so quickly you didn't have

to rub it in like that. It was so uncalled for. And you were

even half shouting. What was that for? I understand

Majesty crossed the line but her heart was in the right

place. She had pure intentions. You didn't have to go all

Gaga on her. You should apologize for the way you handled this issue. The poor woman was even afraid of you."

I clenched my jaws and when the whiskey burnt my throat. "I will apologize but not now. She probably doesn't even want to see me. You know bro a part of me wished that when I find someone else or when I show interest in other women Majesty would be jealous. I wished that would happen so as to feed my ego a little bit but instead Majesty is the one trying to force someone into my

life.Maybe that is why I was furious and now I'm feeling
bad for shouting at her."

Tyrone chuckled."I guess she is really into the big scarred
guy hey."

"Yea I'm learning to accept that reality but there is
something about Lindani that I can't seem to put my finger
on.Something dark and dangerous.The guy only smiles
when Majesty is around but when she is not he has this
intimidating and dangerous look on his face.The scars and

tattoos don't work in his favour either. His gaze possess something lethal."

"Yea whenever he is around the hair at the back of my neck stands. He is dangerous and he gives me a crimelord kinda vibe. Don't you also find it weird that the Justin guy was killed just after Majesty mentioned him. Anyway it's none of our business. Majesty loves him and it's clear he loves her too. He loves your son as well. So let's stay out of their business. If he is really a dangerous man then the last

thing we want is being at his wrong side"

"What if she is not safe and my son?" I asked.

Tyrone shook his head."I think the guy has proved himself

so many times that he really loves Majesty.There is no

need for you to worry.As for your son.You know very well

that he loves Gift like his own so don't stress.I think

Majesty and Gift make him a different man.So please bro

don't do anything stupid.Let's just stay out of their

business for everyone's sake."

I nodded."You're right let's stay out of their business. But I fear for you though.I don't think Lindani is gonna like the fact that you're going out with his sister.He is going to murder you I'm telling you."

He swallowed deeply and I laughed at his ass."That is why we decided to keep things on the down low for a while.

And I really need Majesty on my side but with your recent behavior she might add fuel to the fire just to spite me when that big guy finds out.My blood will be on your

hands."

I laughed throwing my hands in the air."Leave me out of

it.I'm not the one chasing after Lindy.And her twin sister is

going to drag you by the balls.She is the man that one."He

clicked his tongue and switched the TV on.I continued

laughing at him.My poor twin.He fell for the wrong

girl.Anyway we ended up watching soccer together and

while we were at it the doorbell rang.I looked at Tyrone

with my forehead furrowed and he had the same

expression.

"Expecting someone?" I asked but he shook his head no. I

attended to the person ringing the bell only to find Lerato

standing with a smile on her face as always. I sighed in

frustration this girl didn't read between the lines nor did

she give up. I had a lot going on in my life and the last thing

I needed was a woman. I had a lot to deal with starting

from getting used to the fact that I was a Khumalo. I was

still getting used to my new found family and I had to deal

with my "dad" as well. The family secret left him a broken man and he needed us while me and my twin needed our family. Then I was dealing with my heartbreak as well as my feelings for Majesty. That was the hardest thing to do especially after finding out that our son was alive. I still had a lot to learn as a father. So being in the dating game back again didn't fit in the confusing equation called my life.

"Lerato what can I do for you?" I asked leaning on the door. She was an attractive young lady. Not really my type

but she was very beautiful and looked innocent. All tall, slender and light skinned. Whenever she smiled her brown eyes sparkled and you couldn't miss the dimple on her left cheek. At this moment her eyes were sparkling while she was staring at me nervously. She looked more prettier than the previous week that I have seen her. Or is it that the baby blue dress she was wearing complemented her light skin very well. Well I wouldn't know. Snap out of it. My inner voice shouted. I cleared my throat when I realised my

stare was making her uncomfortable.

"You can come in." I said paving way for her but she shook

her head and I arched my eyebrow in confusion.

"Ohh emm.I'm not coming in.I just came to drop this off."

She said giving me a plastic bag with lunch

boxes."Majesty and I talked.I realised that maybe I

shouldn't have acted the way I did the past days,trying to

get you to notice me and all.Its my apology offering for

making you uncomfortable or whatever it is that I was

doing. I'm not like that and I have no idea why I acted out of character. I shouldn't have and I'm very sorry. So enjoy the meal and I can taste it for you if you think that it's poisoned or something."

For some reason I felt really bad. She didn't even make me uncomfortable because we rarely spoke or anything. I always brushed her off whenever she tried to start a conversation and she never pushed. If anything maybe I was the one who made her uncomfortable.

"No umm you can come in and we enjoy this meal

together with my brother. That is if you're not rushing

somewhere."

She looked shocked that I had invited her into my house or

even say more than three sentences to her. All I ever did

was to brush her off and sometimes I simply ignored

her. Which now I realized was wrong.

She smiled and played with her fingers. "Ohh umm

okay." She slowly walked inside and I couldn't stop myself

from looking at those yellow beautiful long legs.Snap out

of it Treet.What's wrong with you?

"Your place is beautiful." She said and I just smiled

following her to the lounge.She greeted Tyrone who briefly

hugged her and asked to be excused.A few minutes later

he came back looking all fresh and fine.

"I'm going for a date.I'm sorry Lee I can't stay for your

delicious food." He gave me a pat and walked out.Now the

atmosphere was awkward. When was the last time I had a

woman in my house?

"Let's go to the kitchen." I said and she just smiled

following me. After warming up the food she dished for the

both of us roasted fish, roasted potatoes, mushroom

sauce and steamed veggies that she had prepared. I was

already salivating while inhaling the delicious smell. We ate

in comfortable silence and I must say Majesty made the

right choice by hiring her. She really knew how to cook. For

desert we had a chocolate cake.

"That was delicious." I said while she washed the dishes

"Thank you Treet." Okay she wasn't much of a talker and

the silence was comfortable anyway so I kept quiet while

she continued doing her dishes.

"I guess I will see you around hey." She said standing on

the doorway looking all shy. My gosh this was going to be

so difficult.

I chuckled and walked slowly towards her. I couldn't miss

the shyness written all over her face. Her brown eyes were

sparkling. I held her hand and squeezed it gently. "My

name is Treet, Treet Jackson/Khumalo. What should I call

this pretty lady."

She giggled. "Lerato Dlamini."

"Pretty name for a pretty chef. I wouldn't mind eating your

food everyday. You're really good at cooking Miss

Dlamini. Maybe I could use a chef for a friend. What do you

think?"

"That's a good idea. Friends it is then." She smiled.

I winked."Friends.Let me walk you to your car

chommie.That's how you say it right."

She giggled."You said it right.Anyway I didn't come with a

car.I will just catch a taxi so I should really get going."

"A taxi?You came here with a taxi?" I asked and she

nodded her head.It was horrible at the taxi ranks and I

wasn't about to let her travel with a taxi.I offered to drive

her home.At first she refused but with my persistence she

ended up giving in.She lived in Alex.I parked in front of a

four roomed house.

"So this is me.Thank you for driving me."She said when I

opened the door for her.I couldn't help but frown.Not at her

but at the conditions of the place she called home.It

wasn't safe around here and there was some druggies

who were sitting around passing some remarks.Even

though I couldn't hear what they were saying I knew it

wasn't anything good.Not so far from us there were some

people cheering to what looked like a fight.

"This place is not safe especially for someone like you." I

said

"This is my home Treet. I grew up here all my life. Don't

worry about it. I'm used to it. It's nothing." I wanted to argue

with her or maybe convince to take her to one of the

apartments that the Khumalo's owned which were now

under me and Tyrone but I didn't want to push too hard

and end up pushing her away.

"Ok fine. Take care."

"You too." She said walking inside. Sighing I drove off.

Maybe I shouldn't have gone all Gaga on Majesty after

all. On my way back home I tried Majesty's phone but when

she didn't pick up for the first time I didn't call again. I was

too harsh on her she needed some time. I received a call

from Monica when I arrived home. I was still handling the

Jackson business

"dad" didn't want me to resign so I

handled it from SA and sometimes I would have to fly to

USA.It worked like that.

"Thank you for handling the meeting very well.So this means I will have to fly there next week for this project."

"Yes sir I will have everything arranged for you."Monica said and I dropped the call.

MAKANAKA

Regret in your tears when you taste them.

"You have no idea what you have done to your future

Makanaka.You have no idea." Ma

jesty's voice echoed in

my ears again and again till I couldn't take it anymore.I

wiped the tears off my face but they continuously coursed

down.She was right.I had no idea that I was ruining my

own future.All I could do now was to regret in my

tears.Latisha cried in her sleep.She had wet her diapers

and it was making her uncomfortable.I dragged my painful

body with a diaper and a warm wet towel.I couldn't stop

my tears when I saw how cracked my baby girl's butt was

because we couldn't afford any baby powder. I couldn't

give her the best life that she deserved.

"Vaseline will have to do my girl." I said shushing her back

to sleep. After a while she was sucking her thumb fast

asleep. I carefully placed her back on the bed and walked

out to check on the other "baby". She was already crying

too waiting for a change. Walking into the room it smelled

of poop, urine and vomit. I went to the bathroom to take

some domestos as well as a bucket full of water and bath

foam.

"Maa you should have called out than just soiling the bed

like this again." I knew it was a waste of time telling her to

call out because she couldn't. Just a few months after we

came back to Zimbabwe she suffered a stroke out of

nowhere. We couldn't afford her medical bills. Her

medication was taking a financial strain on Ethan and

I. Already we were struggling and her health wasn't making

things easier for us. After she was discharged I had to

mother her. I never dreamed that one day I would be in this situation. Had someone told me that I was going to wipe poop from a grown woman's butt I was going to laugh at their face but here I was. Two years of suffering like this. We couldn't afford a nurse so I had to do the job I didn't it have much of a choice anymore.

I felt like puking while wiping her folds but I was already getting used to it. After bathing her and fixing her adult diaper I changed the bed sheets and pillow cases that she

had vomited on. Once upon a time I used to have everything done for me. Majesty made sure I had everything and I didn't have to lift a finger. Now this was my karma. After treating her so badly everything just changed in a blink. One moment I was living in a luxurious double storey but the next I was living in an five bedroom house without even a maid to my service. Ethan lost everything when we least expected it. All the money in his bank accounts was gone just like that. He lost his company,

his house and everything else valuable except for this

house that we were now living in.

After I was done I had to prepare some soft porridge for

his mother to eat as well as some pap for Latisha to eat

once she wakes up. I used the remaining of the maize meal

to prepare the meal for them. I fed Ethan's mother first.

When my baby woke up I fed her the pap and sugar since

there was nothing else I could give her to eat the pap

with. She didn't complain. Instead she ate and drank some

water. She went back to sleep again. Strapping her on my back I went to take the money that I had kept in my pillow so that I could buy maize meal but I didn't find it.

"Ohh not again Ethan. Not again." I cried out holding my head. Speaking of the devil. He walked in zigzagging holding a bottle of beer. He looked at me and frowned. I knew what was coming next so I immediately ran off to the other room. I locked myself with my baby and stayed there for a while. After I was sure he was asleep. I walked

out.Indeed he had passed out on the couch that has seen better days.I sighed feeling tears threatening to come out.I brought this on myself.I had no one else to blame but myself.

Ethan was what I always wanted in a man.So as a young horny teenager I started to imagine how my life would be with him in the future.I would fantasize a lot about us and in my fantasy we were the best couple ever.I can safely say I became obsessed. Driven by lust and obsession I

continuously threw myself at him knowing very well that he wanted my sister. Another reason why I started hating Majesty. Which I regret now. I continued coming at him very hard until he gave in and we slept together. I thought him taking my virginity would mean something to him and we would start something beautiful together but he simply told me that it was a mistake and apologized for it. I lied about being on a birth control so as to use a baby to trap him. At first the plan failed as he went ahead and married

Majesty despite him knowing that I was carrying his seed.I

loathed my sister for something she was not part of.I used

every reason I could find to hate her when she was

innocent in all of this.She was oblivious to what was

happening right under her nose.Using a baby as an excuse

I started pressurizing Ethan and threatening till I got what I

wanted.I bit more than I could chew as far as he was

concerned.

"I need something to eat.Cook pap I will eat it with my

biltong." Ethan's voice startled me out of my thoughts and

I moved backward in a protective stance. When did he even

wake up?

"The money you used for your beer and biltong was meant

for the maize meal. And that was the last that I had. Ethan

you're busy wasting money on beer knowing very well that

we highly need it for your mother, your child and all other

expenses. My child can't sleep on an empty stomach

because you chose to be a drunkard." I blurted out before I

could even stop myself. I felt a hot sensation on my
cheek. He slapped me. I knew it wouldn't end there but
thanks to Latisha who woke up crying probably because of
the slap that echoed, he didn't go any further. Foolishly I
had turned a blind eye and deaf ears to my sister's pleas
because I was blinded by hatred. I was stupid to think that
Ethan was not going to raise his hand at me since I was
going to give him what my sister had failed to give him but
at the hands of this man I miscarried twice after giving

birth to Latisha. He was abusive. Sometimes I would take my phone and try to dial Prince's number but he made it clear that I was dead to him. Majesty was a no go area too. With our last encounter and all the mean words I said to her she was never going to forgive me. She was no longer in touch anyway. I guess she moved to another country.

"I told you to sell your clothes and you didn't. Where do you expect me to find money when I'm jobless." He said.

"Jobless?!Ethan weren't you driving taxis for Mr

Banda.What happened?When did you even lost the job and

why?" As if drinking and wasting money wasn't enough

now he even lost his job.

"Don't you dare question me you understand. How dare

you?I'm not your child.I lost everything because of you.I

lost Majesty and my child is being taken care of by Prince

because I cannot provide for her because of

you.Everything that is happening is because of you." He

shouted.

"Don't you dare turn this around on me Ethan. We are both responsible for what is happening here. And you're worsening the situation for us here. I sold all the clothes that I had to provide for us but what do you do? You steal the money and go down yourself in alcohol. What about your mother and your child. This child, our child? You stole the money that I was supposed to use to buy the groceries so now what?"

"Open your legs or something. After all that's what you're good at. Make a plan. I'm hungry." He shouted and walked away with no care in the world. I had no choice than to go and ask for some money from our neighbors. They felt pity for me and gave me some notes which could last us for some months. Without thinking twice I walked to the nearby grocery shop and bought all the necessities that we needed including some fancy stuff for Latisha. I carried the load on my head and walked home. I made sure to hid

the remaining notes. But my worry now was how I was going to repay them. I was jobless but I had to make a plan.

After feeding his mother she puked again. What a waste. I cleaned up as she continued crying and drooling. This was a mess and there was nothing we could do. Now that Ethan had lost his job we had no money to take her to the hospital.

"God is watching." MaZulu's voice echoed in my ears again

and I looked at Ethan's mother. Was this her punishment

for treating my sister so badly? If so then this was the

worst punishment ever. I walked out leaving her crying. I

had to attend to my baby. After I was done feeding her I put

her to sleep and went to take a bath.

"Get on the bed." He demanded and I winced in pain before

he even touched me. I had bruises all over my body. Some

were old and some were new and very painful. I won't even

mention how sore I was.

"Ethan please." I pleaded but it fell on deaf ears as he pushed me on the bed and shoved himself inside of me. I was so dry like a desert but he didn't give a damn. What was important was him pleasing himself and that's it? He had his way with me. I thought about all the time Majesty would cry and beg for me to at least help her clean her wounds but I didn't. I wish I did. He groaned and got off me after he was satisfied. I limped to the bathroom to wipe myself but before I could get there I felt a tight grab on my

hair.

"I'm not done with you." He growled like a possessed beast.

"Please Ethan not anymore.I can't take it anymore please."

"How dare you say no to me." He punched me in the stomach and I flinched in pain. Pushing me on the bed again he roughly opened my legs.I closed my eyes and tears fell as I prayed for it to just go away.But one way or the other I had to accept that this was now my reality. Had I made the right choice I could have been in a different situation but foolish me forgot that blood is thicker than

water.I chose the wrong side.

My sister was right after all.I didn't know that I had ruined my future.

If only.

46

LINDANI

They poked the beast by messing with his beauty.

"Blackwidow is the mastermind behind the product. She

understands the definition of high quality and how to

make the product sweet that the addiction starts at first

hit. She considered the fact that coke doesn't sell much

during summer and people who use mandy will not leave

you alone when they start. To increase the profits on coke

she mixed it with mandy since it's not selling that much

this season. It produced good results and people liked the

pill." This was a deal of the century. Lucan was one of my

biggest clients in Mexico and work with him always

produced good results. More money.

He nodded to one of his men who came with a

briefcase. "I'm impressed. You always impress Scar so you

got yourself a deal. Tell your sister to continue making the

mandy and coke mix. Of course there are other ingredients

as well but you will not sell the recipe but it's ok. It's always

good doing business with you. I will get my guys to come to your warehouse to collect the product." He stood up and we exchanged a handshake. Walking out Lwandile and Leon were over the moon. Working with Lucan always left a smile on our faces. My phone rang when we were walking to my car. It was Derreck. I answered on the first ring feeling my own pulse in my throat. Something wasn't right.

"Talk to me." I said.

"Boss we have a problem." I didn't like his tone. He was panicking and that made me panic too. Derreck was too calm and if anything had him this riled up then it definitely wasn't something good. I heard some crying in the background. My heart.

"What's wrong Derreck. Is Majesty okay?"

"We are heading to the hospital. Ma'am was involved in an accident. Meet you there." He dropped the call. If it was any other day I could have punched him for dropping the call

but I was already in full panic mode.

"Let me drive." Leon suggested and I didn't have the energy to argue with him. With the way I was panicking I would probably cause an accident so I gave him the keys. The drive was silent and thank God for that. I was probably going to lose it if someone was to try and talk to me. When we arrived the receptionists didn't give us a hard time.

"What happened?" I asked mom who was pacing up and

down looking worried.

"She met with an accident when she was coming from

clicks." Derreck said.

My knuckles met with his jaws."Why the hell wasn't she

chauffeured?Didn't I say she will have a chauffeur

everywhere she goes."I held his collar.

My mom held me back."Majesty is in there.You can't do

this here please."

I sighed and sat down tapping my foot on the floor.

Doctor Gupta came out of the theatre room they had taken her to. He removed his glasses approaching us. I had watched plenty of movies to know what that means when the doctor removes their glasses. Bad news.

"She suffered a mild concussion, a broken arm and the rest are bruises. She is stable now. We tried all we could but unfortunately she lost the baby. We managed to clean her womb but we will have to keep her under observation for a night whilst waiting for her scan results. I'm really sorry for

your loss.Excuse me."

My heart stuttered and my stomach twisted painfully.She

was pregnant!My mother cried holding on to Lisa and my

heart shattered to a million pieces.If my mother was

wailing like that what about Majesty?How was she going

to react to the news?I saw the look on her face in the

morning and I knew what she was thinking.She badly

wanted to be a mother again.She so wanted to give me a

child but she was sad knowing she couldn't.Now how was

she going to react knowing she was pregnant but once again she was robbed the opportunity of holding our baby in her arms.I forced myself to breath as we walked to the room that they had taken her to.Everyone else walked in and I was still hesitating to face her even though she was fast asleep.I finally gathered the courage and walked in.I sat besides her and held her hand.Everyone walked out giving us some privacy.I brushed her cheek and my hand went to her tummy.It was very flat.Not that I was

expecting it to be huge but it was going to be in a matter of months. How did I not notice that she was pregnant? Her exhaustion and being horny all the time. Those were the signs right. Was I ignorant?

"I'm sorry my love. I'm so sorry I failed you."

I stayed with her for hours. I felt her fidget and immediately opened my eyes looking right into her eyes. She removed her hand from mine with tears glistening in her eyes.

"What happened to me? I remember crashing into another

car." My throat went dry.I have been practising for hours about what I was going to say to her once she wakes up but now I had temporary amnesia.I had forgotten everything I had planned to say.

"You were involved in accident.You were pregnant and..."

"I lost the baby?..." Tears coursed down her cheeks.She was going to find out about it anyway.I nodded.

She didn't have to cry out loud or scream to show that she was in pain.I gathered her in my arms,hugging her but she

didn't flinch.She was unmoving.

"I'm sorry my heart.For failing and disappointing you.I

should have drove you myself.I don't know how you will

forgive but I promise I will never fail you again." A

whimpered cry escaped my lips.At this moment I didn't

care about the nurses watching me cry.I had no

shame.Nothing else mattered at this point.She didn't even

twitch and her lack of movement was like a thousand

stabs to my already bleeding heart.I slowly let her go.

"Please say something my heart.Please." I begged but she didn't even move.Her eyes blinked and she was still looking at me.Her eyes were empty.The spark in them had disappeared.She was far away now and no matter how much I tried to reach out for her I lost her even more.I begged for her forgiveness, I begged for her love,I begged for her to say something. But no matter how much I tried she didn't say a word,she didn't react.She only blinked and breathed.I held her hand crying and begging but she slowly

removed her hand and slept in a foetal position. A few

minutes later she was in a deep slumber. Snoring even.

I talked till my throat felt dry and was even hurting hoping

that she would hear me even in her deep slumber. Her

sleep was plagued with nightmares. She cried

wailed and

hyperventilated in her sleep that I had to call Gupta. They

stabilized her and only then did she sleep without crying

and wailing but even so I knew she wasn't peaceful. I failed

us,I failed her and I had to fix this but I just didn't know
how.I slept at the hospital by her side.I didn't want to sleep
but Gupta drugged me when he offered me a glass of
water.So no matter how much I tried to stay awake my
eyes felt heavy and I slept too.Not a peaceful sleep
though.Majesty was in my dreams broken and hurt.She
threatened to leave me and no matter how much I tried to
stop her she turned and walked away.My eyes blinked
open and I had a sheen of sweat on my forehead. I was

glad it was a dream. I was never letting her go, I had to
make this right. Even though mom says dreams are next to
reality I was never going to let Majesty go. I had lost her
once to the hands of that bastard Ethan and I wasn't
loosing her again. The loss of our baby hit her hard.
I looked at her she was wide awake but I knew in her place
there was an empty shell. She was not here with me. We
stared at each other. And just like the first time our eyes
met my stomach tied in knots and my heart thumbed.

"Good morning my heart.Please say something." I pleaded and begged again plastering her face with kisses.She still didn't utter a word.She just stared.I wanted her eyes on me but not like this.Not when her eyes were empty and cold like this.I brushed her cheeks,gently squeezed her hand hoping she would react but instead she moved her hand away and looked at the wall.Completely shutting me out.

"Good morning pal.I have the scan results." That was

Doctor Gupta. I gave him a simple nod.He looked at

Majesty and sighed shaking his head.

They had said she was still shocked the previous day

when she didn't react to the news of us loosing our child

but looking at her now I knew he could tell it was more

than just shock.Majesty was broken.Her world came

crushing down too fast.She probably was blaming herself

for everything.I didn't want to leave her alone but I also

didn't want her to hear the results of the scan lest it breaks

her even further.But luckily my family arrived.I left them

with Majesty and walked out with Doctor Gupta to his office.

"We went through her scans and we found something." He said and I looked at him waiting for him to continue.

"The accident wasn't really the cause of the miscarriage. It only triggered something which was going to happen sooner or later."

"Explain further." I knew Majesty had problems with conception. Her little sister talked a lot about it. Which is

why I never tried to talk about us having kids in the near future because I knew it would break her. I was waiting for the right time to convince her to seek some serious medical attention. But I knew there was no right time for that so I never asked or suggested anything concerning that matter.

"She has a uterine abnormality. She has an arcuate womb. It looks pretty much like a normal womb but it has a dip on the top. It is usually congenital. Something some

women are born with or it happens when one conceives when their womb is not strong enough to. With Majesty's case I'm not sure which one it is but from my experience and my knowledge it appears congenital, an abnormality she was born with."

"But she has a child. She is Siphos mother."

"Yes with arcuate womb a woman may conceive. It will be one of the high risk pregnancies. In many cases the ones with the abnormality may miscarry during the second

trimester. Which is why I said in the beginning that she was probably going to lose the baby unfortunately. On top of the abnormality of her womb she has a scar on her uterine lining. Her uterus wasn't strong enough for the baby. It was even a miracle that she fell pregnant in the first place. But with this miscarriage she suffered again it made her uterus even more weaker. As a result she might possibly never be able to conceive again. Even if she does it will risk her health that she will have to get the foetus aborted to

save her life."

Every word was like a stab to my heart."You're not making me feel better here doc.So you're saying there is no hope."

He sighed and took off his glasses."Its a slim chance.I will prescribe medication for her scar to heal.But as for her arcuate womb there is nothing much that we can do especially if it is something that she was born with.And even if its not congenital it is still an abnormality and there is nothing much we can do to help.My advise is that if you

really want to have kids then you seek other options like surrogacy. She can have her eggs stored and frozen in our laboratory. If you want three kids then three eggs will be frozen and an extra one just in case. We will just need a host womb that is a surrogate mother then will do all the process of artificial insemination and you will have your baby. The child will have both his/hers parent's flesh and blood. Then as for your woman she will have her womb tied or removed to avoid the risk of her falling pregnant

again."

There was only too much I could take."Okay baby steps

Gupta.You saw earlier she is not ok and we are both

finding it hard to accept our loss.This thing of her eggs

being frozen and stored will come later maybe.Right now

we can stickto getting her scar healed.Everything else will

come later."I stood up.

"But anyway.Thanks man."

"Its okay.I will have to run some scans one more time on

her before prescribing the medicines just to be sure. So
when you're ready. Both of you come back again to start
with the chemo. For now you should go home and mourn
your child. My advise though to you man as my pal. Get
your woman to see a therapist. The news didn't sit well
with her. I'm not that much interested with people's brains
and whatever that goes on in their minds. I'm cool with
looking at vaginas all day but your woman needs
help. Mental help. I'm not saying she is crazy but because

of my line of work we touched a thing about people's behavior and psychology. I saw her behavior that time you came here for testing. It might have been for a short period of time but I could tell there was something amiss. With her reaction yesterday and her nightmares it confirmed my suspicions. She might be depressed."

"But I would have noticed right. She was perfectly okay she never showed signs of depression." I said.

"Depression patients don't say anything. The victim might

not even be aware that they are depressed or that they are having some trauma problems. She will be very happy and cheerful outside but deep down there will be nothing but worry and sadness. And when one thing goes wrong she snaps. There are a lot of people who commit suicide out there and sometimes you will be surprised wondering why that individual took such a step. It's only because that individual was depressed and no one noticed even they weren't aware until they decide to end their life. I could be

wrong.I could be right but seek some assistance from a
pro.All I can do to help right now is to prescribe some
antidepressants for her.With everything that is going on
they will help her to be less worried and less sad."

"Thank you man.Thanks so much." I said.

"Anything for you Scar.I have my own surgery today
because of you so anything for you man." I nodded and
walked out.

When I got back to her room I found mom crying with

Lindy trying to calm her down whilst shushing Lily down
who was wailing as well. Lily had her thumb in her mouth
looking all confused as to what was happening. Right
there I realised how important Majesty was in my life and
everyone else's as well. Lily continued wailing. It was a
mess. "What's wrong with her. Why isn't she saying
anything huh?" Mom asked through her tears
Before I responded Siphon walked out too with tears
glistening in his eyes. Treet and Tyrone walked out

too. When did they even get here?

"Dad what's wrong with mom? Why is she mute?..." Sipho

continued bombing me with questions.

"Champ you can go wait in the car with granny. I will

answer all your questions but just not right now." He

noded sadly and walked away. I was left with Treet and

Tyrone.

"What the fuck did you do to her." I didn't like his tone. And

if we weren't in this situation it wasn't going to end

well. But I wasn't about to fight with this man in the hospital and with Majesty in the next room.

"I love that woman. She is my everything. I don't need to prove it to you anyway. And I'm not about to exchange words or punches with you right now but know one thing I'm not a child and definitely not yours. Watch your tone when you speak to me." I said through gritted teeth.

"Bro can we just go." Tyrone said.

He ignored him and glared at me "Or what will you do

huh? Kill me like you killed Justin. Is my son even safe with you? Is Jesty even safe?"

"Bro you can't go around accusing people." His brother said.

"You know what? I'm not doing this with you right now. But yes I killed the bastard. And do you wanna know why I did it? It's because I love her. I did it because that bastard deserved it. I did it because my love for Majesty and our son Sipho makes me do crazy things. I will do it again and

again if need be. There you have it. Do what you want with the information." I bumped into him purposefully and walked into the room. Lisa was with Majesty and still there was no change. She was unresponsive and stiff. Doctor Gupta came with the discharge forms.

After signing them, I looked at "my heart" with a heavy heart.

"We have to go home my love."

She didn't say anything but slowly got off the bed and

walked out while I followed her worried that she might miss a step. She was walking on a fast pace that I had to run after her. She continued walking and I held her hand stopping her. She looked at me and my hand but didn't say a word. I had no idea what was going on in her mind but one thing is for sure. I was with her but she was not with us. I slowly walked her to the car and Lisa sat with her on the back. All of us not saying a word as I drove us home. When we arrived she was fast asleep. I carried her

upstairs to our room. I didn't want to leave her alone so
mom came and stayed with her while I tried my best to
explain to Sipho what was going on.

"Is she going to be ok then." He asked.

"She is going to be ok. We have to be strong for her okay
son."

"Yes dad." I nodded and walked out leaving him playing
with his sisters.

"We got something boss." Derreck said walking into my study.

"Talk to me." I said my voice harsh.

"It was DeLuca. The security cameras at clicks caught his men in act. They cut the brake fluid line of her car." He said.

"He messed with the wrong guy. I want him at the warehouse unharmed." I ordered.

"And his bitch?"

"I won't stoop to his level. And the bitch is pregnant. Let her

be.Its unfortunate the child will grow up without a

father.Get on it."

"Yes boss." He said and walked out.

I went to check on the kids.They were fast asleep with my

son cuddling both his sisters.He was going to make a

good dad one day.

I went back to our room and my mom walked out giving us

our privacy.I didn't need to be told. I knew the whole crew

was going to stay here until Majesty was fine.I got on the

bed and brought her closer to me. I was literally

suffocating with pain. So much pain. Seeing my Majesty

like this was breaking me.

"I'm sorry babe. I'm sorry we lost our child but I need you

back."

Those words were mere whispers but they meant

everything to me, to us.

47

LINDANI

Revenge is sweet.

Three weeks passed and she continued being unresponsive and she didn't even want to eat. Lisa had to put her on a drip and removed her cast. It was taking a toll on everyone involved. Those three weeks felt like three years to me. We also had to postpone the launch. Since she was the owner of the rehab. She had to be there for the big day but with her being like this we didn't have much of a

choice but to postpone until further notice. Fortunately the guest understood the reason behind the postponing. We just sent apology letters to all of them and explained that Majesty was involved in an accident. They sympathized with us and wished Majesty a speedy recovery. I tried everything I could to get her back but it was like she was thrown in a pit of darkness and she didn't want to be helped out.

"Good morning my love." I perked her lips and she just

stared at me with her empty eyes. The past days her nights have been plagued with nightmares that she barely slept. I got Dr Spencer on board who continued trying to get through her but she had sunk in too deep into depression that it was difficult to get her out. The therapist knew her job and she was not giving up anytime soon.

While I was caressing her cheeks waiting for any reaction mom walked in holding a tray with food. This situation was getting to her because she was once there. When my dad

died mom too had a mental breakdown. Her physical health too was affected to a point where she could barely do anything on her own. So seeing Majesty in this condition was like reliving her nightmare but still she had to be strong for her. I really appreciated everything she was doing for my woman.

"You know she will refuse to eat like any other day right." I said sadly.

Mom looked at her and sighed. "I think I have a plan. She is

not responsive but she is much better when the kids are around her. So we will use that to our advantage."

The door opened. Our kids walked in. They all sat on the bed and looked at their mother.

"Since you don't wanna eat. We are all going on a hunger strike. The three of us are not going to eat anything till you do. So do you want us to starve. Is that what you want mom." Siphosaid. Emotional blackmail. It might not have been the best way to handle things but it was the only way

we had.

"We are not eating mommy. You have to eat" Girly shook

her head vigorously.

"Yes we are not eating." Lily folded her arms.

They continued blackmailing her while mom and I watched

waiting for her to react. Siphos took the tray and brought

the fork to her lips. We all had our fingers crossed praying

that she at least takes a bite. She looked at the food then

at Siphos and back to the food again. I saw her mouth

twitching and slowly she opened it. Siphos fed her and she chewed slowly looking at her kids. She didn't eat much but it meant everything to us that she ate something at least.

"Thanks pal. You really helped." I said fist bumping with Siphos.

"Yea anything for her. But dad you have to fix this. We need her back. Normal and happy." He always away with his sisters. When I went back to Majesty she was fast asleep. The antidepressants made her sleep a lot so I

wasn't shaken up.

"How is she doing today?" Lisa asked

"There is progress. She ate today thanks to the kids'

emotional blackmail." She smiled to the news.

"We got DeLuca?" I asked with a stone face.

"Fuck yea." I smiled evilly.

I felt his bone crunch under the force of my punch. DeLuca

was strapped on the chair with blood all over his face. He

was captured two days ago and my men tortured him
mercilessly but careful enough not to kill him. I wanted to
do that myself. He was going to pay in the most horrific
way for messing with my heart. We had a long way to go
until the monster in me was satisfied.

"You messed with what's mine and you think you can get
away with it?" I said harshly.

"I'm sorry man alright. Just let me go. I will leave and stay
the fuck away from you and your family."

"Its too late for that." I pulled his head back sharply until he was looking at me. His neck cracked and he groaned in pain. Blood was dripping all over his face. His eyes were so swollen. He could barely keep them open. There was a deep cut on his forehead. I could see his white bone.

"We need to stop the bleeding." I said and Lisa gave me a red hot knife. I pressed the hot knife on his deep cut and he thrashed in my arms as I twisted it into the wound. He whimpered in pain. When I saw he was in too much pain I

pulled out. The bleeding had reduced because the wound was burnt by the hot knife.

"Now how does that feel? It feels refreshing to be on the receiving end. Doesn't it? I told you not to mess with my woman. And what did you? You send your dogs to mess with her. She got into a fucking accident and loose our baby. Now she is fucking depressed." He coughed and I pressed the hot knife on his chest. I wasn't going to cut his skin. I was going to play with him.

"And I believe in making things even." I said harshly. He
whimpered his eyes rolling back. He was about to lose
consciousness.

"Don't you dare close your eyes. I will chop off your dick." I
pointed the knife on his groin area and his eyes snapped
open. I signalled my man and they poured cold water on
him. He gasped trying to catch a breathe.

"Pl...plea...se..don't..." It came out as a shaky whisper.

"You should have thought about this before you messed

with my woman. Now I lost my child. I fucking told you not to mess with my woman. I wasn't fucking playing when I said I will kill for her." I held the knife at the back of my hand. He screamed in pain and horror as I slowly pierced his skin with it. He tried to move his arm away but I twisted the knife deeper in his skin and he screamed. Blood oozed out but I didn't care. His blood was the least of my concerns. I stopped with his knife still deep in his flesh.

"Do you know why I love this knife? It can cut through

anything and it hurts like a bitch."

"Pl...ea...se....I'm... Sorry..." His cries only fed my monster

even more.I twisted the knife again.Harder this time.I

heard his flesh mashing and his bones crushing then I

took it out leaving his wrist hanging like that.

"Pl..ea..se...no...more...please." He pleaded.

"Hmm I like the way you beg.I almost felt pity.But you

didn't when you ordered your man to mess with my

woman's car.What if she had died in that accident?

Anyway I'm not going to kill you at least not yet. For people

like you death is too merciful. It's actually an ultimate rest

for you. So I'm not giving you that rest. I will torture you until

it stops exciting me. When I'm done, you will not even be

able to beg for your death." I smiled devilishly looking at

his fingers on the other hand that was unharmed.

"I'm sure you used those fingers pointing at your men

giving them orders. Android get me the cutters." I ordered

and he ran getting me what I had asked. DeLuca shook his

head his eyes going wide. As wide as they could with how swollen they were. Lisa or better yet Blackwidow held his right arm as I held the cutter to his pinky. I didn't give him time to beg as I pressed the cutter and his pinky was on the floor. I didn't stop there as I cut from his pinky to his thumb. In mere seconds he lost all his fingers on his right hand. He stared at his hand in shock and when the pain kicked in he roared in pain.

"I'm not done with you yet." I brought the cutter to his

face. I gave him a few minutes to adjust to his newfound agony.

He watched in horror as Derrek held his jaws forcing his mouth open. "You're the one who gave the order and you will pay. You talk too much and I chose to end your talking." I said holding his tongue firmly between my fingers. I looked at him without doing anything. He eyed me suspiciously and relaxed his muscles. The moment he let his guard down I cut. A few minutes later his tongue was

no longer attached to his body.He

screamed,wailed,screamed

cried and groaned.

It took me hours to be satisfied.When I was done he was

no longer breathing.

"Clean this shit up."

"So are you going to tell Majesty about this life of yours?"

Leon asked.

"No.And you will not say a word to her either.Am I clear?"

All my siblings nodded. It was better that way. I couldn't expose Majesty to the cruelty of my other life.

I went to the cabin and showered. After I changed into a new pair of shirt and slacks I drove home.

I panicked when I didn't find Majesty in our bedroom. I couldn't wake anyone up because it was past midnight. I looked for her like a mad person until I found her in my study. She was asleep on the couch holding our family

photo.She must have waited for me until she dozed off.I

carried her back to our room and she woke up before I got

her to the bed.

"I'm sorry sweetie.I didn't wanna wake you." I kissed her

forehead.

She sat on the bed and cried holding my hands."I'm sorry

for failing our child Lindani.I'm sorry I didn't even know I

was pregnant.I don't know what kind of a mother I am.I'm

sorry babe I failed as your woman.I'm so sorry babe.And

I'm sorry for giving you a hard time. I was too shocked to understand what happened but I'm coming to terms with everything. Dr Spencer is really helping me. Once again I'm sorry."

I kissed her forehead and wiped off her tears. "No no babe it's not your fault. It was an accident none of this was your fault. You don't have to blame yourself ok. We will go through this together. Don't blame yourself please my love ok. I don't blame you for anything and I'm not even angry

that you went mute on me. You were hurting babe so its

ok. This too shall be over." She nodded like a little girl. "Now

get into bed my love before you catch a cold." She obliged

and I snuggled besides her. We cuddled to sleep.

The following day I woke up to an amazing morning with

my woman eating me like she was born for it. When I

opened my eyes she smiled naughtily.

"Good morning my love. Its been too long since I felt you

inside of me." She said hungrily. And she was right. My dick

missed her warm,tight, wet pussy.Its been fucking three weeks!My hand grabbed the back of her head as I moved her back to my hard cock.

"Suck my balls and work your way up." I ordered and she didn't need to be told twice.She sucked my balls like she was sucking some teabags.She dragged her tongue against the roughness of my veined shaft.Since she couldn't take all of me in I held my shaft jerking it lightly.

My other hand was on her hair,gathering it into a bunch to

keep it away from her face so that she could do her
job. Her sucks became aggressive and so was her gagging
skills. She pulled one of my balls into her mouth and
sucked it like she was sucking a candy. Watching her do the
amazing job drove me to the edge. I filled her mouth with
my seed. She swallowed like a good girl. Fuck! That was the
best head I have ever gotten.

She licked her lips. "Yummy."

"On your fours." I commanded. Just because I exploded in

her mouth it didn't stop me from getting between her

legs.She knelt on the bed and parted her thighs with

urgency.I entered her with on master stroke.She gasped

loud as I filled her with my now hard and hot cock.

"Here it comes babe."

"Fuck yea.." She moaned as I started to thrust in and out of

her.

48

MAKANAKA

Burying the hatchet.

Karma doesn't forget an address. Ask me I know. I lived every day regretting what I did. Each day was worse than the last. Ethan terrorized me. At times I would find him crying, clearly regretting everything as well. But each time I let my guard down thinking he had changed the monster would take over. It wasn't easy.

"I can't live like this anymore. There is so much that one

can take.I'm human too you know.I have feelings too.I'm
not made of stone.I don't get why you blame me for
ruining things for you with Majesty.You knew she didn't
love you yet you still forced your way into her life.Even
when she gave you a chance you didn't treat her right.My
sin was to stand there and allow you to abuse her while I
did nothing to help her.You are the one who raised your
hands at her,tricked her and didn't treat her right.Blaming
and hitting me all the time is getting old and tiring.She

didn't even love you. Get it through your head. We can't keep on going on like this. I'm a mother now and I have a child to look after. I also have to take care of your bedridden mother who can't do anything for herself. Making her my second child. Then I have to deal with your tantrums and wild behavior everytime you're drunk. If you wanna kill me then do it please. I can't take this torture anymore. Haven't I paid enough for my sins? Ethan this is not you. You can't be that same man

who used to care for me and my siblings when we were going through a tough time. You're not the same man who treated me very well when I was a child. What happened to you? I know I was evil but haven't I paid enough for all the evil that I have done. I can't go on like this Ethan. Kill me if it will make you happy but I can't go on like this. What are you teaching our child huh? Do you want her to grow up thinking violence is love? If ever there is still the "kind old Ethan" in there then please respect our daughter enough

not to abuse me in front of her. A brain is a very powerful part of a human body and kids don't easily forget. These horrible memories will forever be stuck in her mind. If you want to take out your frustrations on me then fine but don't do it in front of our daughter. Please I'm begging you. If the Ethan I used to know is still in there then I'm pleading with him to let me go. At least don't hit me in front of our child. Please I'm begging you."

It was one of the worst days. I tried to stay out of his way

but he wanted to vent out his frustrations on me.I begged
and for the first time in a long time I managed to penetrate
to his soul.I saw the pain in his eyes and the regret.He
threw the belt away and carried Latisha who was crying
holding on to his leg.Its a pity my child had been exposed
to this.If I could turn back the hands of time I was going to
make things right.Unfortunately I couldn't undo what was
already done.The least I could do was to try and make it
right even if it was impossible.

"I'm sorry." Ethan lifted Latisha who was even scared of him. She looked at me with fear and I smiled through my pain

Advertisement

reassuring her that her father was not going to hurt her. Slowly I stood up from the floor then went to take a bath. After I was done I limped to Mrs Jaji's room. The odor made me nauseous but I gathered enough courage and cleaned her just like any other day. While I was at it she slowly opened her eyes and looked at me tears glistening

in her eyes.

She opened her mouth to say something but words

couldn't come out because of the stroke. She kept on

trying.

"Ma...ma...m...a..."

"What are you saying?" I asked listening what she was

trying to say.

She shook her head as tears coursed down at the corner

of her eyes.

"Ma...ma...j...je..."

"Majesty?" I asked and she nodded her head vigorously. I

sighed sadly.

"You have something you want to say to her?" I asked and

she nodded again.

"I'm sorry unfortunately I can't get hold of her."

Shaking, she held my hands as if she was begging me. She

looked at me with eyes full of remorse and wailed. She

kept on holding my hands weakly.

"Ok I will see what I can do to get hold of her." I said and she sighed in relief.

"Get some rest while I make some porridge for you." She nodded and I walked out.

How on earth was I going to get hold of Majesty? Prince was my only hope but he made it clear that I was dead to him. Even if I was to get hold of Majesty what on earth was I going to say to her? It was almost three years now. What was I going to say? I betrayed her and ill treated her. I was

so ashamed of myself that I didn't even know where to start apologizing if given a chance. I went to the kitchen to take the maize meal so that I could prepare soft porridge with butter for Mrs Jaji. It was the only thing that she could eat. I sadly looked at the 10kg pack which was left with maize meal enough for only two days. I had to make a plan but then I was already drowning in debts. No one would want to lend me money because I took too long to pay back. I had started taking piece jobs. I couldn't take a

permanent job as a maid because I had to take care of

Ethan's mother 24/7 and it wasn't easy with a child

too. Piece jobs weren't paying the bills either because it

wasn't every day that I got one. Even if I did it wasn't

enough. I couldn't rely on Ethan. He was another grown ass

baby. It was pointless. Story of my life!

I took enough ingredients for the soft porridge and went

outside to our fireplace. I couldn't manage the electricity

and water bills at once so we had to cut off the

electricity. To my surprise I found Ethan making the

porridge himself. That was a first. Latie was playing not so

far from him.

"What are you doing? You can go back inside. I will finish

preparing it." I said.

He looked everywhere but me. "It's okay let me take care of

it. You can go back inside and rest. Once I'm done preparing

it I will serve it and you will feed Latie while I feed mom. Go

and rest."

I just turned and walked away deep in thoughts. His sudden change of behavior shocked me that I didn't know what to say. After he was done preparing it he came with a bowl and I fed Latie. After I was done I bathed her and a few minutes later she was fast asleep.

"There is some porridge left in the pot. Should I dish out for you?" His voice startled me from my own thoughts.

"No I'm fine. You can eat it."

He sighed. "You didn't eat anything since morning. Its now

almost six."

"I can manage Ethan. Why are you being so nice to me?" I

looked at him and walked out leaving him in the room

without waiting for his response. I went to a nearby tuck

shop to buy airtime. What Mrs Jaji asked was scaring me. It

is believed that when someone is closer to death they

usually asks for the one they wronged the most. Which in

Mrs Jaji's case it's Majesty. Was she about to die?

I shoved away the thoughts and dialled the only contact in

my phone with fingers crossed. This was my only option to
make things right if given the chance. It rang thrice
unanswered. For the fourth time I was almost giving up
when it was answered.

"Mr Browns speaking how can I help you?" My brother
answered with his firm tone and my heart pounded
furiously that I felt like my ribcage was going to burst.

"Its Maka. Please don't hang up." I said with a shaking
voice.

"You're dead to me. Don't ever.."

"Please please I'm begging you. This is important. I know I

deserve everything that's coming my way and it's fine but

this isn't about me." I pleaded.

"I'm giving you two minutes to explain yourself." He

said. From his tone he was angry and hadn't forgiven me

yet but it was fine. I deserved it.

"Ethan's mother is sick and she is almost dying. She had a

stroke. She has been bedridden for nearly two years

now.Today she asked for Majesty.I know she wronged her
and I did too but I'm begging you.Maybe she wants to ask
for forgiveness and I want to do so as well.Please give us
the chance to seek for forgiveness.I don't want money or
anything I just want Majesty's number.Please she is dying
Prince.She was once a good woman and took care of
us.Can you please consider that and give me my sister's
number.I won't bother her if she wants nothing to do with
us.I won't hold anything against her because if anything I

deserve her wrath."I wiped the tears that were streaming
down my cheeks.

"Its okay.I will send the number now but if you want to
gloat or boast to her then I better warn you
beforehand.Her man will make your life miserable. He is
not the one to be messed with." He warned.

"I have nothing to boast about.I know you don't wanna
hear my sob stories but..."

He interjected."I'm sending the number."With that said he

dropped the call. I sighed sadly looking at the cracked screen of my phone. Prince didn't forgive easily and it was going to take sweat and tears for me to be in his good graces again. Majesty was probably never going to forgive me ever again and who would blame her. I betrayed her in the worst possible way. And the painful part is she always treated me right. Even though she wasn't there for me and Prince most of the time she always made sure our needs were catered for. I did not blame her for the way I turned

out because we all have a choice. It was my choice to be
evil. There was no one else to blame but me. A text came
through and my heart continued to pound while looking at
her number. I still had enough airtime to call her but I
needed some few minutes to get myself together. I sat
down. After saving the number I hesitantly dialed.

It was answered on the first ring.

"Hello." A deep voice answered

My throat went dry and I swallowed countless

times."Umm..h-hello can..I..s-speak to Majesty." I said with a shaking voice.

"Ok give me a second." I heard some shuffling sounds.

My heart there is someone on the phone for you."

"Who is it?"I heard her asking. She was probably going to

refuse to talk to me.So I hung up.I couldn't do this.I wasn't

strong and ready enough to face her let alone talking to

her over the phone.A few minutes later she called.I

answered with my fingers crossed.

"Hello.You called earlier saying you want to talk to me who is it?" Her voice even made more nervous that I was even shaking.

"Its...its....Maka." It came out as whisper but loud enough for her to hear.There was some silence and I felt tears threatening to come.She was probably going to drop the call immediately.I closed my eyes praying that God's penetrates into her heart so that she could find it in her to forgive me.I was expecting her to either drop the call or

cuss at me. But no, not Majesty.

"How are you Maka?" After all the evil I have done to her she was concerned about my wellbeing. I couldn't hold it in anymore I wailed saying "I'm sorry" countless times. I heard some sniffing. She was also crying and that made me wail even more.

"I'm sorry. I'm so sorry. I'm really sorry." I continued crying. "Mrs Jaji is on the deathbed. She asked for you. It's okay if you don't want to come. I think she wants to ask for

forgiveness and I also want to apologize properly. I know

I'm asking for a lot right now but please give us the chance

to seek for your forgiveness. We won't bother you ever

again." I pleaded.

"I'm taking the next flight there tomorrow. See you then."

"You have no idea how much this means to me. Thank you

so much for doing this. Thank you so much."

"It's okay." She sniffed and dropped the call. I felt a heavy

burden being lifted off my shoulders. Then it sunk

in. Majesty was coming tomorrow!!! I ran to Mrs Jaji's room and found her awake staring into space.

"Majesty is coming tomorrow." I said trying to catch a breathe from all the running. Her dry lips twitched as she tried to smile. Tears coursed down her cheeks. She gave me a grateful look. I wiped her tears and went to take the disinfectants. I changed her sheets. After bathing her I cleaned the entire room again and again. Majesty had to find the place clean. She was a clean freak after all. I did the

same with the other rooms as well and even went as far as scrubbing the walls.I even forgot about my painful wounds.

"I'm not going to lay my hands on you Maka.You don't have to pass time by slaving yourself.Come rest.If you don't feel comfortable with sharing the bed with me I will sleep in the other room."Ethan said with a sad look on his face.

I looked at him smiling and crying at the same time.It was a bittersweet feeling for me.

"Majesty is coming tomorrow she has to find the house clean."

He looked surprised. "She is coming here.Why?" His voice was shaking too.

"Your mother wants to talk to her.This is my chance to ask for forgiveness." I wiped my tears off.

He sat down with tears coursing down his cheeks as well.I stopped scrubbing and sat besides him.

"I don't sleep at night Maka.Her cries haunt me each and

every night. I dream about her everyday. All that time she would cry for me to stop. I breathe and live in guilty. The reason why I have been drinking so much is because of that. I'm not trying to justify myself here but I thought alcohol would make me sleep at night. No matter how drunk the memories haunt me at night. Accusing you for being responsible and abusing you too was my only way to make myself feel better. Shifting the blame to you and channeling my anger to you was my solace. As crazy as it

sounds i found comfort in doing so.Knowing that I'm not
the only one who hurt her made me feel better.But
today...today I looked into my child's eyes.The fear in her
and in your eyes scared the shit out of me.I don't know
what I have become Maka.I don't know how the hell am I
going to face her tomorrow.I became the monster I
despised and I'm ashamed of myself right now.I can't even
recognize myself.I put you through hell and said a lot of
hurtful words to you.I know no matter how much I will

apologize to your sister or to you its never going to erase

the bad memories stuck in your minds.I'm so sorry

Maka.I'm sorry.Its okay if you won't forgive me but know

that I deeply regret everything.I will apologize to Majesty

also.I don't know how I'm going to bring myself to show

even my face but I will have to do it.I know its probably too

late for all this and things are never going to be the

same.Still I'm going to try and be the better version of

myself because honestly I hate what I have become.I was

blinded by greed and resentment but today when you
looked me in the eye and pleaded with me to just kill you. I
was sickened by myself. One day I hope you will forgive
this monster who caused you nothing but pain. If you don't
find it in your heart it is still okay. I will not hold anything
against you or Majesty."

He wiped his tears off and I just sat there frozen in place. I
was just too shocked to move a muscle. Ethan
apologized?!! He stood up and took the mop then started

mopping.

"I know you're not going to sleep so let's make this place squeaky clean before her majesty comes. You know she has OCD right." We both laughed through the pain. I took the brush and continued scrubbing the walls. We didn't sleep that night as we were anxious, nervous and excited about Majesty's arrival. I had no idea how she was going to react seeing us after a long time judging by how we parted ways. Nonetheless I couldn't wait for her arrival. The

following day I used the last notes that we had to buy

meat and maize meal to prepare for her when arrives.I

bathed my daughter as well as Mrs Jaji at least

thrice.Later in the afternoon my excitement was starting to

wear off replaced by sadness and disappointment.

"If she doesn't come it's still okay.I don't even deserve her

coming here for me." I sighed.

"You're right hey.After everything I don't blame her if she

doesn't come.We don't deserve it." Even though Ethan was

ashamed just as I was.He also wanted to meet Majesty.He

needed the peace of mind knowing he was

forgiven.Everyone expect for my girl desperately needed

Majesty's forgiveness.Around 6 I had lost all my hope.

"Let me go and start the fire.Its time for maa to have a

porridge." I walked out to our fireplace with tears clouding

in my eyes.Ethan followed too after checking on his

mother.

While I was at it we heard some noise at the gate.Ethan

and I both ran there. A Benz was parked on the gate and the kids were the ones making noise admiring the car. My heart started to pound and I looked at Ethan who was equally nervous. It was obvious Majesty had arrived. I had made a speech in my head but I forgot everything the minute she stepped out of the car. A buff chocolate hunk stepped out too. He was the guy who showed Ethan flames back in the US. Lindani. Upon seeing him I could feel Ethan slightly shaking besides me. One of the sister twins

walked out too. She was the intimidating one. Lisa. They saw us first. Majesty turned. Our eyes met and she covered her mouth. She slowly walked to the gate and with trembling hands tried to open it. I also slowly walked towards it.

"This damn gate is not opening." She cursed with tears flowing down her cheeks. "Open it babe. Open it." She cried looking at Lindani who just rubbed her back and slowly opened the gate. Once it was open she walked in with her

arms opened.

"I'm sorry.I'm so sorry.Please forgive me.I didn't know

what I was doing.I'm sorry." I broke down in her arms and

we cried together.

"Let's get inside.It's getting dark here." Lisa said.We

obliged and walked silently inside the house.

"The electricity needs to be recharged.Let me go and get

that sorted.Its still the same store right?" Lisa asked and I

nodded.She walked out leaving us in silence.Only our

sniffs were heard. A few minutes later she came back and recharged. For the first time in a long time we had electricity in the house.

Once the lights were on Majesty gasped painfully looking at me.

"Ohhh my God." She wiped her tears but they continuously streamed down. She looked at Ethan with fury all over her face.

"What the hell did you do to her?" She shouted. Ethan

looked down shamefully as he played with Latisha's fingers. He was using Latisha as a shield because if it wasn't for her then he could have been on the ground receiving kicks from Lindani. The way Lindani was staring at Ethan he probably killed him and buried him in his mind.

"I'm sorry." I said looking everywhere but her.

"Where is Mrs Jaji?" She asked avoiding what I said. It was probably going to take a long time for her to forgive me. She had come because the sister in her pushed her to

but the other Majesty in her was hurt and angry.I could feel

it.It was going to take me a lot time to win her back.

"Let's go " I stood up and led her to the room.Lindani and

Lisa remained behind with Ethan and I knew he felt like

dying.Lindani's looks could kill.

When we walked in she broke down even more.

"I wished everything on her but not this.I prayed that she

suffered for what she did to me but I didn't wish for

this.What the hell happened?" She cried looking at Mrs

Jaji's skinny wrinkled body.

"Life happened." I looked down in shame. Mrs Jaji must

have felt the presence because she slowly opened her

eyes. She couldn't believe it when she saw Majesty

because she blinked multiple times. Words couldn't come

out and her lips trembled while she cried trying to say

something. Majesty cried and went over to hug her. At this

moment I realised what a big mistake I made by betraying

and hating her for no reason at all. Majesty was nowhere

near perfect but she still found us worth to pay a visit. She overlooked all the pain we all put her through and hugged Mrs Jaji. The same woman who did everything she could to make her life miserable. She hugged and cried with the same sister who humiliated her and betrayed her. She still managed to face the same man who ruined her life at some point. We didn't deserve this after all the pain we put her through but still she overlooked all that and came as soon as she could without thinking twice.

"Ma...maj...." Mrs Jaji stammered again but words were failing to come out.

"I'm here.I'm here.Everything is going to be okay.We will get you to the hospital ok.Maka go get her documents we have to get her to the hospital." She said sniffing and gently squeezing Mrs Jaji's hands.

"Hurry Maka!!" She shouted but Mrs Jaji shook her head.

"Eth...an..." She said breathing heavily.

"Call Ethan Maka..call Ethan..She wants Ethan.Hang in

there okay. He is coming we need to take her to the hospital." Majesty shouted with panic in her voice. Within a few minutes everyone was already in the room except for Lisa and Latisha. Mrs Jaji looked at Ethan and Majesty tears flowing down.

"For...for...g-give...m-me." She stammered breathing heavily.

"Its ok. Don't say a thing. We need to get her to the hospital. She needs medical attention." Majesty wailed and

Lindani stood besides her brushing her arms softly.

Mrs Jaji held Majesty and Ethan with her trembling hands.

"F-for...g-give..me...s-sorry...p-please...for..g-give me.." She stammered again.

"I forgive you please stop talking. We need to get you to the hospital." Majesty said. Mrs Jaji looked at her son waiting for his response.

"I forgive you mom and I'm sorry for not being a good son. I'm so sorry." He cried.

Mrs Jaji smiled with tears streaming down.

"Tha...nk...y-you."

Then she started shaking vigorously. After a few minutes

she stopped with her mouth and eyes wide open.

Epilogue

MAJESTY

Finale Part A.

I watched in horror as she took her last breathe.I couldn't get that image out of my head.A big part of me was relieved knowing that she passed after we had buried the hatchet.Never have I thought that Mrs Jaji was going to beg for forgiveness on her deathbed.I forgave her wholeheartedly because there was no point in holding on to the past.I only wanted to hear those words from her and when she said them I was satisfied.She was remorseful and that what mattered to me the most.I was trying to move on with my life here hence the reason why I didn't think twice when Maka called.

"I can't believe she is gone." Maka said wiping off her tears.They shared a good relationship so I wasn't surprised that she was sad about her passing."I mean to say umm she is gone now and Ethan I.." She stammered

trying to justify herself.

"You don't have to explain anything. You're allowed to mourn her. I forgave her it's okay. You and her got along really well."

The condition I found them in was heartbreaking. I almost didn't recognize them. They were all so skinny and dark. Maka looked older than her age and the clothes she was wearing didn't work in her favour. That dress had seen better days. Ethan on the other hand looked like a drug addict with unshaved beard and dry cracked skin. I felt bad. Maybe I shouldn't have let Lindani take everything away from them. I should just have let God deal with them. Now even my niece was suffering for things she had no idea of.

"What about me? Me and Ethan?"

She gave me a pleading look. I knew she had learnt her lesson the hard way. For a long time I wanted to hear those words from her too. I wanted to know that at least she was

sorry about what she did but now that she had said it I was tongue tied. I didn't know how to react because I felt so guilty for the condition I found her in. I felt so responsible of that. Now it was not her apology that I needed for my own peace of mind. I was the one supposed to apologize too. I had apologize for everything that I did. I played a huge role in how she turned out to be. Yes we all have choices about who we want to be but there are certain things which influence us in making those choices. My absence in Maka's life made her a rebel and a bitter teenager. I played a huge part because I wasn't there to guide her. I wasn't there to help her choose the right path and I wasn't a good role model. I had issues yes but that's no excuse.

I hugged her and she wailed in my arms apologizing again and again.

"We will talk. Right now let's make arrangements for Mrs Jaji's funeral." I said wiping the tears off her face and she nodded like a little girl.

"Mama." Latie said crawling on my laps. Maka tried to take her away because she was dirty but I stopped her from doing so. The little girl was a photocopy of Ethan. The only thing that showed Maka was her mother was the ears.

"This is Ethan's copy and paste." We laughed together wiping our tears.

"I was heartbroken when I gave birth to her. She is nothing like me but I was the one who suffered. Nine months car---

" She looked down and sighed probably feeling pity for me." "I'm sorry I got carried away."

"Stop apologizing Maka. We will talk ok."

I stood up and went to the bathroom. I gave the baby a bath. Lisa was done cooking so I fed her and rocked her to sleep. Lindani was with Ethan and a few neighbors who had already gathered outside. They were waiting for the police and the ambulance which were taking long to arrive. Lisa was with other women chatting like friends

"My heart." I smiled when I heard his voice. He came and

hugged me from behind. The looks we got from the women in the kitchen could kill so we went to the car. No we were not going to have sex. He smiled looking at me without saying a thing. I blushed staring back at those hazel eyes.

"What?"

He shrugged and held my hand. "I don't know what kind of a heart you have but I'm so proud of you. I couldn't have done what you did especially after everything those people put you through. I'm so so proud and I thank God for giving me such wonderful woman. You're not perfect darling but you're the best that I could ever have. I know it took a lot for you to forgive that woman and its going to take a lot more for you to forgive those two but I will be right by your side through it all."

"You're going to make me cry." I sniffed.

He chuckled. "I love you."

"I love you too."

"Anyway Ethan said his mom didn't have a funeral policy here in Zimbabwe. He cancelled it when he figured he couldn't afford. The one she had in the US is probably invalid so there is no point in thinking about it. I hate that guy but I have to help. I feel obligated to do so. I wanted to talk to you first about it before making that decision. Are you ok with it?" He asked.

"Its fine. We will handle everything but we have to do that on the low. His relatives are not so nice people. They will think we want the spotlight which is not the case. Give Ethan the money and tell him not to say its from us. The last thing I want is people thinking we are showing off or something. Mrs Jaji needs a dignified funeral without drama so let's just do the best that we can." He agreed to that and we went back to the others.

Her funeral was conducted and it was just so heartbreaking. She was gone, like really gone. I found that

difficult to believe but it was true. Thankfully people had a lot of nice things to say about her. And of course there was some drama but I handled it. Mai Tawa and Mai Moyo wanted to order me around like they did on Mr Jaji's funeral. They thought I was still their daughter in law and a doormat that they could walk on but Lisa put them in their places. Prince couldn't come but he sent his condolences and money for the casket. He was swamped with shifts so that's the least he could do.

"No words can ever express my appreciation for what you have done for me and my family. After everything that I did. I was not going to hold anything against had you chosen not to come for the funeral. You did more than enough and for that I'm grateful. Majesty can I talk to you." Ethan said with his eyes filled with tears. Shame. Life will humble you.

"No. Whatever you want to say. Say it here." Lindani said holding my hand in a protective stance.

Ethan looked down with shame and regret all over his face.

"Okay.I'm sorry Majesty.I don't know when I became the man I am today.I disappointed you and I hurt you when I was supposed to be your friend.I gave in to my greediness and betrayed you.I forced you to marry me when it was clear you felt nothing for me and you only loved me as a friend.I ruined our friendship.I'm sorry I abused you.Each and every night my conscience weighs down on me whenever I reminisce all those moments that I hit you and forced myself on you.Today I'm disgusted by my own actions.I don't sleep at night Majesty.I dream about it every time.Your cries and screams haunt me at night.I know no amount of apologies can make up for what I did, for the scars I left both physically and emotionally but still I beg you to find it in your heart to forgive me.I also want to apologize for mistreating your sister Makaanaka here.When I lost everything in the US I wasn't in a good space but that's no excuse.I abused her too and the worst

part is I did it in front of our child. I became a drunkard and made my child and the mother of my child suffer. I failed as a father, as a son, as a husband, as a friend and as a man. I apologized to Maka too and I will continue doing so but I know it will never be enough. The pain I inflicted on the both of you is something that can't be taken lightly but still I hope one day you will forgive me. I know I don't deserve it at all but I just hope you will find it in your heart. Now it's up to you. I know my sins cannot go unpunished and I'm going to take any punishment you give me because I deserve it. If you want to call the police on me then it's okay. I'm ready to confess all my sins. There is nothing much I can do apart from paying for what I did and repenting."

I cried when he was talking. I couldn't believe he actually abused Maka too. I knew what it did to me and I couldn't imagine what it did to Maka. Also the impact it had on that little child. A part of me wanted to strangle him and watch

him suffer but I wasn't going to gain anything from hurting him. I wasn't going to get anything from holding on to the hatred. So instead I looked for the reasons why I should forgive him and focused on that. Those reasons channelled a positive energy in my mind.

"I forgive you." I whispered loud enough for him to hear. His body stiffened and his eyes popped out in disbelief.

Everyone else was equally shocked because they expected me to act all savage on him but I didn't have that energy in me anymore.

"I have no idea why you hurt me. I was a good friend. We shared a beautiful friendship which you ruined Ethan. You ruined a relation we built for so many years simply because you were greedy and selfish. You scorned me but I'm not going to unleash the fury. Instead I forgive you. If it wasn't for you I wouldn't have been with Lindani today. I don't know if this is going to give you the peace that you need but for both our sakes, especially mine I accept your

apology. I need this to move on with my life. I also forgive you for abusing my sister too but it's up to her if she wants to forgive you or not. Hopefully we will all move on and close this chapter of our lives once and for all. It's not worth it to hold on to the past. It's not worth it to hold on to hatred. If anything it's toxic. Hatred, resentment, grudges are the poisons that only ruin us as individuals and no one else. If I decide to hate you for the rest of my life for what you did it's only going to affect me. You have played your part by apologizing but if I decide not to forgive you then I will be the one to have sleepless nights. I have gone through so much shit already and I can't go through that anymore. Anyway for what it's worth I'm sorry too Ethan that I couldn't love you the way you wanted to be loved. And I'm also sorry that you had to suffer like this only because I wanted us to be even. Once again it's not worth it. I gained nothing from watching you suffer. I didn't even get the satisfaction and closure that I thought I would

get if I see you struggling. At the end of the day I felt guilty."

He cried and buried his head in his hands. "You have no idea how much this means to me. Thank you so much, thank you." He continued crying.

Maka came and knelt besides me "Majesty I'm ..."

"No don't apologize. You already did and I will have a headache from hearing " I'm sorry " for the hundredth time" I interjected. "Let's go talk in private."

Lindani tensed but I gave him a nod. Ever since the accident he became so overprotective that at some point it was annoying.. He tightened the security. I wasn't allowed to drive anymore. I had an assigned chauffeur which I found extravagant. He tightened the security detail too. I found it suspicious because its not like I was hijacked or something. But Lindani was overprotective like that so I got used to it. Whenever he wasn't around he would assign so many people for my safety. When he was around he didn't

let me out of his sight. I felt like he was treating me like a glass that would easily break but I didn't dare to complain.

"I will be fine." I said and slowly loosened his grip. I went to the other bedroom with Maka. We sat in silence for a while.

"I'm sorry." I broke the silence. Her eyes glistened with tears and her lips trembled.

"I'm sorry for not being the sister that I was supposed to be. I'm sorry for being so self-centered that I paid less attention to you and Prince. I was so selfish. I was always in my own world paying no attention to what you were going through. I forgot that you also was traumatized, you also saw our mother dead. You were the eyewitness to what happened. You saw those horrible things at such a young age. I ignored the fact that you also lost a mother and you needed comfort and guidance. I always put myself and my feelings first. It was all about me, me, me me, and that was wrong. Yes I was going through shit. I had issues to deal with left, right and center but everyone has issues, no

matter how small or big they are. I wasn't considerate of what you were going through also and that was so wrong. I wasn't a good role model either. I'm so ashamed of the things that I did. The things that you had to see me do. I didn't set a good example like a big sister should. I'm not proud of it and I'm so sorry Maka. I'm sorry I didn't love you enough. I'm sorry because at some point I didn't care. Had I paid enough attention I would have realized that you actually loved Ethan. If I knew I wasn't going to get married to him no matter how much he claimed to love me. I was there in your life but I was absent too. When you got your first period I didn't even teach how to handle it. We didn't eat ice cream together when you got your first heartbreak. Heck, I didn't even have the talk with you about relationships. I'm sorry Makaanaka. I'm sorry my little sister. Will you forgive me?"

She nodded with tears streaming down her cheeks and we hugged for the longest time.

"I'm sorry too.I'm sorry for not being the best little sister that I was supposed to be.I'm sorry for being bitter and jealous when I was supposed to be happy for you.I'm sorry for saying all those harsh words and calling you names.I betrayed you and I'm ashamed.Please forgive me Majesty.Please find it in your heart to forgive me.I learnt my lesson and I promise I'm never going to hurt you like that ever again."

"Uhhh stop crying." We hugged each other again and ended up crying ourselves to sleep.We were exhausted so everyone let us be.I was awakened by tiny hands all over my face.It was my niece.I also woke Maka.After we both showered we started talking again about a way forward.

"He is the father of my child.He is the man that I love.I know the world is going to criticize me for this but we don't choose who we fall in love with.He hurt me so badly and he abused me.A part of me felt like I deserved it that is why I still want to give him a second chance.I know the

man I fall in love with is still in there and he will come back. So sis no I'm not leaving with you. I'm sorry but where Ethan stays I will be there. He needs help and I'm going to stand by his side."

I had suggested that we leave together to SA to start over but she refused. She loved Ethan to the moon and back that I was even surprised. I don't know what kind of a love story they shared or if there was even one but either way I was amazed by the love she had for Ethan.

"Fine Ethan goes too. How about that?"

I wasn't going to leave him behind anyway. I don't know how Lindani was going to take this but I felt like I was obligated to help him too. Despite everything he did this was the same man whose family took me and my siblings in when we had nowhere to go. He was the same man who held my hand and helped me to soldier on when I wanted to give up. Yes things took an unexpected turn but disappointments are part of life. I would love to believe that

what happened was a lesson to us and it happened for many other reasons as well. With that in mind I was not leaving him behind in this hell hole. He needed help and he was going to get it. I believe that him being abusive was a cry for help too. He was in pain about something and just like anyone else suffering they look for something to vent their anger on which in Ethan's case was to hurt other people. I know there is no excuse for abuse but the cycle will continue endlessly if the abusers don't get help just like the victims. Abusers are victims of themselves. They also need help too. Crucify me for that but that's the truth. People tend to just focus on the victims of abuse which is a good thing but it would be even more better to help the abuser to be their better selves.

"You really mean it?" Her eyes sparked.

"Yes I do. If I leave him behind in a place like this do you think my conscience will allow me to sleep at night? He hurt me very deeply but I forgave him and we closed that

chapter. For the sake of our old friendship I will have to do this. I don't know if my man is gonna agree to this though. He hates Ethan with passion."

She chuckled. "He is scary. I loved the look on Mai Tawa's face when he told them to do the dishes themselves and stop ordering you around. They looked like they were about to shit themselves." We laughed.

"I was so afraid of him the first time I met him. He was so intimidating and everything that came out of his mouth was an order."

"But he looks like a spongy bear when he is with you. I like him for you. I admire the love you guys share. It changes the whole atmosphere and it's just so beautiful. By the way how did it end with those twins." Now we were catching up. I felt so happy that we were actually talking like sisters.

"Ohhh I forgot to tell you. You have a nephew. Remember Siphon? It turned out that he is actually Gift." Before I narrated the whole story she screamed in excitement and

literally jumped on me. We started screaming in happiness jumping on the bed like little kids. Yea it wasn't a good thing to do after burying someone but hey cut us some slack. Within a moment Lindani was already in the room.

"I heard some screaming." He said with panic written all over his face.

"Whoa relax big guy. We are okay." He sighed in relief then walked out.

"How, what, when?" She asked trying to catch a breathe.

"Its a long story but Lindani's ex wife who happens to be Treet's sister and my ex boyfriend Justin. I don't know if you still remember him you were very little then. They staged the whole thing and stole Gift away but I found him after twelve years of mourning his "death".

She wiped her tears of joy. "Ohh my it was fate that you guys met. I can't wait to see him my God. Do you think he will like me? I mean first impressions matters you know and mine wasn't so good. Do you think he will love having

an aunt?"

I laughed. "He will love you don't worry. Don't be nervous."

She sighed sadly.

"What is it now?"

"Prince. He disowned me. I don't think he is ever going to forgive me."

I smiled. "That one takes long to forgive but he will come around. You will have to work for his forgiveness though. Anyway let me go talk to the man. I have my fingers crossed. I hope he will agree to taking Ethan along."

She squeezed my hands in reassurance. "If he says no don't force him or try to emotionally blackmail him. He never shared any relation with Ethan so he will be using his head to think. You are using your heart. Whatever he is going to say take it like that. He already weighed the pros and cons of taking us along. I'm sure with our record the cons outweighed the pros which is okay. Don't fight him if he says no okay. We will manage from here."

"When did you become so mature?"

She smiled."Its life sis."

I smiled back and went to talk to Lindani.I was so nervous about it and before I even said anything he knew what I wanted.

"His sins are not going unpunished.To be in my good graces he has to earn it.We are taking him along but he is not going to rely on us for everything.He is a man and he should take care of his family so he is gonna have to work.And by working I'm talking about hard labour here,wearing overalls and shit.He also have to start therapy to help his drinking habits and abusive nature.If he doesn't change then I will send him back here with nothing." He said

"I so love you.Thank you for agreeing."

He sighed and almost rolled his eyes."But I still hate him though.If he crosses me or what's mine this time around I will kill him and I mean it."

I arched my eyebrow and he sighed. "Fine I won't kill him but I will make sure he suffers."

Maka was ecstatic when I told her Lindani agreed to taking Ethan along. When we broke the news to Ethan he cried and thanked us a million times. Lisa wasn't happy. She wanted to kick Ethan on the balls. Well that's just Lisa. I informed MaZulu and the rest of the family about this development. She was proud of what I did and didn't see a problem in giving Maka and Ethan a second chance. Everyone deserves it. Prince wasn't happy but respected my decision. Their traveling documents were in order. We just had to sort out Latie's which wasn't much of a struggle thanks to Lindani and his connections. The following morning we left for SA.

Three weeks later Ethan and Maka had settled very well. They were now living in what used to be my apartment. Lindani was serious about making Ethan

sweat. He was moulding him into being a man, a responsible one at that. He hired him as one of the groundsmen at the construction company. He put him on a six months probation with no pay. I took care of their needs like groceries and other necessities. Ethan, Maka, Latisha and me we also attended therapy. Not together though but we were all dealing and fighting our demons. Maka refused to continue with school. She said all she ever wished for was to become a housewife and a stay-at-home mum. She mentioned about starting a campaign against gender based violence after a year. I respected her decision.

Now we were focused on the official opening of Gift foundation. Since everything was organized the first time there was nothing much to do apart from going through the initial plan one more time. We resent the invitation and I received a positive feedback from the invited guests. It wasn't a cool business move to postpone the opening and

I so scared thinking that people were not going to come but by the end of the week a lot of my acquaintances had already landed in SA and booked in hotels. They were looking forward to the event. I was so nervous though and my anxiety was on some whole new level. Maka and the other girls thought retail therapy was going to calm me down. We spent the whole day shopping but still I got more anxious. They gave up and dropped me off back at home.

"My love relax. Everything is going to go well tomorrow."

Lindani said trying to calm me down but I was having none of it. He ended up ignoring my ass and started playing with the kids until they fell asleep. He put them one by one to bed and came to me after. He carried me like a sack of potatoes and took me upstairs because I was even refusing to go to bed. He fucked me like a possessed man that I ended up sleeping like a baby. Now I was going to have a penguin walk on the big day. Urgh this man!

"Wake up babe. You will be late for the mass service." He

said kissing me all over the face. I blinked my eyes open and started running all over the place like a mad person. He wasn't attending the mass so he was relaxed. After I bathed Mary, Petty and the girls were already waiting for me. They were my stylists and I trusted them. They did a good job.

"This is giving me some wedding day vibes." Maka said and everyone agreed to that. I thought she was going to find it very difficult to fit in and the girls were going to isolate her in the circle but she fit in perfectly and no one had a problem with her.

I wore a Roma Amor ruffle navy blue gown with a back slit and everyone wowed as I cat walked for them. The theme was navy blue and gold. So I completed the look with gold heels and accessories. Lindani was the one who chose the look and I must say he had a good taste.

"Are you going to manage with the kids babe?" I asked and he nodded clearly absentminded. He was busy drooling

and if I was to spent another minute with him then I was so going to be late.

"Ok take care then." I perked his lips and literally ran out of the room leaving him with a boner.

He had organized the limousine for us and crazy security detail with men armed to the teeth. We were chauffeured to the rehab. Since we were starting by a mass service I asked the press to come after the service. I didn't want nosy journalist to fish out for information during mass and disturb my moment with God. The service was short and intimate. Three-quarters of the guest attended. After the priest blessed the place we all went to the other side where the event was being held.

Walking on the red carpet is always nerve wrecking for me but with Lindani by my side as well as the kids I was confident. The photographers took pictures of us and of course tried to get some information about our relationship but we ignored them. Family and friends joined

hands, forming a line as I held the big scissor and cut the red ribbon on the front door. I was more impressed by the whole setup, decorations and food. The decor lady and Lerato did a good job. Leon and Prince deserved the awards of the best masters of ceremony as they kept the guests entertained. Speeches were short and lively. Nothing that made anyone yawn with boredom.

"Now let's give it up for the mastermind behind this rehabilitation center. The person who made all this possible. Let's give a round of applause for the owner of Gift foundation Ms Majesty Browns soon to be Mrs Majesty Lindani Zulu." Leon announced and everyone laughed clapping their hands. I looked at Lindy and she shrugged. She was the one supposed to give the speech not me.

"Ms Majesty Browns the stage is yours your majesty." Prince said bowing and people laughed again. I looked at Lindani and he winked giving me a gentle squeeze.

I stood up, the cameras flashed and the nerves kicked in but Lindani was by my side. He was walking me to the stage so I gathered enough courage. When I made it to the stage he went and sat down. Prince and Leon took their seats as well. I was shaking lightly but when I looked at my man who was smiling ear to ear my confidence was boosted.

"Hello." I waved shyly and people laughed even more. Treet gave me a thumbs up. I didn't even see him when I walked in. He was with Lerato by his side that made me smile. Lindani winked. The naughty man was thinking of tearing my dress apart and have his way with me.

"First of all I want to thank God because of him this day was possible. He continues to shower me with grace and for that I'm grateful. I also want to thank you all for honoring my invitation. No words can ever express how grateful I am to you. Thank you." They clapped their hands.

"When the idea of a rehabilitation center came to mind I

was in a bad space. I had just walked out of a bad relationship in which I was a victim of abuse. I was suicidal and I almost lost my life but this beautiful chocolate hunk saved me from myself." I smiled looking at Lindani and everyone looked at him too. People laughed as he looked around as well making sure they see his face. The photographers continued taking pictures.

"After he saved me and I was back on my feet I thought about a lot of women out there who went or were going through the same thing that I went through if not worse. I worked on my idea with the support of my close friends and family. Today we are here. Thank you everyone who lend their helping hand in making this dream come true. I want to say Gift Foundation is open to all those women suffering. Be it the victims of gender based violence, those who are fighting to overcome depression or those addicted to drugs. We welcome you with open arms. I know it's difficult to speak out but this is the place to be. A lot of

people are losing their lives out there simply because they refused to acknowledge that they had a problem and they were afraid that the world will laugh at them. I know and I understand because I'm one of the people who didn't want to acknowledge that I actually had a problem. A lot of women are committing suicide because they failed to handle the pressure and they were tired of disappointments but dying is not the solution. Gift foundation was built specifically for this. Disappointments are part of life. It's not always everything that has to go according to plan. As we live it is important to keep in mind that we don't have control over what happens in our lives. To understand this we need a voice that gives us the oomph to carry on. Gift Foundation is that voice. I know a lot will be afraid to come forward but our doors are always open. I know it will take a lot of courage for people to come forward. We will wait for your courage to grow. After all courage is like a muscle it too takes time to grow. Courage

is not the absence of fear but rather the judgment that something else is more important than fear. Your life is more important than fear. So I'm saying to that person who knows that deep down they need help and they are listening to me right now come forward. We will help. You're not alone. Come forward and receive the help you need. We..." Before I finished my speech Lindani stood up and I laughed covering my mouth.

"Babe I didn't mean like now and I didn't mean it in the literal sense you know." People laughed again but my chocolate scarred warrior continued walking towards the stage with kids behind. Leon gave him the mic. I looked at him with confusion. He just shrugged with a smile on his face and looked back at Lindani.

"You said come forward and I did. I have a problem your majesty but I don't need help. I have an addiction that I can't overcome and I don't want to." Lindani said holding my hands and the kids stood besides him.

"Majesty I'm addicted to you and I don't want to overcome it. You're like that sweet drug which one gets addicted to on the first hit. You're my addiction and obsession. When I first met you. You were this crazy person who walked out at night at a place she wasn't familiar with. I spent the rest of that night wondering what the hell you were thinking but I realised that it was meant to be. You went out that night so that I could meet you and be your scarred warrior. I know that's what you call me (chuckles and kissed my hand). Majesty I wanna spend the rest of my life with you. I want to be forever your scarred warrior and you to be my forever imperfect mess." He knelt down and opened a red velvet box. A diamond ring glittered. I gasped in amusement so did everyone.

"To everything there is a season and a time to every purpose under heaven. I strongly believe that this day and this hour was written in my destiny. This time when I ask you to be my wife. Will you marry me."

I covered my mouth as tears coursed down my cheeks. I never thought he was going to propose. He never even showed any signs of wanting to go down on one knee. "Mommy please say yes." The kids chorused kneeling besides Lindani.

Lisa stood up and walked over with a rose. The whole Zulu pack followed suit each giving me a rose. My friends too and my other family members followed suit. All of them telling me to say yes.

CHAPTER #50

MAJESTY

Finale

"Yes, yes, yes and yes. I will marry you. I will be your wife. Ohh my God I love you so much." I knelt too and hugged him tightly

crying tears of joy. If someone told me years back that this was going to happen to me I was not going to believe them. I never thought that one day I will be in the arms of the man who loves me to the moon and back. A man who looked past my mistakes and loves me with all my flaws. With him I finally belonged. I had my fears regarding marriage but I learnt to look past what happened to me. It wasn't fair for me to paint Lindani with the same brush as Ethan's. I agreed to marry this man because it felt so right. He wasn't a perfect man but he was my kind of perfect. I got so emotional and continued crying that he had to carry me outside so I could get some air. I looked at my ring again and again finding it hard to believe that this Zulu man with his big ego actually went down on one knee in front of our fifty plus guests and asked me to marry him. That was bravery.

"Ohh my God I can't stop crying. I'm so happy. When did you

plan all this babe?"I asked and he smiled wiping my tears. He smiled turning on the aircon in the car."I had the ring on New Years day but I knew I would freak you out and push you away if I was to propose during that time.Today I was nervous you know.You're unpredictable so I was scared thinking that you might run off the stage once I'm on my knee but the kids gave me the courage.I love you so much Majesty and thank you for agreeing to be my wife.I promise I will do my best to be an awesome husband that you deserve.Thank you for accepting me with my baggage and flaws.God knows I don't deserve you but here we are.I love you." He cupped my face.

"Isn't it too early for the vows."I smiled.

He chuckled."Ohh they are the pre-vows if there is anything like that."We both laughed and sealed it with a kiss filled with passion, love,lust,vulnerability and happiness.

"Now let's go inside before they think we are having a quickie." I fixed my makeup and we went back inside.It

was now a double celebration. Mr and Mrs Ferguson even gave me an early wedding present. A tour to France, Italy and Hawaii. They were moneyed so I didn't expect anything less.

"We might miss the wedding because of my husband's health. He is not allowed to travel more often so that's our gift. Congratulations. You guys should enjoy your honeymoon there. You should also make sure to go to Paris." When she mentioned Paris I exchanged glances with Lindani and smiled. We didn't bother telling her that's where we actually met because she went on and on about how love starts in Paris. She was right.

We entertained the rest of our guests and by the time we were done I just wanted to be in the arms of my man, have some good love making and sleep. MaZulu did us the biggest favour by taking all the kids. We really needed some privacy. Lindani and I couldn't attend the after-party celebration or whatever Lisa and Lindy had

organized. After Prince and Leon gave the closing speeches I bid goodbye to all my guests and thanked them again for honouring my invitation then we immediately left. The moment we stepped into our bedroom we were all over each other. His hands roamed around my ass and my breasts.

"I want you so bad." He said softly pushing me against the wall. Grin widening I cupped my hands around his jaws and brought his face to mine. He ran his hands around my spine and pressed me closer to his chest. His unique flavour on my lips was so exotic, drawing me into some kind of sensual fog that made my head spin and my heart pound in a crazy way. We continued kissing locked together from the neck to the knees. Mouth to mouth we continued devouring each other but we had to come up for air. His breathing was unsteady and so was mine. He cussed as he removed my dress like he was unwrapping a Christmas gift.

"Your skin is so hot.Fuck!" He cussed.He muttered something else and his hands shot upwards.Within a blink all his clothes were gone too.

"My turn tonight." I said pushing him towards the bed. He nodded with a smirk.His bedroom eyes were heavy and smoking hot.

"Help yourself.I'm at your mercy your majesty."He leaned on the headboard with his hands behind his head.

I pressed my lips together and closed my eyes as I directed his length feeling his big cock inside of me.If I weren't so wet it was not going to easily fit in.I clung to his neck then started moving with a slow pace and he was happy to go with it. Slow didn't mean less intense, oh no.For us that night the journey was equally important as the destination.We intended to make it last longer.I bit my lower lip as his lips slide over my hard nipples.A loud moan escaped my mouth.He knew how to make me sing just by his touch.When the passion and pleasure drove me

closer to the point of madness I screamed louder and exploded holding on tighter.

"My turn now." He removed his cock and it glistened with my arousal. He gently laid me on the bed. He had my knees against my ribcage with his mouth buried deep inside my pussy. He ate it like he had been wanting to sink his tongue inside me all day. I arched my back as his tongue catapulted me into a climax. He lifted his face with a proud grin and his lips were smeared with my arousal. I pulled him towards me and his lips hung over mine as he rammed his impressive cock back inside of me. My walls clenched around him and he groaned in pleasure. His eyes darkened with pleasure as he moved between my legs. He placed my ankles over his shoulders. He bent me on a deeper angle that the back of my knees were pressed against his chest. I moaned louder as he thrust deeper and faster again and again.

"I love you." We said in unison sharing the flash and sizzle

as we took a flight over the edge together.

There was no pillow talk. We were both too exhausted.

4 MONTHS LATER.

The past months have been very eventful. Since I was to be Lindani's wife he wanted things to be done the right way which meant he wanted me to be his traditional wife first. Before I went to Zimbabwe for my estranged family Lindani and I attended some marriage counselling sessions for 2 months. He had sessions with his uncle Mr Zulu and his other uncles while I had mine with the marriage counsellors that MaZulu referred me to. She refused to be part of the sessions because she said she was too involved and her ideas maybe biased. We had joint sessions too after the individual ones. We learnt a lot from the sessions.

"Some of what we teach you might not take it seriously because you say its too ancient, nineteen-eighty and late. At the end of the day it is the same things we teach you that

helps you to be a good wife, mother, sister and a woman in general. We are also teaching you how to make your marriage enjoyable for both you and your husband. What we tell you might sound old and ancient but if you follow it religiously then you will be a happy woman the rest of your life."

After our last session I flew with my siblings back to Zimbabwe so that we could look for my father's family. We went to Rusape. My uncles tried to give us a hard time. The funny part is they accused us of abandoning them only because we had become successful in life. They forgot that they were the same people who took everything away from us when my mother was killed and my father was in jail. I decided not to fight them or play the blame game. I just didn't have the energy to fight with them. The next day after we had reunited they demanded that I get the house renovated because I was moneyed. I gave in to everything they wanted and got the homestead renovated with

electricity and all. The two were too demanding and greedy along with their wives, kids and grandchildren. Renovating that house was like building it all over again from the ground because they had ruined almost everything. It took Prince and I two months to get the five roomed house and four rondavels, fully furnished, painted and electrified. While all that was being done I spent most of my time there. Lindani was not happy but there was nothing to be done. I did everything they demanded and only then they agreed to meet Lindani after the Zulu's sent a letter. The negotiations date was set and my uncles made sure the whole of Denzva knew that their "daughter" was getting married.

"Can you give me some money for my son's diapers. You have lots of it. It won't hurt giving me some." Sharon my older cousin said. I had six cousins. Four grown women and two grown men. They all had kids, were not married and still lived with their parents at their grandparents' house. It was

a full house I'm telling you. Sharon was the eldest and because of that she thought she could bully me around. She had four fatherless kids and was pregnant with the fifth one. Silvia her little sister had two kids as well then there was Sharai the last born in their family who also had a kid. For the other uncle the first born was Sydney and he had three kids but they lived with their mothers. The second born was Matthew he had one child and lived with his wife at the homestead too and the last born was Pretty she was sixteen but was already pregnant with a second child who happened to not have a father as well.

"Just because you're older it doesn't mean you talk to me however you want. You may be the boss here but you're not the boss of me especially when you need something from me. You're the one who need help here. The least you can do is be polite. So ask again if you really want my help." I didn't have any problem in helping when I could afford it but for her to be rude like that puts me off.

"When people have money they think they are better than everyone else. You're very selfish. You have so many notes in there but you still want to be butt-licked." She clicked her tongue and Maka lost her screws too.

"Don't you dare talk to my sister like that. You have the fucking nerve to stand here and say shit about her. You don't even know her. You wanna talk about selfishness? Your father chased us out and took everything that our parents left us claiming that they belonged to them. They didn't even care about our wellbeing and we had to be helped by people who were not even related to us while you enjoyed what our parents worked so hard for. My sister renovated this homestead when all of you couldn't join hands and do so. Now you have the guts to stand there and say she is selfish. How dare you? You're even wearing the maternity dress that she bought with her own money. Your fatherless children are out there eating goodies that she bought with her own money. Something

which their fathers failed to do so. You don't even need the money for the diapers because she bought packs for everyone here. You're a very ungrateful mean bitch. You..."

I interjected. "Maka that's enough now. That is no way to talk to someone older than you. Apologize now."

She folded her arms and rolled her eyes.

"Maka I said apologize to her now."

"I'm sorry." She said.

I took out some notes from my purse. "Here. Go use the money however you wanna use it." She took the money and walked out without saying a mere thanks.

"If you continue being sweet people will eat you alive."

Maka rolled her eyes shaking her head.

I sighed. "It doesn't matter Maka. It's not like I'm going to stay here forever. I'm doing this for me. I just want the negotiations to go smoothly. I don't want anyone to jinx my day simply because I refused to give them a few notes."

"You have given them a lot already sis. You renovated this

place.No scratch that.You built this place from the mess it was in.You bought new furniture,you bought a whole solar system for them and they are also going to get a lot of money too and cattle from the negotiations.Isn't that more than enough.Now they are just taking advantage of your kindness.You weren't supposed to do all those things especially after what they did to us." She frowned.

"If we all hang up on the saying an eye for an eye then the whole world would be blind.They wronged us yes but it doesn't mean we should do the same to them.I helped them because I can afford it.And the more I help the more I receive blessings from God.After the negotiations we will not have to deal with them anymore so don't worry."

She sighed."Ok fine I get you.Now let's go and call the men."

We walked out and went to climb the hill which wasn't far from the homestead.It was the only place were we got the network coverage.I called Lindani and he answered on the

first ring.

"My heart." He answered and my stomach was filled with butterflies instantly.

"Hey babe.I miss you so much." I pouted.

"I miss you too.That is why we are coming there tomorrow."I screamed in excitement.The negotiations were taking place the following weekend.

"I can't wait to see you and fuck you." I tweeted and he laughed telling me that I had no shame.We continued talking until my airtime ran out.

The following day they landed in Zim but they had to sleep at a hotel before traveling the following day to Rusape where they booked a lodge they would be staying in.Lisa and Lindy were going to stay with me and Maka.

"Babe!!!" I exclaimed and threw myself in his arms.Everyone laughed at me as I cried in his arms.I had missed him that much.The whole Zulu pack had arrived including his uncles which left me wondering.They were

supposed to arrive the following week.

"I will see you tomorrow." He said and I sulked in sadness. We couldn't have time to ourselves because they were so many people.

"Ok babe." I sulked feeling my tears threatening to come out. He hugged me and the uncles laughed calling me a cry baby.

"Why did the uncles come with you? I thought they were supposed to come next week." I asked Lindy.

"They came to buy some cattle that's why they are here a week early." Lisa explained.

"We weren't supposed to tell you though but we already did." She shrugged and I laughed shaking my head.

The week passed by in a blur and the day has finally arrived. Man was I nervous. I wanted to see Lindani before the whole thing started but I was forbidden by my aunts. They were treating me like an egg because they knew there were going to benefit a lot from the

negotiations. It hurt knowing that people who didn't lend a hand in my upbringing were benefiting through me but there was nothing to be done anyway.

Before the negotiations started I called MaZulu and she prayed for me for the longest time. After talking to my kids as well I hung up and went back inside the spare bedroom that I was sharing with Maka. The girls were already in there with my attire for the day. It was a royal blue African print mermaid tail dress and a matching head wrap. Around 9am the Zulus arrived but they stood at the gate for nearly an hour in silence. They offered my uncles expensive whiskeys and fee for being late but my uncles were not letting them in because they were late with ten minutes. Urgh men and their egos!

"They are going to milk my man dry. Those men are very greedy." I fiddled with my fingers worried sick. I had called Lindani and asked him how much he was paying but he said it was not up to me to know. He was going to pay

whatever they demanded.

"Don't worry my brother will pay whatever they demand. You're worth every penny and more." Lisa said trying to calm me down but I was literally having an anxiety attack.

My aunt peeped through the door. "Girls its time. Majesty you just answer to what you're asked ok." I nodded. I was accompanied by Maka and my cousins. We walked to the sitting room where they were holding the negotiations. We walked in with our heads down and sat waiting for them to speak.

"Majesty my child do you know these people? They said they are here for you." The older uncle asked.

"Yes I know them." I nodded.

"Ok you can go now." We walked out and left them to do their thing. The fact that the negotiations had started didn't make me feel better in fact I was even more nervous. I didn't trust my uncles.

"They are taking long. I don't trust my uncles.They are going to give them a hard time."Sharon rolled her eyes looking annoyed but I didn't care about her.

"These things takes long sis that's why they are called negotiations.They are negotiating." Lindy said.

Maka came from the kitchen looking annoyed."They are demanding that the Zulus pay for Siphos damages.You were right sis they are so greedy."

I cried but Lisa reassured me and told me that Lindani didn't have a problem with that and he came prepared.He was expecting it and besides Siphos was his "son" anyway.By the time the negotiations were over the uncles had cattle in their kraal and of course loaded with money.I stayed for another exhausting week in Zim but this time around with Lindani and the duo.After doing the unveiling of the tombstone for my parents we flew back to SA.Honestly I didn't want any of them at my wedding but it wasn't right for me to eliminate them because they were

family. So Lindani and I made arrangements for them to come a week before the marriage. Not all the minions though. Only my uncles and their wives. I didn't want an extravagant wedding but my sisters in law were having none of it.

"Mrs Zulu you have a meeting with the wedding planner in an hour." Lindy shouted barging into my house.

"I'm in the kitchen." I shouted back. They walked in with smiles plastered on their faces. Her and Lisa were the best sisters in-law I have ever had.

"So today we are discussing the venues." Lisa said opening the fridge taking a tub of ice cream.

"I don't want anything extravagant. I want the wedding to be held here. The backyard is big enough to accommodate at least fifty guests or so."

"Hell no sweetie. You had a backyard wedding with Ethan you can't do that again. Besides we told you that this is going to be the wedding of the century right."

I smiled turning the steak on the grill."Fine what do you suggest."

"No this is your wedding honey.Shawn will be here in a moment and he will drive us showing us the best venues around.You will choose from there."

"Ok then."I finished cooking,served my kids and husband then left with the twins and Shawn.We spent a few hours checking out the venues.They were all the best that I was even confused to what to go for.

"So Clico boutique hotel or Bryanston Golf garden."Shawn asked.

"Well I need all the privacy I can get the garden at Clico's will not give me that so I will have to go for Bryanston.Its big and beautiful."

"Yea I second you on that.The course is big that even a large tent which can accommodate 200 plus people can fit.The grass there is beautiful too,with the colours you chose it will be even more exquisite.But it's

expensive." Shawn the wedding planner said

"Don't worry about the money. Lisa and I are paying for the venue and déco consider that one of the wedding gifts." Lindy said.

"Ok so the venue is sorted. I will talk to the authorities. Then I will email you the payment details." He said typing some notes on his iPad.

"Now let's go for the cake tasting."

The wedding was in two weeks and almost everything was done. It was only the venue that was an issue but now that it was sorted I could finally breathe. I was satisfied with the cake that I had chosen thanks to Lerato who helped me with the baker. She was also the one catering for me. For the décor I chose the lady who did my décor for the official opening. She was good.

"Let's call it a day guys I'm so exhausted." I complained because I was very tired and the medication I was taking for my scars was making me drowsy.

"See you tomorrow Mrs Zulu." Lindy tweeted and I smiled to the sound of that. Mrs Zulu.

The following morning I woke to Lindani between my legs. Man was I happy. After our steamy session we took a shower together and had breakfast with our kids.

"I think you're overworking babe. I think you should let the girls handle the preparations and take a break at work. At least until the wedding is over." Lindani suggested.

I perked his lips smiling. "Ohh Mr Zulu don't worry the preparations are almost over. Once I try my gown today I will let my sisters in-law take over. As for the rehab well Dr Spencer and Lindy are handling it very well."

"Ok if you say so Mrs Zulu. Me and the guys are going for our fittings too." For his team it was Prince, Lwandile, Leon and Derrek. For my team it was Maka who was my maid of honor, Lisa, Lindy and Mary.

"Good luck with that dear husband." I bit my lower lip and he chuckled shaking his head.

"I love the sound of that wifey. Let's go to the bedroom I have something to tell you." He winked.

"We will be late hubby and the kids." I whispered the last part.

"Just a few minutes babe please." He pouted and I gave in to my lustful nature.

Our faces met in a rough kiss as soon as we walked into one of the bedrooms downstairs. Lindani unzipped his pants and pushed my thong to the side. The tip brushed against my thighs, the head bouncing on each ass cheek. He had me pinned against the wall with my legs around his waist. He slid his cock, barely rubbing it on my folds.

"Fuck...stop teasing babe this is supposed to be a quickie."

I growled.

He chuckled and inserted himself. It felt like it went in forever, every millimeter giving me more and more pleasure until I felt like I was going to burst. As he moved

in and out faster and deeper slamming against the wall. I started seeing stars and went off in another world as the pleasure became intense.

We heard some footsteps towards the bedroom and he slowed the pace.

"Mom, dad! Aunt Maka, Lindy and Lisa are waiting for you downstairs." Siphon banged on the door. Lindani and I looked at each other with our eyes popped out. He didn't stop moving.

"Umm..ah...tell them..I'm coming." I said my voice sounding unusual.

"Okay. Are you alright mom? You sound a little bit out of breathe." This kid. Couldn't he just leave?

"Yea yea babe I'm fiiiine." It came out louder than intended.

"Ohhkay." He said and we heard him walking away. Lindani thrust more faster and we came at the same time. We clearly cleaned ourselves trying to remove all the evidence of what was happening.

"Yea yea babe I'm fiiiine." Lindani mimicked me and laughed his lungs out.

I rolled my eyes trying not to laugh. "Please babe fix some soundproofs in all the bedrooms will you."

"As you wish." He continued laughing while we went to join the others in the lounge.

We all went our separate ways as the guys went to their designer and we went to ours. My bridesmaids tried their dresses and man did they look beautiful. My theme was rusty pink, grey and a touch of gold. So they had boobtube pink dresses that had gold lace details on the back with a slit that reached their mid thighs. They all looked perfect in the dresses.

"Now it's your turn bride." They all squeaked. I went to the fitting room and tried my gown. When I walked out all of them had their jaws dropped and eyes wide open.

"Holy Jesus Christ. My girl this is wow." Lisa said whistling and shaking her head. Typical Lisa. They all led me to the

mirror and I almost cried.

"Ohh my God this is beautiful." I said looking at Veronica my designer. She was an Italian professional designer who only designed wedding outfits and she was good.

"So the veil is almost complete. It should be done by the end of tomorrow. It's only the crystal embroidery that's taking longer but you can check it out." She brought it in and I was even more impressed. Girly, Latie and Lily tried out their dresses and they looked so cute. After we were done we had full body massages and headed back home.

"Man I can't get enough of that gown. It's so beautiful."

Maka commented and I smiled thinking about it.

THE BIG DAY.

"Wake up dear bride it's the day. Wake up everybody, wake up!!" Lisa walked around the house hitting the pan with a metal spoon. It was 4:45am for crying out loud but the energy that she had could surprise you. Even I didn't have that energy but we woke up anyway. The guys had slept at

our other house in Rosebank while we occupied the other one we were living in now. Before I took a shower I called Lindani and we talked for a long time. The man refused to have a bachelors party but just decided to have a braai and booze at their place and man was I happy. I had my people who informed me that indeed there were no whores and strippers invited. Yea I didn't want some filthy whore digging their claws on my man just the day before our wedding. Hell no!!! But as for us the girls. We had a blast. My hen party amazing. We were all dressed in lingeries so you can imagine how much we enjoyed. Just between you and me. We had topless waiters honey. We got our freaks on and my hen party was the best. Lisa wanted us to hire strippers

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>